ISSN 1949–8519 (Print) ISSN 2154–6711 (Online)

Forum for World Literature Studies

Special Issue 世界文学研究论坛 Vol.16 No.5 2024





Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong • West Lafayette

Forum for World Literature Studies

Vol.16, No.5, 2024

Editors in Chief

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China Charles Ross, Purdue University, U.S.A

Associate Editors in Chief

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University, China Angelique Richardson, University of Exeter, UK Zhang Xin, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China

Directors of Editorial Office

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University, China Ren Jie, Zhejiang University, China



Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong · West Lafayette

世界文学研究论坛

2024年第5期

主编

聂珍钊/广东外语外贸大学(中国) 查尔斯•罗斯/普渡大学(美国)

副主编

杨革新/浙江大学(中国) 安琪莉珂・理查森/埃克塞特大学(英国) 张欣/广东外语外贸大学(中国)

编辑部主任

杨革新/浙江大学(中国)任 洁/浙江大学(中国)



香港•西拉法叶

Forum for World Literature Studies

Vol.16, No.5, 2024

Special Issue

Ethical Literary Criticism: Theory and Practice

Edited by Ren Jie



Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong · West Lafayette

世界文学研究论坛

2024年第5期

学术专刊

文学伦理学批评: 理论与实践

专刊主编:任洁



香港•西拉法叶

Editorial Board

Valerie Babb / University of Georgia, USA Massimo Bacigalupo / Universita' di Genova, Italy Elleke Boehmer / University of Oxford, UK Marshall Brown / University of Washington, USA Ty Buckman / Wittenberg University, USA Alison Calder / University of Manitoba, Canada Arturo Casas / Universidade de Santiago de Compostela, Spain Claire Connolly / University College Cork, Ireland Chen Zhongyi / Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, China Fan Pik Wah / University of Malaya, Malaysia Harry Garuba / University of Cape Town, South Africa Margot Hillel / Australian Catholic University, Australia Martin Humpal / Charles University in Prague, Czech Republic Namigata Tsuyoshi / Kyushu University, Japan Hank Lazer / University of Alabama, USA Lim Dae Geun / Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, Korea Khairy Douma / Cairo University, Egypt Leevi Lehto / Finland Liao Kebin / Peking University, China Liu Jianjun / Northeast Normal University, China Luo Lianggong / Central China Normal University, China Roland Lysell / University of Stockholm, Sweden Anne-Marie Mai / University of Southern Denmark, Denmark Jale Parla / Istanbul Bilgi University, Turky Irina Dmitrievna Prokhorova / New Literary Observer, Russia Elizabeth Ramos / Universidade Federal da Bahia, Brazil John Rathmell / University of Cambridge, UK Derek Parker Royal / University of Texas at Dallas, USA Stephan Michael Schröder / University of Cologne, Germany Monica Spiridon / Bucharest University, Romania Shang Biwu / Shanghai Jiaotong University, China Sun Jian / Fudan University, China Jüri Talvet / University of Tartu, Estonia Kwok-kan Tam / Hang Seng University of Hong Kong, China Galin Tihanov / Queen Mary University of London, UK Kim Youngmin / Dongguk University, Korea Liu Humin / Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China Tomo Virk / University of Ljubljana, Slovenia Wang Lixing / Nankai University, China Yin Oiping / Hangzhou Normal University, China Zhu Zhenwu / Shanghai Normal University, China

编委会

瓦莱丽•巴布/佐治亚大学(美国)

马西姆•巴斯加拉珀/热那亚大学(意大利)

艾雷克•博埃默/牛津大学(英国)

马歇尔•布朗/华盛顿大学(美国)

台艾·巴克曼/威登堡大学(美国)

艾丽森•卡尔德/曼尼托巴大学(加拿大)

阿图罗·卡萨斯/地亚哥-德孔波斯特拉大学(西班牙)

克莱尔•康诺利/科克大学(爱尔兰)

陈众议/中国社会科学院(中国)

潘碧华/马来亚大学(马来西亚)

哈利·戈乌巴/开普敦大学(南非)

玛格特•希勒尔/澳大利亚天主教大学(澳大利亚)

马丁•罕帕尔/布拉格查理大学(捷克)

波潟刚 / 九州大学(日本)

汉克·雷泽尔/阿拉巴马大学(美国)

林大根/韩国外国语大学(韩国)

哈伊里・杜马/开罗大学(埃及)

利维•利托/(芬兰)

廖可斌/北京大学(中国)

刘建军 / 东北师范大学(中国)

罗良功/华中师范大学(中国)

罗兰•利塞尔/斯德哥尔摩大学(瑞典)

安妮-玛丽·梅/南丹麦大学(丹麦)

基尔·帕拉/伊斯坦布尔比尔基大学(土耳其)

伊莉娜·德米特里耶夫娜·普罗霍罗娃/《新文学评论》(俄国)

伊丽莎白·拉莫斯/巴赫亚联邦大学(巴西)

约翰·拉斯梅尔/剑桥大学(英国)

德雷克•帕克•罗亚尔/德克萨斯大学达拉斯分校(美国)

斯蒂芬•迈克尔•施罗德/科隆大学(德国)

莫里卡•斯普里顿/布加勒斯特大学(罗马尼亚)

尚必武 / 上海交通大学(中国)

孙建/复旦大学(中国)

居里•塔尔维特/塔尔图大学(爱沙尼亚)

谭国根 / 香港恒生大学(中国)

加林•提哈诺夫/伦敦大学玛丽女王学院(英国)

金英敏 / 东国大学(韩国)

刘胡敏 / 广东外语外贸大学 (中国)

托莫•维尔克/卢布尔雅娜大学(斯洛文尼亚)

王立新/南开大学(中国)

殷企平/杭州师范大学(中国)

朱振武 / 上海师范大学(中国)

Forum for World Literature Studies (Print ISSN: 1949-8519; Online ISSN: 2154-6711), published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited, is a peer reviewed academic journal sponsored by Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Zhejiang University and co-edited by Professor Nie Zhenzhao of Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Professor Charles Ross of Purdue University. This journal provides a forum to promote diversity in world literature, with a particular interest in the study of literatures of those neglected countries and culture regions. With four issues coming out every year, this journal publishes original articles on topics including theoretical studies, literary criticism, literary history, and cultural studies, as well as book review articles.

Forum for World Literature Studies accepts submissions in English or Chinese by authors from all over the world. The manuscript is expected to be of about 5000-8000 words and must follow the MLA style. Submission should be made including an abstract of about 200 words, a short biography of the author, and three to five keywords, as well as the main body of the essay. Manuscripts should be sent to: fwlstudies@163.com or fwlsmarket@163.com. Website: http://www.fwls.org.

The Publisher and Editorial Office Address: Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited, Hong Kong SAR, China. To subscribe to this journal or purchase any single issue, please contact the editorial office at 6 East Building, Zijingang Campus, Zhejiang University, 866 Yuhangtang Rd, Hangzhou 310058, P.R. China. Tel: +86-571-8898-2010, Email: fwlsmarket@163.com or fwlstudies@163.com.

Forum for World Literature Studies is indexed in ESCI, SCOPUS and also included in the databases of EBSCO, Gale, MLA (MLA International Bibliography) and ABELL (The Annual Bibligraphy of English Language and Literature).

This journal is registered under its ISSN with the Copyright Clearance Centre, 222 Rosewood Drive, Danvers, MA 09123 (www.copyright.com). Copyright ©2009 by *Forum for World Literature Studies*. All rights reserved. No copy shall be made without the permission of the publisher.

Contents

Ethical Literary Criticism and Japanese Literature Studies

781-786 Towards Computational Literary Criticism: Ethical Literary Criticism and Japanese Literature Studies

Tsuyoshi Namigata

Zhang Limin

787-801 Exploring Thematic Shifts in Japanese Science Fiction Literature: A
BERT-Based Topic Modeling Approach to Project Itoh and Hanna Ren
Sanghyuk Lee

Eugene Chung

802-823 Ethical Narratives and Criticism in Premodern Korean and Japanese Societal Novels: Focusing on the Motifs of Hwejeol and Shinjū Seong-Yoon Yang

Tae-Ung Eom

Ethical Literary Criticism: Theory and Practice

824-833 The Educational Function and Ethical Education of the AI Novel *The Land of Machine Memories*

Feng Tao

834-848 Caring for the Intelligent Object: Design Ethics of Otherness within the Non-Human Turn

Zhang Li

849-864 Ethical Identities in Contemporary Thai Literature: A Study of S.E.A. Write Award Works in 21st Century

Xue Huayu

Parichart Kluensuwan

865-875 Ethical Dimension on Creative Story Retelling: Adaptation of Mulian's Story in the *Dwelling by the West Lake*Lin Moyi

876-886 Ethical Literary Criticism of the Pain Emotion in Mahadevi Verma's Poetry

Li Yalan

887-900 Postmodern Ethics in Midnight's Children

Li Zhenling

Song Yun

901-914 From Brain Text to the Final Text: Karunatilaka's Ethical Consciousness in Constructing Brain Text

Kong Yuan

Li Zhuo

915-924 The Spatial Representation and Ethical Education in Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*

Liu Chang

925-935 Name of Myth and Witch: Traces of Medical Humanity in the Myth of Medea

Guo Zhitong

936-946 "Domestication of Fear": The Sphinx Factor Form of the Erinyes in the *Oresteia*

Ren Xiao

947-957 "Shame" as a Form of Justice: The Ethical Ambiguity in J. M. Coetzee's Works

Chen Jialu

958-968 The Racial Ethical Implications of Equiano's Multiple Choices in *The Interesting Narrative*

Liang Xiaomei

969-979 Witness, Reconstruction and Coordination: The Community Function of Literature from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism

Chen Xun

980-989 The Intergenerational Survival Strategies of the British Jewish Diaspora Ethical Community in *The Surgeon's Daughter*

Huang Landi

990-1001 The Dual Performativity and Ethical Predicaments in the Tactic Writing of *Burmese Days*

Shi Yinan

1002-1011 On the Trans-corporeal Toxic Landscape Writing and Its Environmental Ethical Expression in Ginsberg's Poetry

Zhang Taohong

1012-1022 Ethical Identity and Home Community Imagination in Elizabeth Bishop's $Questions\ of\ Travel$

Wang Yujie

目 录

文学伦理学批评与日本文学研究

781-786 走向文学计算批评:文学伦理学批评与日本文学研究 波潟刚

张利民

787-801 日本科幻文学中的主题转变研究:基于 BERT 的主题建模框架下伊藤计划与哈娜·任的作品分析

李相赫

郑有珍

802-823 前近代韩日社会小说中的伦理叙事与批评——以"毁节"和"殉情" 主题为中心

梁诚允

严泰雄

文学伦理学批评理论与实践

- 824-833 人工智能小说《机忆之地》的教诲功能与伦理教育 冯 涛
- 834-848 关怀智能人工物: 非人类转向中的他者性设计伦理 张 黎
- 849-864 泰国现代文学中的伦理身份研究——21 世纪东盟文学奖作品为例 薛话雨

帕里查特·克伦苏万

- 865-875 创意故事重述的伦理之维:《草木人间》的目连改编 商墨逸
- 876-886 文学伦理学批评视角下默哈德维·沃尔马诗歌中的"痛苦"情感主题李亚兰

887-900 《午夜之子》中的后现代伦理 李珍玲

宋 昀

- 915-924 莎士比亚《威尼斯商人》的空间表征与伦理教诲 刘 畅
- 925-935 以神巫之名:美狄亚神话的医学人文踪迹 郭芷彤
- 936-946 "驯化恐惧":《奥瑞斯忒亚》中复仇女神的斯芬克斯因子形态 任 晓
- 947-957 作为一种正义的"耻": J. M. 库切作品中的伦理未决 陈佳璐
- 958-968 《有趣的自述》中埃奎亚诺多重选择主题下的种族伦理内涵 梁小梅
- 980-989 《一个医生的女儿》中英国犹太流散伦理共同体代际生存策略 黄兰迪
- 990-1001《缅甸岁月》权谋书写中的双重操演与伦理困境 石一楠
- 1002-1011 论金斯伯格诗歌中的跨躯体毒性景观书写及其环境伦理表达 张桃红
- 1012-1022伊丽莎白・毕肖普《旅行的问题》中的伦理身份与家园共同体想象 王玉洁

走向文学计算批评:文学伦理学批评与日本 文学研究

Towards Computational Literary Criticism: Ethical Literary Criticism and Japanese Literature Studies

波潟刚(Tsuyoshi Namigata) 张利民(Zhang Limin)

内容摘要:文学伦理学批评于2004年由中国学者聂珍钊提出,之后迅速发展成为被中国乃至世界学界认可并广泛使用的文学批评理论与方法。为进一步推进文学伦理学批评在东亚地区的传播与发展,笔者受邀组织本期专栏,聚焦伦理身份、伦理选择、伦理环境等文学伦理学批评核心术语,从理论构建和批评实践的角度探讨文学伦理学批评是如何对包括日本、韩国在内的东亚文学研究发挥作用、提供理论支持的。本文尤其强调由英国国家学术院外籍院士、欧洲科学院外籍院士聂珍钊教授提出的有关"文学批评的计算分析转向"相关观点,并组织专栏文章做出回应。另外,本文还尝试以"消极感受力"为视角,分析日本当代文学中较具代表性的作品:深泽潮的《绿与红》、平野启一郎的《那个男人》和町田宛子的《52 赫兹的鲸鱼们》,以此探讨日本文学与文学伦理学批评深度结合的可能性。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;日本文学;伦理身份;伦理选择;文学计算批评 作者简介:波潟刚,日本筑波大学文学博士,日本九州大学比较社会文化研究院教授,主要从事现当代日本文学与文化研究。

译者简介: 张利民,曲阜师范大学翻译学院讲师,日本九州大学访问研究员,主要从事近现代日本文学和日本文化研究。本文为山东省社会科学规划研究项目"'四书'典籍日本馆藏研究"【项目批号: 23CWWJ01】和国家社科基金重点招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号: 19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

Title: Towards Computational Literary Criticism: Ethical Literary Criticism and Japanese Literary Studies

Abstract: Proposed by Chinese scholar Nie Zhenzhao in 2004, ethical literary criticism has rapidly developed into a theory of literary criticism that has been recognized and widely employed by Chinese and international academic

communities. In order to further promote the dissemination and development of ethical literary criticism in East Asia, the author was invited to organize this issue, focusing on the key concepts of ethical literary criticism such as ethical identity, ethical choice, and ethical environment, and exploring how ethical literary criticism provides theoretical references for the study of literature in East Asia such as Japan and South Korea from the perspective of theoretical construction and critical practice. This article specifically highlights the "Computational Turn in Literary Criticism" proposed by Professor Nie Zhenzhao, an International Fellow of the British Academy and a Foreign Member of the Academia Europaea, and provides interpretations in this special issue. From the perspective of "negative capability," it analyzes representative works of contemporary Japanese literature, including Ushio Fukuzawa's Green and Red, Keiichiro Hirano's A Man, and Sonoko Machida's 52-hertz Whale, to explore the potential integration of Japanese literature with ethical literary criticism.

Keywords: ethical literary criticism; Japanese literature; ethical identity; ethical choice; computational literary criticism

Author: Tsuyoshi Namigata, PhD. of Tsukuba University, is Professor at the Faculty of Social and Cultural Studies, Kyushu University (Fukuoka 8190395, Japan). His research interests include modern and contemporary Japanese literature and culture (Email: tnamigata@scs.kyushu-u.ac.jp).

Translator: Zhang Limin, Lecturer at the School of Translation Studies, Qufu Normal University (Rizhao 276826, China) and Visiting Scholar at Kyushu University (Fukuoka 8190395, Japan). His major research area is modern and contemporary Japanese literature and culture (Email: limin0580@163.com).

2024年10月,受浙江大学世界文学跨学科研究中心邀请,我通过线 上方式为浙大学生作了三次专题讲座。讲座以"消极感受力"(Negative capability)为切入点,迭进式解析了日本当代文学中较具影响力的三部作品: 深泽潮(Ushio Fukuzawa)的《绿与红》(『緑と赤』,2015)、平野启一郎 (Keiichiro Hirano)的《那个男人》(『ある男』, 2018)和町田宛子¹(Sonoko Machida) 的《52 赫兹的鲸鱼们》(『52 ヘルツのクジラたち』, 2020)。"消 极感受力"通常指个体在面对不确定性、困境或痛苦时,能够承受并接纳这 种消极情绪的能力。这种能力不仅包括对外部困境的承受力,也涉及对内心 复杂情绪的理解和反思。在叶芝(W.B. Yeats)诗歌研究中不乏以"消极感受

日文标记为"町田そのこ"。由于日文姓名的名字部分为日文假名"そのこ", 无对 应目文汉字, 所以, 按翻译习惯从假名对应的日文汉字中选取常用汉字"宛子", 作为目 文名字部分的中文译名。

力"为视角展开的著述,同样,"消极感受力"也可以成为理解日本当代文学,搭 建文学伦理学批评与日本文学研究深度融合的路径之一。

在筹备讲座时,我发现三部小说的主人公均处于一种"无法得出答案"的 境地。例如《绿与红》的主人公知英(Chiyoung),她是第四代在日韩国人。伴 随着自我意识的成长, 知英愈发感觉到自身日本人身份与韩国人身份之间的 拉扯,无法在"是A还是B"中做出选择,甚至陷入自我认同和文化认同危 机中痛苦不已。事实上,知英面临着与莎士比亚笔下人物哈姆雷特相同的伦 理困境,即 "To be or not to be: that is a question"。在日益成熟的理性意识的 驱使下,知英难以在两个道德选项——出生地兼成长地日本与血脉根源所在 的祖国韩国——之间做出果断抉择。因为无论选择哪一项,在伦理上都会导 致另一项违背伦理,即:选择是道德的,但一旦选择就是不道德的,从而造 成她沉湎于理性的思考而无法采取行动。'实际上,不选择亦是一种选择。从"消 极感受力"的角度来看,较于从A或B中仓促作出选择而言,个体在两个选 项之间不断试探与试错,通过感知、认知和理解负面情绪以提高应对能力,这 或许更有助于个体在未来找到属于自己的答案; 从作家创作的角度来看, 作 家提出问题但不给出或不急于给出答案,这种叙事策略能够引导读者深化对 人类普遍处境的理解,培养多元而非单一的思维方式,即一种"开放性脑文 本"²,以此帮助读者适应当今伦理取向日益多元的日本后现代社会,实现文 学教诲功能。

然而,伴随着深入思考,我又察觉到"无法得出答案"实则涵盖另一种 情形,即"根本无法找到答案"。不少文学作品将对已故人物的探寻作为叙 事主线,试图把握逝者生前的思维模式,这无疑是徒劳的。即便如此,人们 依然执着于寻求一个结果,这极易使人陷入另一种境地,即:不得不接纳或 许并非正确答案的答案。例如《那个男人》中的"妻子",在丈夫意外离世 之后,她才发现所谓的"丈夫"实际是冒用他人身份的陌生人。"妻子"委 托他人展开调查,但"丈夫"已逝,真相或许永远停留在推测的层面。诚然,当 个体遭遇突如其来的打击时,具有较高消极感受力的人通常更容易体验到负 面情绪,这可能导致他们在心理上感受到更大的不适或沮丧,但这种情感的 深度体验也可能成为一种契机,使他们以更理性的视角认识和应对负面事 件。小说中的"妻子"最终接受了"推测",并非因为"推测"本身令人信服,而 是她逐渐意识到,寻找过程的意义远大于最终的结果。事实上,小说标题《那 个男人》早已暗示了这一点: "那个"所带来的不确定性并非指向"男人"的

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

参见任洁: "《寻羊冒险记》中的"羊"与隐喻脑文本的建构机制",《外国文学》 2 (2023): 55.

姓名,而是他的身份。人总是生活于一定伦理环境之中,伦理环境赋予身份 以浓厚的伦理意蕴,因此从本质上说人的身份即伦理身份。¹ 文学伦理学批评 重视身份的伦理性,强调以社会为场域、以伦理为尺度,揭橥身份主体在社 会中所处的位置及由身份赋予的责任与义务。在小说中,不论在此前的人生 中"那个男人"是"谁"²,至少在家庭场域中,他履行了作为丈夫和父亲应 履行的责任和义务,那么他就是"妻子"的丈夫、孩子们的父亲。

在第三部小说《52 赫兹的鲸鱼们》中,主人公贵瑚自幼饱受父母虐待,对人生充满绝望。后来,她遇到了给予她生之希望的安吾,但安吾自身也深受跨性别身份的困扰,选择以自杀方式结束生命。安吾的离去令贵瑚深感自责,她无力拯救对自己至关重要的人,只能在无尽思念中痛苦挣扎。贵瑚所面对的不是"是 A 还是 B"的两难选择,也不是"根无法找到答案"的无解之问,而是一种预设的、既定的事实。就如同"52 赫兹的鲸鱼",因独特的52 赫兹发声频率,从出生之际便注定无法与同类交流,成为世界上最孤独的鲸鱼。不难发现,在各国文学中,或多或少都存在类似"贵瑚"的人物形象。例如悲剧《俄狄浦斯王》中的俄狄浦斯,他无法逃避神所安排的命运——杀父娶母。然而,"命运只是表明某种事情必然会发生",但不意味着其结果一定指向悲剧,因为结果"不是由命运决定的,而是由发生的事情的性质决定的"(Nie 111)。在这一过程中,消极感受力依然能够发挥作用,促使个体通过自我探索和自我反思重获新生。

显然,能否承受上述三种困境所带来的重压,不仅仅取决于运气的好坏,更为关键的要素在于个体努力以及周围是否存在有力的支持者。在《绿与红》中,主人公知英的挚友梓宛如一盏明灯,在知英深陷身份认同困境、迷茫无措之时给予她慰藉与支撑;在《那个男人》中,律师城户凭借专业能力与共情心理,帮助理枝在探寻亡夫过往、直面生活变故的艰难旅程中稳步前行;而在《52赫兹的鲸鱼们》中,贵瑚的朋友见晴同样在贵瑚被"幸存者负罪感"苦苦纠缠、几近绝望之际,伸出援手。在现代日本文学中,人与人之间相互扶持、共克时艰的主题常常成为创作的重点。这不仅反映了人性在困境中的光辉,也揭示了他者在个体成长与心灵救赎过程中发挥的不可或缺的作用。

如前文所述,近期我一直专注于对日本文学与文学伦理学批评内在关联 的思考。我计划将这些零散的观点进一步梳理与整合,使之最终成为一篇逻 辑严谨、结构完整的学术论文。我对这篇论文的完成充满期待。

笔者受邀组织本期专栏,专栏文章既包括对文学伦理学批评基础理论和主要观点的探讨,又涵盖对核心术语如伦理环境(ethical environment)、伦理身份(ethical identity)、伦理选择(ethical choice)、伦理两难(ethical dilemma)等的应用,表现出跨时代、跨国别、跨文化、跨学科的研究特色。其

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, London: Routledge, 2023, 194-196.

² 律师推测他是杀人犯的儿子。

中,梁诚允(Seong-Yoon Yang)和严泰雄(Tae-Ung Eom)的论文"前近代¹韩日社会小说中的伦理叙事与批评——以'毁节'和'殉情'主题为中心",考察了朝鲜世态小说和日本浮世草子的叙事策略与伦理主旨。论文认为,这两种文学传统为被边缘化且缺乏话语权的个体提供了文学表达的平台,进而对等级森严的社会进行批判,引发对人与人之间"关系构建"等问题的探讨。特别值得关注的是李相赫(Sanghyuk Lee)和郑有珍(Eugene Chung)的论文"日本科幻文学主题转变研究:基于BERT的主题建模框架下伊藤计划与哈娜·任的作品分析"。该论文采用数字人文研究方法,基于BERT进行主题建模和文本挖掘,探讨日本科幻文学的主题演变,试图在文学计算批评与传统文学批评之间架起桥梁。这无疑是对英国国家学术院外籍院士、欧洲科学院外籍院士、欧洲科学院外籍院士、彭钊教授于2024年提出的"文学批评的计算分析转向"的一种有效回应。

2024年12月13日浙江大学世界文学跨学科研究中心举办紫金港跨学科国际讲坛第五届青年领航论坛暨"文学计算批评与人工智能时代的文学研究"学术研讨会。聂教授在题为"从文学伦理学批评到文学计算分析批评"的主旨发言中指出,文学伦理学批评的理论基础始终与科学选择紧密关联,而文学计算批评作为其新的发展方向,借助人工智能技术将有力推动文学研究的科学化转向。文学计算批评综合运用多种先进技术手段,深入挖掘和精准分析文学作品,将传统的主观文学批评转变为科学的计算分析模式,为文学研究开创了全新的视角和方法论。此外,聂教授还深入阐述了文学计算批评的原理,明确指出计算机处理文本依靠二进制编码实现高效的人机交互,而文本数字化则是文学计算批评得以实施的关键前提。计算批评的内容涵盖词语统计、人物统计(包括人物背景、选择活动等丰富维度),通过细致入微的分类统计,将文学作品转化为数据形式,从而为更加精准的文学分析与评价提供有力支撑。

会上,浙江大学世界文学跨学科研究中心主任杨革新教授对聂教授的发言做出回应。他谈到,计算批评作为数字人文研究的重要分支,为文学研究提供了强大处理工具和崭新研究范式,在大数据技术的加持下将文学计量研究推向新的高度。然而,当前计算批评面临着两方面的挑战:一是来自传统文学研究领域的质疑与批评,面对新兴的计算批评,要摒弃非此即彼的对立思维,持开放与积极探究的态度,计算批评并非要颠覆或取代传统批评,而是与之相辅相成,共同挖掘文学的丰富性;二是计算批评自身存在着诸多问

¹ 在日本历史的演进历程中,就时代划分维度而言,通常明治维新被视作具有划时代意义的关键节点。以此为界,江户时代普遍被划定为近世范畴,而明治时代及其后续延展的时代则一并被归类为近代。日本文学史同样遵循类似的划分逻辑,明治维新以前的时段被定义为古典文学阶段,自此往后的时代则被冠名为近代文学时期。值得注意的是,在古典文学体系架构内,近世文学所处地位较为特殊,其扮演着从传统迈向近代的过渡角色,故而常被界定为前近代文学,承载着衔接不同文学发展阶段、传承与变革文学风貌的重要使命。

题,计算批评确实具备突破认知局限以产生新见解的潜力,但数据库建设尚不完备、文本分析模型不够精确等问题可能会导致一些误判和误读。因此,在从事计算批评时,相关领域专家的交流与合作显得尤为重要。通过分享专业知识和经验,人文学者可以更全面地了解和掌握计算批评的相关知识,致力于计算批评的研究者也可以借此建立更加准确恰当的分析模型。

不可否认,文学伦理学批评在世界文学研究领域具有令人惊叹的前瞻性、革命性与前沿性。聂教授强调的"文学批评的计算分析转向",不仅推动了文学理论的革新与进步,更为式微的人文研究提供了新的发展机遇和广阔空间。基于此,我组织本期专栏,衷心希望这些经过深入研究与精心雕琢的论文成果,能够成为日本文学与文学伦理学批评深入对话的契机,从而进一步推动文学伦理学批评在东亚地区的传播与发展。

Works Cited

深沢潮: 『緑と赤』。東京: 実業之日本社,2015年。

[Fukuzawa, Ushio. Green and Red. Tokyo: Jitsugyo no Nihon Sha Ltd, 2015.]

平野啓一郎: 『ある男』。東京: 文藝春秋, 2018年。

[Keiichiro Hirano. A Man. Tokyo: Bungeishunju Ltd, 2018.]

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.

- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.
- —. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. London: Routledge, 2023.
- 任洁: "《寻羊冒险记》中的"羊"与隐喻脑文本的建构机制",《外国文学》2(2023): 50-58。

[Ren Jie. "'Sheep' in Haruki Murakami's *A Wild Sheep Chase* and the Constructing Mechanism of Metaphoric Brain Text." *Foreign Literature* 2 (2023): 50-58.]

町田そのこ: 『52 ヘルツのクジラたち』。東京: 中央公論新社, 2020年。

[Sonoko Machida. 52-hertz Whale. Tokyo: Chuokoron-shinsha, Inc. 2020.]

Exploring Thematic Shifts in Japanese Science Fiction Literature: A BERT-Based Topic Modeling Approach to Project Itoh and Hanna Ren¹

Sanghyuk Lee & Eugene Chung

Abstract: This study explores the thematic evolution in Japanese SF literature, focusing on Project Itoh's Genocidal Organ and Harmony alongside Hanna Ren's parody work A Pistol Handed to Miaha. Project Itoh's works are characterized by their exploration of human-subjectivity, technological oppression, and the societal roles of the body and language, engaging with posthuman themes and new conditions of existence. In contrast, Hanna Ren's text adopts a lighter tone, emphasizing sensory elements, humor, and romantic themes while maintaining structural ambivalence and reversals. By employing digital humanities methodologies, such as BERT-based topic modeling and text mining, this research bridges computational and traditional literary criticism. It identifies key thematic shifts from Project Itoh's heavy and introspective focus on liberation and existential conditions to Hanna Ren's playful engagement within societal constraints. This study situates Ren's work within broader contexts of parody, homage, and Hiroki Azuma's concept of "database consumption," reflecting contemporary trends in SF literature. Ultimately, the paper contributes to understanding the dynamic interplay of influence, innovation, and thematic adaptation in post-Project Itoh SF, offering insights into the ethical and existential questions that underpin literary expression in the digital age.

Keywords: digital humanities; BERT; topic modeling; Project Itoh; Hanna Ren **Authors: Sanghyuk Lee** is Research Professor at the Humanities Research Institute of Chungnam National University (Daejeon 34134, Republic of Korea). His research interests covered the fields of Japanese Literature and Sub-Culture (Email: riversh790@gmail.com). **Eugene Chung** is Professor in the Department of Linguistics at Korea University (Seoul 02841, Republic of Korea). Her research focuses on corpus linguistics, cognitive linguistics, and digital humanities (Email: echung2@korea.ac.kr).

¹ This research was supported by a faculty research grant from the College of Liberal Arts at Korea University in 2022.

标题:日本科幻文学中的主题转变研究:基于BERT的主题建模框架下伊藤 计划与哈娜·任的作品分析

内容摘要:本文探讨了日本科幻文学的主题演变,重点分析了伊藤计划的两部作品《虐杀器官》《和谐》以及哈娜·任的戏仿作品《交给米娅的手枪》。伊藤计划的作品探讨人类主体性、技术压迫以及身体和语言在社会中扮演的角色,涉及后人类主题与新生存条件。而相比之下,哈娜·任的文本则采用了更轻松的语调,强调感官元素和幽默浪漫的主题,同时保留了结构上的不更轻松的语调,强调感官元素和幽默浪漫的主题,同时保留了结构上的不是反转设计。本文通过数字人文学法,如基于BERT的主题建模和文局,试图在计算文学批评和传统文学批评之间架起桥梁。此外,研究揭刻下日本科幻文学主题上的关键转变,即从伊藤计划对解放与存在条件的深入日本科幻文学主题上的关键转变,即从伊藤计划对解放与存在条件的深入中省和沉重关注,转向哈娜·任在社会约束中的戏谑式探讨。通过将哈娜·任文的作品置于戏仿与致敬和东浩纪"数据库消费"概念的更广阔语境中,论文试图反映当代科幻文学的发展趋势,并对伊藤计划在后科幻文学中影响的化理与存在问题提供了新的见解。

关键词:数字人文;BERT;主题模型;伊藤计划;哈娜·任

作者简介: 李相赫, 忠南大学人文研究院研究教授, 主要研究方向为日本文学和亚文化领域; 郑有珍, 高丽大学语言学系的教授, 主要研究方向为语料库语言学、认知语言学和数字人文。

1. Introduction

The late 2000s marked a turning point in Japanese SF literature, often referred to as the end of its "winter," with the emergence of Project Itoh revitalizing the genre. Project Itoh's works, such as *Genocidal Organ* and *Harmony*, have been widely celebrated for their narrative innovation and thematic complexity, significantly influencing subsequent generations of SF writers. Following Itoh's passing, SF Magazine featured a special issue titled "Post Project Itoh" highlighting the enduring impact of his works. However, while this issue acknowledged his influence, it did not delve into how later writers have inherited, adapted, or transformed his themes. This lack of detailed analysis represents a critical gap in understanding the continuities and shifts within Japanese SF literature, which reflect broader cultural and societal changes.

Despite the resurgence of SF literature and the accompanying growth in scholarly interest, most existing research remains rooted in traditional literary criticism. Systematic, data-driven explorations of thematic transformations are notably absent, necessitating the adoption of methodologies from digital humanities.

Text mining and topic modeling, for instance, provide powerful tools to quantify and analyze thematic patterns across texts, offering new perspectives on literary evolution.

This study addresses these gaps by applying digital humanities methodologies to examine the thematic evolution in Japanese SF literature. Focusing on Project Itoh's Genocidal Organ and Harmony alongside Hanna Ren's parody A Pistol Handed to Miaha, this research explores how key themes are inherited, transformed, and reimagined, shedding light on the evolution of SF literature around 2010.

The following research questions guide this study: 1. How are the key themes and keywords from Genocidal Organ and Harmony inherited, transformed, and restructured in Hanna Ren's parody A Pistol Handed to Miaha? 2. What socio-cultural contexts are revealed in the process of thematic adaptation and transformation within Ren's parody, and what roles do parody, imitation, and borrowing play in the broader SF literary landscape? 3. How can digital humanities techniques, such as text mining and topic modeling, provide new insights into thematic evolution in SF literature, and what are their limitations compared to traditional critical approaches? By addressing these questions, this study contributes to a deeper understanding of thematic evolution in SF literature while demonstrating the value of digital humanities methodologies. This research not only bridges the gap between traditional and computational literary criticism but also highlights the transformative potential of interdisciplinary approaches in the digital age.

2. Research Methodology

2.1 Data Collection and Preprocessing

The study began with the collection and preprocessing of textual data extracted from PDF documents of Genocidal Organ, Harmony, and A Pistol Handed to Miaha. Optical Character Recognition (OCR) technology was employed to digitize the Japanese-language content, ensuring high accuracy by configuring the OCR settings specifically for Japanese text. This step produced clean, machine-readable datasets for computational analysis.

Subsequently, the textual data underwent preprocessing to standardize its structure and remove noise. Non-alphanumeric characters, excessive spaces, and irrelevant elements were filtered out. Sentences were segmented based on Japanese punctuation markers such as ". " and "!." A custom stopword list tailored to Japanese was applied to eliminate function words and other high-frequency terms with minimal analytical significance. Morphological analysis, conducted using the GiNZA parser, facilitated the extraction of linguistically meaningful

tokens, including nouns, verbs, and adjectives, to form a dataset optimized for computational modeling.

2.2 BERT-Based Topic Modeling Framework

To analyze the thematic structures within the texts, the study utilized a BERT-based topic modeling framework, moving beyond the limitations of traditional methods like Latent Dirichlet Allocation (LDA). Using the paraphrase-multilingual-MiniLM-L12-v2 model, sentence-level embeddings were generated to capture contextual meaning within the text.

Dimensionality reduction was then applied using Uniform Manifold Approximation and Projection (UMAP) to simplify the high-dimensional embeddings while preserving their semantic relationships. Following this, K-Means clustering was employed to group sentences into coherent thematic clusters. This process demonstrated significant advantages over LDA by incorporating the nuanced, context-sensitive relationships inherent in literary texts, which often include abstract and metaphorical expressions.¹

2.3 Comparing LDA and BERT-Based Approaches

Latent Dirichlet Allocation (LDA) has historically been a foundational method for thematic analysis in literary studies. Blei et al.² introduced LDA as a probabilistic framework for extracting latent themes based on word co-occurrence, which has been extensively applied in the humanities. For instance, Goldstone and Underwood³ analyzed thematic shifts in 19th-century English literature using LDA, while Liu et al.4 traced thematic transformations in classical Chinese poetry to explore historical evolutions in poetic traditions.

Despite its contributions, LDA operates under the assumption of word independence, often failing to capture the nuanced semantic relationships and contextual meanings that are essential for analyzing complex literary narratives. This limitation frequently results in oversimplified thematic representations, necessitating the adoption of more advanced methodologies.

See Maarten Grootendorst, "BERTopic: Neural topic modeling with a class-based TF-IDF procedure," arXiv preprint arXiv:2203.05794 (2022); Wang Xuerui et al., "Topical n-grams: Phrase and topic discovery, with an application to information retrieval," Seventh IEEE International Conference on Data Mining (2007): 697-702.

See David M. Blei et al., "Latent Dirichlet Allocation," Journal of Machine Learning Research 3 (2003): 993-1022.

See Andrew Goldstone and Ted Underwood, "What Can Topic Models of PMLA Teach Us About the History of Literary Scholarship?" Journal of Digital Humanities 1 (2012): 39-48.

See Liu Dayiheng et al., "A Multi-modal Chinese Poetry Generation Model," 2018 International Joint Conference on Neural Networks (IJCNN) (2018): 1-8.

BERT-based models, by contrast, leverage deep contextual embeddings to capture semantic nuances at the sentence level. Grootendorst demonstrated that BERTopic, which integrates BERT embeddings, consistently outperforms LDA in identifying coherent and meaningful themes across diverse textual datasets. Similarly, Wang et al. and Kiros et al. highlighted BERT's effectiveness in uncovering intricate thematic structures in modern and unstructured literary texts. This study adopts the BERT-based framework to overcome the limitations of LDA, enabling a more refined and comprehensive analysis of thematic evolution.

2.4 Thematic Interpretation and Analysis

The final phase of the methodology involved interpreting the topic clusters generated by the BERT-based topic modeling framework. CountVectorizer was used to extract high-frequency keywords from each cluster, forming topic profiles that provided insight into the dominant themes.

These profiles were contextualized within the broader literary and cultural frameworks of Project Itoh's original works and Hanna Ren's parody. The analysis revealed thematic progressions from existential motifs in Genocidal Organ and Harmony to the nuanced social commentary and intertextuality found in A Pistol Handed to Miaha. This thematic evolution reflects not only the creative dynamics of parody but also the broader cultural shifts in SF literature around 2010. By bridging traditional literary criticism with computational methods, this study offers a deeper understanding of how parody literature reinterprets and transforms core themes.

3. Topics Seen in Science Fiction Literature on the Project Itoh

In this section, I will analyze the main keywords and themes that appear in Project Itoh's Genocidal Organ and Harmony. Previous studies provide valuable insights into the overarching themes of these works. Akira Okawada³ and Rui Maeda⁴ interpret the literature of Project Itoh as offering a glimmer of hope for re-establishing subjectivity in an era where such a notion seems unattainable.

See Wang Xuerui et al., "Topical N-grams: Phrase and Topic Discovery, With An Application to Information Retrieval," Seventh IEEE International Conference on Data Mining (2007): 697-702.

See Ryan Kiros et al., "Skip-thought Vectors," Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems 28 (2015): 3294-3302.

See Akira Okawada, ""World War Within' and a Glimmer of Hope: On Project Itoh's Genocidal Organ," SWorld War Within' and a Glimmer of Hope: Project Itoh, SF, modern literatue (2013): 10-46; Hiroki Azuma, Otaku: Japan's Database Animals. Minnesota: U of Minnesota Press, 2009.

See Rui Maeda, "The Loss of [the Mother] Land," SF Magazine 56 (2013): 32-35.

Sang-hyuk Lee¹ views these works as fictional inquiries into the possibilities of literature and subjectivity through innovative forms. Shun Izutani² explores the potential cracks in societal structures, exposing absurdity from a gender-queer perspective. These analyses focus on themes surrounding subjectivity and the world, investigating their limitations and possibilities.

However, these interpretations rely heavily on traditional textual analysis of the narrative and structure. To deepen the discussion, this study incorporates evidence derived from computational methods, such as topic modeling, which facilitates comparative analyses between Project Itoh's works and those of later generations. This approach allows for a broader cultural and literary examination based on quantifiable data.

Topic	Keywords
3	いく (go), いっ (went), すべて (all), たち (group), わけ (reason), ボス (boss), ルツィア
	(Lutzia), 人間 (human), 仕事 (work), 任務 (mission), 作戦 (operation), 大佐 (colonel),
	大尉 (captain), 情報 (information), 標的 (target), 知っ (knew), 自分 (self), 記録 (record)
4	ジョンポール (John Paul), ブローニング (Browning), ルツィア (Lutzia), 人間
	(human), 作戦 (operation), 思っ (thought), 情報 (information), 文法 (grammar), 暗殺
	(assassination), 殺し (killing), 知っ (knew), 聞い (heard), 自分 (self), 虐殺 (massacre)
5	ことば (words), ビール (beer), ルツィア (Lutzia), 人間 (human), 会話 (conversation),
	単語 (word), 子供 (child), 意味 (meaning), 物語 (story), 自由 (freedom), 若者 (youth),
	英語 (English), 言葉 (language), 言語 (linguistics), 話す (speak)
	いく (go), くる (come), イルカ (dolphin), ホテル (hotel), ポッド (pod), ルツィア
8	(Lutzia), ヴィクトリア (Victoria), 人工 (artificial), 同じ (same), 廊下 (hallway), 沿岸
	(coastline), 産業 (industry), 筋肉 (muscle)
	デバイス (device), ナノマシン (nanomachine), ナノレイヤー (nanolayer), 人間
14	(human), 匂い (smell), 死体 (corpse), 焼ける (burn), 病院 (hospital), 筋肉 (muscle), 網
	膜 (retina), 自分 (self), 臭い (odor), 若者 (youth), 視線 (gaze)
	Id, セキュリティ (security), テクノロジー (technology), ネットワーク (network), 会
16	社 (company), 作戦 (operation), 個人情報 (personal information), 国家 (nation), 国防総
10	省 (Department of Defense), 情報 (information), 政府 (government), 機関 (organization),
	社会 (society), 記録 (record), 認証 (authentication), 諜報 (intelligence), 追跡 (tracking)
	カウンセラー (counselor), カウンセリング (counseling), マスキング (masking), モ
18	ジュール (module), 人間 (human), 処理 (process), 判断 (judgment), 医者 (doctor), 心
	理 (psychology), 感じ (feeling), 感情 (emotion), 戦闘 (combat), 機能 (function), 状態
	(condition), 痛い (hurt), 痛み (pain), 自分 (self), 苦痛 (suffering), 調整 (adjustment)
20	アメリカ人 (American), 世界 (world), 人間 (human), 国家 (nation), 国民 (citizen),
	意味 (meaning), 政府 (government), 文明 (civilization), 歴史 (history), 社会 (society),
	自分 (self), 自由 (freedom)

Table 1 Genocidal Organ Topic Modeling Results ((Partial View)

See Sanghyuk Lee, "The possiblility of Formal Exeriments and Fiction by Project Itoh: focusing on Harmony," Journal of Japanese Cultural Studies 95 (2022): 195-232.

See Shun Izutani, "A Queer Reading of Expatrates," Showa Bungaku Kenkyu 77 (2018): 71-77.

Themes such as "control," "surveillance," and "nanotechnology" dominate the narrative of Genocidal Organ. These motifs highlight the dangers of systemic suppression of human autonomy through technological means. For instance:

Topic 14 focuses on management through psychological counseling in medical institutions, where technologies like nanomachines (ナノマシン ナノレイヤー) are embedded in individuals' bodies, such as in their retinas or muscles, to regulate behavior.

Topic 16 examines how states(国家,政府,機関) manage individuals via identity verification, personal information, and tracking systems. (ID, セキュリテ ィ,個人情報,認証,追跡)

Topic 18 emphasizes psychological control mechanisms like masking and counseling, which manipulate emotions, pain, and judgment. (マスキング,カウ ンセリング,心理,感情,判断)

These results underscore how Genocidal Organ critiques the pervasive influence of institutional systems on individual freedom. Technological advancements, instead of fostering autonomy, become tools for comprehensive control over human consciousness and emotions.

Other recurring topics include missions (Topics 3 and 4), exploitation within capitalist systems (Topic 8), and the critical role of language (Topic 5). Yet, the central theme remains the suppression of freedom through mechanisms of control and management—a theme that resonates throughout Project Itoh and transitions into Harmony.

Topic	Keywords
5	Away, day, html, number, partnumber, ごめん (sorry), ミァハ (Miaha), 人間 (human),
	言葉 (language)
6	Watchme, インストール (installation), システム (system), メディケア (medicare),
	世界 (world). 人間 (human), 人類 (humanity), 体内 (body), 健康 (health), 分
	子 (molecular), 医療 (medical), 生活 (life), 産業 (industry), 病気 (disease), 監視
	(surveillance), 社会 (society), 自分 (self), 複合体 (complex), 身体 (body)
	ミァハ(Miaha),世界(world),事件 (incident), 人間 (human), 友人 (friend), 死ぬ
8	(die), 死者 (deceased), 殺し (killing), 瞬間 (moment), 社会 (society), 老人 (elderly),
	自分 (self), 自死 (self-inflicted death), 自殺 (suicide)
9	Thinglist, 画面 (screen), 空気 (air), 螺旋 (spiral), 視界 (field of vision), 言葉 (words),
	論文 (thesis/paper), 金属 (metal)
	世界 (world), 人間 (human), 人類 (humanity), 必要 (necessity), 意識 (consciousness),
11	感情 (emotion), 憎ん (hatred), 永遠 (eternity), 王様 (king), 生命 (life), 痛み (pain), 社会
	(society), 自分 (self), 野蛮 (barbarism)
	Description, アルコール (alcohol), カフェイン (caffeine), タバコ (tobacco), ライター
15	(lighter), ワイン (wine), 人間 (human), 吸う (smoke), 婦人 (lady), 必要 (necessity),
	戦場 (battlefield), 摂取 (intake), 灰皿 (ashtray), 葉巻 (cigar), 銃口 (muzzle)

I	
	Anger, クラス (class), ミァハ (Miaha), 大人 (adult), 子供 (child), 学校 (school), 怒り
16	(anger), 感じ (feeling), 成績 (grades), 教室 (classroom), 痛み (pain), 社会 (society),
	自分 (self), 苦痛 (suffering)
	Recollection, プライベート (private), 互い (each other), 人々 (people), 人間
17	(human), 倫理 (ethics), 必要 (necessity), 情報 (information), 意味 (meaning), 意識
	(consciousness), 社会 (society), 自分 (self), 言葉 (words), 身体 (body)
	ご飯 (rice), カプレーゼ (caprese), キッチン (kitchen), ミァハ (Miaha), 匂い (smell),
19	弁当 (bento), 料理 (cooking), 社会 (society), 自分 (self), 身体 (body), 食べ物 (food),
	食事 (meal)
	メディア (media), 上司 (boss), 事件 (incident), 人間 (human), 必要 (necessity),
20	情報 (information), 捜査 (investigation), 教授 (professor), 警察 (police),
	閣下 (Your Excellency), 首席 (chief)

Table 2 Harmony Topic Modeling Result (Partial View)

In the case of Project Itoh's *Harmony*, the emphasis on "safety" and "administration" in the narrative and structure of the story stands out. *Harmony* depicts a society in which safety is guaranteed through technological advancement but paradoxically results in the suppression of humanity, as well as the restriction, management, and control of individual freedom. This highlights the dangers of social control, where the concept of safety conflicts with human free will and serves as a mechanism to oppress individuals. In this regard, previous studies by Shin¹ and Hong² point out the danger that the increasing emphasis on safety and life-oriented ideologies in technological societies can lead to the suppression of human freedom. These studies link this phenomenon to the structure of individual repression in Japanese society, which is characterized by the prying eyes of others. This analysis is an important contribution to understanding the societal critiques embedded in *Harmony*.

¹ See Hakyoung Shin, "Project Itoh and Near Future of Post-humanism in *Harmony*," *Asian Culinary Studies* 41 (2016): 141-171.

² See Yunpyo Hong, "The Meaning of Control and Freedom in *Harmony* by Project Itoh," *Japan Studies* 38 (2022): 131-158.

and "police (警察)" in Topic 20. Furthermore, in Topic 16, the term "anger (怒 ")" appears alongside these repressive mechanisms, reflecting a consciousness of resistance and subversion within the system.

It is also worth noting that words such as "body (身体)," "life (生活)," and "health (健康)" are strongly associated with Topic 6, emphasizing themes of monitoring, management, and control. Topic 15 explores behaviors deemed harmful to "health" and individual life, such as "alcohol (P N J - N)," "tobacco (Q N J)," and "liquor (ビール、ワイン)" These themes are reflected in the character Miaha, who attempts to harm her body and health as a way of liberating herself from external and social oppressive forces that govern the body. In the novel, the body becomes a site of surveillance, management, and control by the state and society through the "life" technology represented by "WatchMe." Here, the private sphere of individual freedom is effectively erased, as everything is subject to public scrutiny under the guise of righteousness.

Referring to the aforementioned studies, Project Itoh addresses the issues surrounding the (im) possibility of subjectivity and its existential conditions through his science fiction literature. While related studies often focus on dimensions of "consciousness" or social conditions, the extracted data directly emphasizes the body. The data suggests that the body serves as a boundary between the private and public spheres. For instance, it is associated with "pain (苦 痛 , 痛 み)" in Topic 11 and 16, death and self-destruction (自殺) in Topic 8, and social relationships in Topic 17. Consequently, the management and control of the body are intrinsically linked to the management and control of consciousness. In this way, the private sphere is connected to the public domain, and the society depicted in *Harmony* is one maintained through the surveillance, management, and control of the body. The characters in the novel attempt to destroy the body—through which existing oppressive mechanisms operate—in their pursuit of a new existence and consciousness.

Of course, Project Itoh's Harmony connects the "body" to "consciousness" and "existence," emphasizing the significance of the material body. However, it does not neglect the importance of "language (言葉)" as a condition of existence. The word "language" appears in the data in Topics 5, 9, and 17, where it is associated with programming languages, devices, and social relationships, respectively. This suggests that Project Itoh views language as a social element closely tied to the broader concept of "humanity" as well as the "private (プライベート)" and "self (自分)" This interconnectedness of the social and the personal through language reinforces the idea that the two domains are not separate but rather interwoven. This interpretation aligns with Lee's (2022) analysis, which describes Project Itoh's

literature as a thought experiment that seeks to explore new human conditions through language and formal innovation.

4. Topics from Hanna Ren's A Pistol Handed to Miaha

After Itoh's death at a young age, the Japanese science fiction community honored him and referred to his influence as the "post Project Itoh." Hanna Ren is one of the later-generation writers influenced by him, and his short story A Pistol Handed to Miaha is included in the novel collection Smooth World and Its Enemies. This short story can be seen as a parody or homage to Harmony, not only because the name "Miaha" recalls the protagonist of Project Itoh's novel Harmony, but also because "pistols" play a significant role in the conclusion of *Harmony*.

Comparing Hanna Ren's A Pistol Handed to Miaha to Project Itoh's Harmony and Genocidal Organ allows us to explore not only the thematic similarities and differences between these works but also the subtle changes in style and focus between Project Itoh and later generations of science fiction. This comparison also provides insight into their formal characteristics as parodies or works that imitate and borrow from earlier texts. For the purpose of this paper, I will focus on the differences between the two—the Project Itoh and Hanna Ren—as distinct writers.

Topic	Keywords
4	インプラント (implant), ナイフ (knife), 咄嗟 (moment), 射出 (injection), 弾丸 (bullet),
	拳銃 (pistol), 最後 (last), 本物 (real thing), 玩具 (toy), 贈る (give), 銃口 (muzzle),
	銃弾 (bullet), 銃撃 (shooting)
6	アイコン (icon), オルゴール (music box), カクテル (cocktail), ガラス (glass),
	グラス (glass), ケーキ (cake), テーブル (table), 展開 (development), 文字 (letters),
	書斎 (study), 目線 (gaze), 眼前 (in front of the eyes), 眼球 (eyeball), 眼鏡 (glasses),
	見え (visible), 視線 (line of sight)
9	ソフト (software), ドア (door), ホール (hall), 廊下 (hallway), 意味 (meaning),
	衝撃 (shock), 閉じ (close), 静か (quiet)
	互い (each other), 人格 (personality), 人間 (human), 好意 (favor), 存在 (existence),
10	愛し (love), 愛する (to love), 愛情 (affection), 気持ち (feeling), 永遠 (eternity),
	生涯 (lifetime), 異性 (opposite sex), 相手 (partner), 真実 (truth), 花嫁 (bride)
12	インプラント (implant), 医師 (doctor), 医療 (medical care), 失敗 (failure),
	手術 (surgery), 病院 (hospital), 白い (white), 言葉 (words)
14	お願い (request), 分かっ (understood), 引き金 (trigger), 気づい (noticed), 決め
	(decided), 知っ (knew), 答え (answer), 犯罪者 (criminal), 論理 (logic), 音楽 (music)
15	人間 (human), 名前 (name), 小説 (novel), 恋愛 (romance), 物語 (story), 理由 (reason),
13	知っ (knew), 科学 (science), 終え (ended), 結末 (ending), 絶滅 (extinction), 肺腑 (lungs)
16	インプラント (implant), 世界 (world), 人間 (human), 受け (received), 墓地 (cemetery),
	壊す (destroy), 技術 (technology), 拳銃 (pistol), 聖書 (Bible), 聞い (heard), 言葉 (words),
	贈る (give)

17	ユーモア (humor), 口元 (mouth), 口調 (tone), 必死 (desperate), 感情 (emotion),
	笑み (smile), 笑顔 (smiling face), 表情 (expression), 言葉 (words)
18	インプラント (implant), 不安 (anxiety), 世界 (world), 人物 (character),
	受け取る (receive), 拳銃 (pistol), 聖書 (Bible), 言葉 (words)
20	人間 (human), 仮面 (mask), 白い (white), 白衣 (white coat), 白鳥 (swan), 黒い (black),
	眼球 (eyeball)

Table 3 A Pistol Handed to Miaha Topic Modeling Result Table

Some of the similarities to Project Itoh's *Harmony* include Topic 12, which is related to healthcare; Topic 9, which features spatial words; and Topic 6, which includes words related to eating. Other topics, however, are quite different. For instance, Topic 10 focuses on love and romance, Topics 14 and 15 explore themes of knowledge, Topic 17 highlights humor, and Topic 20 examines contrasts.

If we first consider Topic 6, which contains words similar to the data from - \pm)" parallel words related to eating in Topic 19 of *Harmony*, such as "kitchen (\pm ッチン)," "bento (弁当)," "cooking (料理)," and "meal (食事)" However, what distinguishes Hanna Ren's work from Project Itoh is that these food-related words are often accompanied by visual terms like "letter or character (文字)," "line of sight (目 線, 視線)," and "in front of the eyes (眼前)" This suggests that Hanna Ren is more focused on sensory or visual elements than on the materiality of food itself, in contrast to Project Itoh's thematic interest in the body and its societal implications.

As previously noted, Project Itoh extends its thematic exploration from material food and the body to issues of management and societal control. Hanna Ren, on the other hand, appears to prioritize sensory experiences over the body and its role in power structures, such as management and control.

This distinction is also evident in Topic 10, which delves into love and romance. Words such as "affection (愛情)," "love (愛する)," "eternity (永遠)," and "bride (花嫁)" are absent from Project Itoh's topic data. These terms reflect the lightness that characterizes Hanna Ren's texts. Compared to Project Itoh, which grapples with the possibility of new subjects and existence or the liberation of the "body" from societal management and control, Hanna Ren's parody text portrays romance in unattainable situations, reminiscent of Romeo and Juliet. In other words, while Project Itoh's novels emphasize heavy and serious themes, Hanna Ren's works bring a lighter tone, emphasizing love, romance, and sensuality. This characteristic of lightness in Hanna Ren's writing is further exemplified in Topic 17, where words such as "humor (ユーモア)" and "laughter (笑み, 笑顔)" emerge. These elements underline her distinct approach, which contrasts with the somber and introspective mood of Project Itoh.

It is important to note, however, that Hanna Ren's text does not merely accept the phenomenon of the "here-and-now" represented by "lightness." On the contrary, it also includes topics such as "bullet (彈丸)," "bullet (銃弾)," "knife (ナイフ)" and other words with disruptive meanings, such as "pistol (拳銃)," "graveyard (墓地)," and "smash (壊す)." These appear in several topics, such as Topic 16. In Topic 20, where contrasting words are found, ambivalence is expressed through terms like "mask (仮面)," "white (白い . 白衣 , 白鳥)," and "black (黒い)" which highlight themes of contrast. To interpret this, if Project Itoh addresses the heavy theme of connecting the "I" and the "world" through the medium of the "body," breaking down the hierarchy of mind and body, and creating new conditions of existence through their compatibility, Hanna Ren instead explores the cracks and balance of opposites through atmosphere and setting.

This appears to be a defining characteristic of Hanna Ren's writing, which emphasizes reversals that subvert the expected "ending." For example, in Topic 15, the concept of an "ending (結末 , 終え)" is linked to "knowing (' 知った , 理由)" while words such as "extinction (絶滅)" and "lung (肺腑 -The meaning of 'cutting to the heart')" introduce a sense of reversal. To summarize, Hanna Ren builds her literature on the literary premise of ambivalence, balancing heaviness and lightness, stability and disruption, and the reversal of expectations.

When considering this conclusion in relation to Nam¹'s research on the role of otherworldly light novels as a substitute for reality, it becomes apparent that while the Project Itoh seriously contemplates escape from an inescapable oppressive reality structure through fiction, Hanna Ren's work accepts this existential condition as a given. For Hanna Ren, this condition is no longer a quest for escape (as in Project Itoh), but rather a playful engagement within the inescapable constraints and forms of reality. The transition from Project Itoh's *Harmony* to Hanna Ren's *A Pistol Handed to Miaha*—specifically, the shift in imitation and borrowing—reveals a fundamental difference in the perception of existential conditions. While Project Itoh grapples with the heavy notion of seeking escape from the inescapable, Hanna Ren adopts a light-hearted perspective, accepting the impossibility of escape as a given and engaging in playful exploration within those constraints.

5. Conclusion

This paper analyzes the shift in themes across the texts of Project Itoh and subsequent

¹ See Yoomin Nam, "A Study on 'Villainess' Japanese Web Novels Using Textmining Method," *Border Crossings: The Journal of Japanese-Language Literature Studies* 16 (2023): 188.

parody or homage novels by Hanna Ren. Previous studies of Itoh's work have characterized him as a writer deeply concerned with the (in)possibilities and conditions of new subjects and modes of existence. This paper concurs with this analysis and extends it by examining more specific themes and word associations.

The results indicate that Project Itoh emphasizes the body and language. Project Itoh seriously engages with posthuman themes in science fiction literature, such as the concept of the body as a site where external and social forces operate, and the evolution of a new, liberated "I" through the destruction of the "body." This includes deconstructing the dichotomy between mind and body, highlighting how the material body is interconnected with consciousness and spirit. The element of "language" is also pivotal, emphasizing its role and the power of fiction as external and social constructs that shape individual identity. Consequently, the possibility of a posthuman subject in science fiction literature can be seen as a thought experiment rooted in these fundamental conditions.

On the other hand, as a post Project Itoh writer, Hanna Ren shares an interest in language but appears to place less emphasis on the body and the conditions of new existence. Instead, her texts seem to focus on the contrast between heaviness and lightness, or on dualities (e.g., cracks and balances) within the setting, rather than exploring dualities in subject matter.

This perspective aligns with contemporary contexts of parody and homage, as well as the growing prevalence of imitation and borrowing in literature, as described in Hiroki Azuma's concept of "database consumption." These connections warrant further exploration in the field of SF studies. While this paper serves as an initial extraction of these features, future work will delve deeper into the differences between Project Itoh and Enjoe Toh's Empire of the Dead, which he completed using the prologue and setting left by Itoh. Additionally, further analysis will include topic modeling of Hanna Ren's parody or homage works, such as Frankenstein's Three Principles or The Revenge of the Dead.

I will conclude with a brief remark on the significance of such analyses. If "ethics" concerns how we perceive the world, relate to objects, and conduct ourselves, then recognizing and expressing this existential condition in literature becomes a matter of contemporary "ethics." Furthermore, as Lianyou Guo² notes,

See Hiroki Azuma, Otaku: Japan's Database Animals, Minnesota: University of Minnesota Press, 2009.

See Guo Lianyou, "Analysis of New Trends In the Field of Japanese Cultural Content Research in China," Border Crossings: The Journal of Japanese-Language Literature Studies 17 (2023): 79-101.

with the increasing focus on virtual worlds like the "metaverse," it is imperative not only to analyze these technologies but also to interpret their meanings in relation to human existential conditions and ethics.

Works Cited

- 아즈마 히로키: 『동물화하는 포스트모던 오타쿠를 통해 본 일본 사회』, 문학동네, 2007。
- [Azuma, Hiroki. Otaku: Japan's Database Animals. Minnesota: U of Minnesota Press, 2009.]
- Blei, David M. et al. "Latent Dirichlet Allocation." Journal of Machine Learning Research 3 (2003): 993-1022.
- Goldstone, Andrew and Ted Underwood. "What Can Topic Models of PMLA Teach Us About the History of Literary Scholarship?" Journal of Digital Humanities 1 (2012): 39-48.
- Grootendorst, Maarten. "BERTopic: Neural Topic Modeling With a Class-based TF-IDF Procedure." arXiv preprint arXiv:2203.05794 (2022).
- Guo Lianyou. "Analysis of New Trends In the Field of Japanese Cultural Content Research in China." Border Crossings: The Journal of Japanese-Language Literature Studies 17 (2023): 79-101.
- 홍윤표: 「이토 게이카쿠 『하모니』를 통해 본 통제와 자유의 의미」『일본연구』38, 고려대글로벌일본연구원, 2022년: 131-158。
- [Hong, Yunpyo. "The Meaning of Control and Freedom in Harmony by Project Itoh." Japan Studies 38 (2022): 131-158.]
- 泉谷瞬: 「出向者のクィア・リーディングー伊藤計劃『虐殺器官』と津村記久子『十二 月の窓辺』」, 『昭和文学研究』77 (2018): 71-75。
- [Izutani, Shun. "A Queer Reading of Expatrates." Showa Bungaku Kenkyu 77 (2018): 71-75.]
- Kiros, Ryan et al. "Skip-thought Vectors." Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems 28 (2015): 3294-3302.
- 이상혁: 「이토 게이카쿠의 형식실험과 픽션의 가능성」, 『일본문화학보』95 (2022): 195-232。
- [Lee, Sanghyuk. "The possibility of Formal Exeriments and Fiction by Project Itoh: Focusing on Harmony." Journal of Japanese Cultural Studies 95 (2022): 195-232.]
- Liu Dayiheng et al. "A Multi-modal Chinese Poetry Generation Model." 2018 International Joint Conference on Neural Networks (IJCNN) (2018): 1-8.
- 前田塁: 「(母)国と/の喪失」,『SFマガジン』56(2013): 32-35。
- Maeda, Rui. "The Loss of [the Mother] Land." SF Magazine 56 (2013): 32-35.
- Nam, Yoomin. "A Study on 'Villainess' Japanese Web Novels Using Textmining Method." Border Crossings: The Journal of Japanese-Language Literature Studies 1 (2023): 173-190.
- 岡和田晃:「『世界内戦』とわずかな希望――伊藤計劃『虐殺器官』へ向き会うために」,

- 『「世界内戦」とわずかな希望--伊藤計劃・SF・現代文学』。東京: 書苑新社, 2013, 第10-46頁。
- [Okawada, Akira. "World War Within' and a Glimmer of Hope: On Project Itoh's Genocidal Organ." World War Within' and a Glimmer of Hope: Project Itoh, SF, Modern Literatue, Tokyo: Shoenshinsha, 2013. 10-46.
- 신하경: 「이토 게이카쿠와 '포스트휴먼 '적 근미래 = 『하모니』를 중심으로」, 『아 시아문화연구』41 (2016): 141-171。
- [Shin, Hakyoung. "Project Itoh and Near Future of Post-humanism in Harmony." Asian Culinary Studies 41 (2016): 141-171.]
- Wang Xuerui et al. "Topical N-grams: Phrase and Topic Discovery, With An Application to Information Retrieval." Seventh IEEE International Conference on Data Mining (2007): 697-702.

Ethical Narratives and Criticism in Premodern Korean and Japanese Societal Novels: Focusing on the Motifs of Hwejeol and Shinjū

Seong-Yoon Yang & Tae-Ung Eom

Abstract: This study examines the narrative strategies in Korean Se-tae so-seol and Japanese ukiyo-zōshi, focusing on the Hwe-jeol motif in Korean tales and the shinjū motif in Japanese stories. Set in the late Joseon period (17th-19th centuries), Se-tae so-seol portrays regional Gisaeng's seduction and Seoul men's fascination, exposing socio-cultural tensions between Seoul and the provinces while humorously fostering broader perspectives and harmony. The Hwe-jeol motif recalibrates entrenched viewpoints and promotes regional exchange and communication. Similarly, Japanese ukiyo-zōshi utilize the shinjū motif, where clients doubt the inner feelings of $y\bar{u}jo$, test their sincerity, and determine their fate—whether through ruin, downfall, or redemption—after her sincerity is judged. However, in "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword," the yūjo's "falsity" is not rendered comical or objectified. Instead, the narrative frustrates readers' "penetrative desire," highlighting the $y\bar{u}jo$'s struggle to survive within a competitive environment. Both traditions critique hierarchical societies by granting marginalized individuals—those without a voice a platform in literary expression, thereby amplifying their voices and highlighting questions about "relationship-building" between people.

Keywords: Se-tae so-seol; Ukiyo-zōsh; Gisaeng of the Joseon Dynasty; Yūjo of the Edo Period; Hwejeol; Shinjū; Deception

Authors: Seong-Yoon Yang (Lead Author) is Research Professor at the Institute for Digital HUSS, Korea University (Seoul 02841, Korea). His research focuses on Japanese classical studies, particularly from the perspective of the history of expression, with an emphasis on how traditional Japanese imagination—encompassing myths, legends, and folktales—has been utilized in literature (Email: armstrongy@korea.ac.kr). Tae-ung Eom (Corresponding Author) is Professor at the Department of Korean Language and Literature of Korea University (Seoul 02841, Korea). His research focuses on Korean classical novels, and is particularly interested in research that focuses on how various versions of a novel change (Email: ted0825@korea.ac.kr).

标题:前近代韩日社会小说中的伦理叙事与批评——以"毁节"和"殉情" 主题为中心

内容摘要: 本研究考察了朝鲜的世态小说和日本的浮世草子中的叙事策略, 重 点关注朝鲜故事中的"毁节"主题以及日本故事中的"殉情"主题。朝鲜世 态小说以朝鲜王朝后期(17世纪至19世纪)为背景,描绘了地方艺伎的媚态 以及汉城男子的痴迷状态,在幽默地展现广阔视角与营造和谐氛围的同时,也 揭示了汉城与地方之间的社会文化张力。"毁节"主题重新校准了根深蒂固 的观点,促进了地方间的交流与沟通。同样,日本的浮世草子常采用"殉情"主 题,在故事中,嫖客会质疑游女的内心感受,考验她们的真诚,在对其真诚 做出评判后决定她们的命运——是走向毁灭、落魄还是获得救赎。然而,在 《若要死,就持木剑而去》中,游女的"虚伪"并未被处理成滑稽可笑或被 物化的样子。相反,叙事挫败了读者的"探究欲",揭示了游女在竞争环境 中求生存的艰难挣扎。这两种文学传统都通过为那些被边缘化、没有话语权 的个体提供文学表达平台,批判等级森严的社会,从而引发对人与人之间"关 系构建"等问题的探讨。

关键词: 世态小说: 浮世草子: 朝鲜王朝妓生: 江户时期游女: 毁节: 殉情: 欺骗

作者简介:梁诚允,韩国高丽大学人文社会数字融合人才培养事业团研究教 授,研究方向为日本古典学、文学中的日本传统想象;严泰雄,韩国高丽大 学国语国文学系教授,研究方向为朝鲜古典小说。

Introduction

In the late Joseon period (17th-19th centuries) of Korea and the Edo period (1603-1868) of Japan, a number of novels based on the customs of the time and mainly on the love between men and women, emerged. In Korean academia, these works are referred to as Se-tae so-seol (世態小說) or Ae-jeong se-tae so-seol (愛情世態小說) (novels of love and social customs), whereas in Japanese academia, they are termed "Ukiyo-zōshi (浮世草子) or Fūzoku seitai shōsetsu (風俗世態小說)." Although there is a slight difference in terminology, both genres share many fundamental characteristics that make their commonalities particularly interesting.

One of the most notable features in both Korean and Japanese se-tae so-seol is the recurring presence of women from the pleasure districts who act as the seductive figures for the male protagonists. In Korean works, these women are referred to as Gisaeng (妓生), while in Japanese works, they are called Yūjo (遊女). These women go to great lengths to seduce men or make them believe their affections are genuine. They employ every possible means, including lies, to deceive and manipulate the men. Through these efforts, the Gisaeng in Korean works and the Yūjo in Japanese works succeed in seducing the male protagonists. The process through which these women achieve their goals unfolds in an intriguing manner in both countries' literary traditions, which is why scholars from both Korea and Japan refer to these motifs as the "Hwe-jeol (毀節)" motif and the "Shinjū (心中)" motif, respectively. Hwe-jeol literally means the breaking of one's integrity or moral resolve. In Korean se-tae so-seol, the hwe-jeol motif refers to the process in which a Gisaeng, either alone or in collusion with others, deceives the male protagonist, leading him to fall into her seduction. This results in the male protagonist allowing himself to be mentally and physically involved with the Gisaeng, often suffering financial losses. On the other hand, the Shinjū motif in Japanese se-tae so-seol involves an act of proving one's sincerity or a symbol of love between a Yujo and a male customer. In the Edo-period se-tae so-seol, the Shinjū motif describes a sequence of events in which the male customer, enchanted by the Yūjo, ends up spending vast sums of money. The narrative structure of the hwe-jeol and Shinjū motifs in the se-tae so-seol of both countries is remarkably similar.

The main characters and motifs in both countries' *se-tae so-seol* seem so strikingly similar that they provoke the question of whether there might have been some form of interaction or communication between the literary scenes of the late Joseon and the Edo period. Thus, why did women from the pleasure districts appear in both countries' *se-tae so-seol*, seducing the male protagonists? What was the purpose behind leading these men into mental, physical, and economic ruin? While it is likely that the general purpose of these motifs was similar, the specific developments in the stories might have differed.

This paper aims to explore the narrative developments of the hwe-jeol and Shinjū motifs in late Joseon se-tae so-seol and Edo-period se-tae so-seol, focusing on the relationship between the male protagonists and the Gisaeng/Yūjo. Through the antagonistic male-female character dynamics, the paper will examine what these works sought to convey and how they connect with the ethical issues of their respective times. In particular, it will explore in depth how these gendered conflicts relate to the ethical awareness of the era. Se-tae (世態) refers to the prevailing social conditions or circumstances of the time. Thus, se-tae so-seol is likely to reflect the reality of the time more faithfully than other fictional genres that may prioritize imaginative features. In this context, the developments surrounding ethical reformation within these works are especially intriguing. While it is commonly assumed that pre-modern ethical instruction was transmitted in a linear manner, from upper-class men to lower classes and women, these works challenge such a simplistic,

doctrinal approach, suggesting that this was not the case.

Both the se-tae so-seol of Korea and Japan, by introducing the male protagonists and Gisaeng /Yūjo as key figures, use seduction as a medium to drive the plot, thereby increasing the narrative's appeal while also offering a vivid depiction of the social customs of the time. Moreover, by posing ethical questions within the context of a socially stratified relationship between men and women, these works suggest that our preconceived notions of pre-modern ethical consciousness should be reconsidered. The paper will sequentially explore the se-tae so-seol of both countries.

The Love between a Provincial Gisaeng and a Yangban (兩班) from Seoul

In discussions of sexuality, the term hwejeol (毀節), signifying the violation of chastity or integrity, has historically been applied predominantly to women. During the Joseon Dynasty, the concept of hwejeol was not employed in reference to men, even when men engaged in sexual relationships with women. This is because chastity or sexual integrity was not considered a moral imperative or personal virtue for men in the same way it was for women.

Within this context, male hwejeol would not have been regarded as a significant event. Why, then, do instances of male hwejeol arise in Se-tae so-seol? It seems plausible that these events served as narrative devices to induce a transformation in the male characters—whether a shift in perspective, attitude, or emotional state. This suggests that the Se-tae so-seol place less emphasis on hwejeol itself and more on its function as a catalyst for change in the male protagonists.

Thus, the narrative importance lies not in the act of hwejeol but in understanding why it was orchestrated, where it occurred, who instigated it, and how it impacted the protagonist's development. This emphasis on contextual elements surrounding hwejeol reveals its role as a critical storytelling mechanism, inviting readers to focus on the broader implications rather than the act itself.

In Ji-bong-jeon (지봉전), Jeong-hyang-jeon (정향전), O-eyu-ran-jeon (오 유란전), Jong-ok-jeonv (종옥전), and Bae-bi-jang-jeonv (배비장전), a common motif emerges: upper-class men from Seoul travel to provincial regions, staying there for a time. These locations—Pyong-yangv (평양) (Ji-bong-jeon, Jeong-hyang-jeon, O-eyu-ran-jeon), Won-juv (원주) (Jong-ok-jeon), and Jeju (제주) (Bae-bi-jang-jeon) please provide the English translation of these terms—are portrayed as hubs of "hwaryu-gye" (demimonde culture). In these stories, the local women with whom these men fall in love are invariably Gisaeng.

This narrative choice is striking for two reasons. First, the male protagonists' romantic counterparts are uniformly Gisaeng. While this aligns with the thematic focus on hwejeol, it raises questions: why are these local figures, who play pivotal roles, always Gisaeng? Second, there is a stark contrast between the protagonists: the male protagonist is an upper-class Seoulite, while the female counterpart is a lower-class provincial woman. Specifically, the Seoul men are often portrayed as unsuccessful individuals in comparison to their peers, while the provincial women exhibit exceptional abilities or virtues.

Among the hierarchical distinctions of region, class, and gender, which is the most fundamental? Since the narrative is triggered by the protagonist's visit to the provinces, regional disparity emerges as the primary axis of hierarchy. Social status and gender are secondary, constructed in response to the narrative demands of hwejeol. Thus, Seoul becomes emblematic of upper-class masculinity, while the provinces symbolize lower-class femininity. This rigid hierarchy parallels Western colonial discourse, which often feminized and exoticized the East.

The dichotomy between Seoul, representing upper-class men, and the provinces, representing lower-class women, implies an inherent separation. Male protagonists from Seoul are depicted as aloof, avoiding interactions with local people despite their extended stays. Historically, Gisaeng, particularly those in official capacities (gwan-gi, 官妓), were integral to gatherings involving officials. Therefore, the protagonists' refusal to engage with Gisaeng reflects not only disinterest in romance but also a broader disdain for social interaction with the local populace.

The problematic nature of the upper-class Seoul man, stemming from his arrogance, becomes evident through the reactions of local officials and Gisaeng. In Jibong-jeon, the Gisaeng Baeg-ok (백 옥) attempts to seduce the male protagonist, Lee Su-gwang (이수광). Baeg-ok, who had retired from her role as a Gisaeng after marrying Seon-u-saeng (선우생), takes it upon herself to initiate hwejeol when Lee Su-gwang resolutely distances himself from women. The reason behind Baegok's decision to seduce Lee Su-gwang is revealed in her request for her husband's permission.

Baeg-ok justifies her actions by stating that the Pyongyang government office will lose face because of this. She interprets Lee Su-gwang's abstention from romantic or sexual involvement as an insult to the reputation of Pyong-yang. In other words, Baeg-ok perceives his disinterest as a slight against Pyong-yang, believing that the failure of Pyong-yang's Gisaeng to properly entertain Lee Su-gwang reflects poorly on the region. This perspective is echoed in the behavior of Gisaeng in other works as well.

In this context, the Gisaeng initiate hwejeol to challenge the discourteous and dismissive attitudes of upper-class Seoul men toward the provinces and their people. Hwejeol is not merely an act of seduction but a narrative device employed to induce a transformation in the male protagonist's attitude. This interpretation is evident from the methods used by the gisaeng to entice the male protagonists. With the exception of Bae-bi-jang-jeon, where a bathing scene is used to immediately provoke sexual desire, Gisaeng in other works are portrayed as paragons of virtue and erudition.

For example, in Jeong-hyang-jeon and O-eyu-ran-jeon, the Gisaeng Jeonghyang (정향) and O-eyu-ran (오유란) introduce themselves as individuals from noble families who were married but became widowed and have since maintained their chastity. While the male protagonists are undoubtedly captivated by these women's exceptional beauty, their allure is equally rooted in their integrity and resilience, as they remain virtuous and steadfast despite their economic hardship following their husbands' deaths.

This raises the question of why these narratives consistently pair upper-class Seoul men with lower-class provincial women, specifically Gisaeng, as counterparts. Traditional critiques of these social novels often attribute the central theme to female seduction, focusing on the recurring motif of Gisaeng approaching the male protagonists in a sexual context. However, this reductive view overlooks the more nuanced role of Gisaeng in these narratives.

In Se-tae so-seol, the female protagonist who is a Gisaeng rarely presents herself to the male protagonist in her authentic role as a Gisaeng. The sole exception is Jong-ok-jeon, where even then, the Gisaeng is depicted as a figure of unwavering virtue. In other narratives, Gisaeng are portrayed as impoverished women living in rural areas, approaching the male protagonists under the guise of hardship. This raises the question: why, among the diverse types of characters in the provinces, are Gisaeng or women living in destitution consistently chosen as counterparts to the male protagonists?

As previously discussed, the male protagonists harbor deep-seated prejudices against provincial life, effectively isolating themselves from the local people. Despite being surrounded by provincial officials and administrators—figures with whom they could potentially interact—they deliberately avoid forming close relationships. This self-imposed isolation shuts down any avenues through which the male protagonists might come to understand the provinces.

In contrast, women, particularly Gisaeng, represent a more approachable category for these men. By their profession, Gisaeng are accustomed to interacting with upper-class men. In works like Jeong-hyang-jeon and O-eyu-ran-jeon, the female protagonists are introduced as impoverished women, creating plausible scenarios for their encounters with the male protagonists.

Initially, the male protagonists perceive these women merely as pitiable figures of lower status or unfortunate circumstances. However, as they engage in conversation and spend time together, the women's exceptional qualities become increasingly evident, eliciting admiration from the male protagonists. This admiration is distinct from the respect they might feel for another elite male's virtues; it is heightened by the fact that they had no prior expectations of these women. Indeed, in these texts, the male protagonists describe their counterparts disparagingly as a "lowly *Gisaeng* from a remote village" (*Ji-bong-jeon*) or a "countrywoman" (*Jeong-hyang-jeon*). When the women surpass these modest expectations, the male protagonists cannot help but be profoundly impressed.

Perhaps this explains why the male protagonists' love for these women is portrayed as remarkably deep and sincere, especially considering the transient and unfamiliar settings in which these romances occur. The men become entirely absorbed in their affection, to the extent that they seem to forget they are merely visitors to the provinces.

Falling in love with these provincial women signifies more than a personal relationship; it marks the opening of the male protagonists' closed minds toward the provinces. Their newfound affection for the women serves as a catalyst for a broader change in attitude, contrasting sharply with their previous indifference to local culture, gatherings, or interactions with provincial people.

The male protagonist falls deeply in love with a woman from the province where he resides. This love stems from an emotional connection, distinguishing it from fleeting physical desire. This distinction becomes evident during the moments of their separation. In *Jong-ok-jeon* and *O-eyu-ran-jeon*, similar events unfold: during the peak of their romance, the male protagonist is deceived into returning to Seoul by a false letter claiming his father is gravely ill. On his journey back, he receives another letter stating his father's recovery, prompting his return to the province. During his absence, the provincial characters stage the deaths of Hyang-ran () and O-eyu-ran, constructing false graves along the protagonist's return route to create the illusion of their demise.

From the perspective of *hwejeol*, the male protagonist's grief at the supposed graves of his beloved might be interpreted humorously. However, from his viewpoint, this sorrow signifies the sincerity of his love, evoking a poignant reaction. The fan and skirt inscribed with poetry are tokens of disgrace in one interpretation, but for the male protagonist, they symbolize tokens of love, while the false graves embody the despair of separation from a true love. Although some might view the

male protagonist as bewitched, his love was, from his perspective, profoundly genuine.

While the text does not heavily emphasize this point, the male protagonist's transformation cannot be reduced to merely a change in perception of a single woman. Earlier in the narratives, it was established that Seoul's upper-class men tend to associate provincial life with lower-class women. Thus, the protagonist's shift in perception of the woman naturally extends to a broader shift in attitude toward the province itself. As his love for the woman deepens, it is likely that his prejudices against the province diminish as well.

This inference is supported by the conclusions of these works. Broadly summarized, they share two key elements: first, even after the conspiracies surrounding disgrace are revealed, the male protagonists continue their relationships with the provincial women. Second, the rigid and morally inflexible male protagonists alter their attitudes. These endings dismantle prejudices related to region and social status, emphasizing instead the futility of such biases. The narratives ultimately embrace the female protagonists, underscoring the insignificance of preconceived notions about regional or class differences.

Upon reflection, the disgraceful schemes in these stories were orchestrated by figures of authority such as kings or uncles. This suggests that the stories do not intend to satirize social hierarchies based on status but rather encourage broader perspectives and more generous standards. This intention manifests as a narrative of love between Seoul's upper-class men and the province's lower-class women, advocating for the unity and harmony between the capital and the provinces.

The conclusion of *O-eyu-ran-jeon* vividly illustrates this message. The male protagonist, Yi-saeng (이상), who had been humiliated before his close friend, Kimsaeng (김생), the magistrate of Pyong-yang, seeks revenge. After returning to Seoul, Yi-saeng dedicates himself to his studies, passes the state examinations, and is appointed as a secret royal inspector (amhaeng-eosa, 암행어사). He is then dispatched to Pyong-yang, where he confronts Kim-saeng. However, when Kim-saeng reaches out for reconciliation, Yi-saeng forgives him, marking a resolution. In a gesture of goodwill, Yi-saeng orders wine and reminisces with Kim-saeng, sharing drinks and camaraderie.

This reconciliation contrasts with Yi-saeng's earlier disdain for regional gatherings. Upon his arrival in Pyong-yang, Kim-saeng had prepared an elaborate banquet for his birthday, inviting local officials and Gisaeng. Yi-saeng, however, vehemently rejected the invitation and avoided mingling with either officials or Gisaeng. By the story's conclusion, Yi-saeng takes the initiative to host a banquet himself, indicating

not only a newfound interest in the region but also a sense of camaraderie with its people.

Thus, these works carry an implicit message advocating for unity and harmony, urging readers to transcend the divide between the capital and the provinces. They champion interregional exchange and the breaking down of prejudices, fostering a vision of mutual understanding and cooperation.

Immoral Plot Development and Ethical Resolution

In Se-tae so-seol, the dichotomy between the spaces of "Seoul" and the "provinces" comes into sharp focus. These locations serve not merely as backdrops but are intricately tied to the characterization of the figures in the narratives. In other words, the relationships among the characters subtly reveal underlying perceptions of regional identities. Seoulites are depicted as rude and dismissive of provincial people. This regional bias intersects with and amplifies discrimination based on lower social status and gender, specifically against women. As a result, individuals who are both provincial and of lower status, or women, are subjected to even harsher prejudices.

The societal worldview places Seoul, the upper class, and men at the center while relegating the provinces, lower classes, and women to the margins. This discriminatory perspective extends beyond a hierarchical distinction between center and periphery. It evolves into a binary opposition of truth versus falsehood, wherein the center is deemed "right" and the periphery "wrong." Consequently, Seoul, the upper class, and men are perceived as ethical, while the provinces, the lower class, and women are seen as unethical.

What makes Se-tae so-seol particularly compelling from the perspective of ethical messaging is their challenge to these general prejudices. They not only subvert the preconceived notion that Seoul's upper-class men are inherently ethical but also position the very individuals who starkly contrast with them—provincial, lower-class women—as agents of moral enlightenment. Moreover, these women employ immoral means to place the Seoulite protagonists in difficult situations, compelling them to reflect on their own behavior. Although these methods are ethically questionable, they effectively bring the ethical shortcomings of Seoul's upper-class men into public discourse.

Through this process, Se-tae so-seol portray the moral reformation of the rude and arrogant Seoulite. They provide opportunities for self-reflection and demand that these figures evolve into ethical beings. Significantly, these novels commonly employ the immoral method of seduction by Gisaeng to achieve this moral reform.

The Gisaeng, concealing her ethical identity and conspiring with other provincial characters, subjects the male protagonist to intense tribulations. If the purpose were purely moral enlightenment, one might expect a more ethical approach to the reformation. Why, then, do these novels opt for immoral methods? Perhaps it is to underscore for the Seoulite protagonists the inappropriateness and repercussions of their own unethical behaviors.

Despite the harsh trials they impose, provincial characters ultimately extend hospitality to the Seoulites. They graciously overlook the Seoulites' initial contempt and discrimination and accept them into the community. These provincial characters, who drive the ethical resolutions of these works, adhere to the premise that respect for universal values enables the formation of inclusive communities, transcending differences in status or region.

In Se-tae so-seol, an intriguing dynamic emerges: the male upper-class figure from Seoul, who should embody ethical norms, comes to learn the value of morality from a provincial lower-class woman. The individuals typically viewed through the lens of prejudice as "immoral" become instruments for ethically re-educating the ostensibly moral Seoulites, employing immoral means to achieve this end. This paradoxical interplay highlights the unique and thought-provoking narrative strategies of these works.

Deception as a Strategy: The "Shinjū" Motif in Edo-Period Yūjo and Client Relationships

Here, we turn our attention to an examination of Japanese social novels. The third story of Shōen-Okagami (諸艶大鑑, 1684), titled "If you die, let's go with the wooden sword" (死ば諸共の木刀), was written by Ihara Saikaku (井原西鶴), the founder of Japanese popular literature (ukiyo-zōshi). Published in 1684, this work vividly portrays the customs, social conditions, and human sentiments of the pleasure quarters (yūkaku, 遊郭) of the time. In particular, "If you die, let's go with the wooden sword" employs the motif of $shinj\bar{u}$ (心中, double suicide) as a unique form of deception. This study examines how the narrative raises ethical questions regarding the nature of relationships between $y\bar{u}io$ and their clients. The plot is summarized as follows:

The narrative follows a wealthy patron known as Hanru (半留), who becomes a devoted customer of Wakayama (若山), a high-ranking courtesan (tayū, 太夫)

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

of the Miuraya (三浦屋) in Yoshiwara (吉原). The two develop a deep emotional bond, and Hanru even promises to take Wakayama as his wife. However, Hanru suddenly ceases his visits, cutting off contact entirely. Despite Wakayama's persistent letters, Hanru responds with a false message claiming he has gone bankrupt. Moved by his plight, Wakayama sends him a letter, including money and clothing, requesting to meet. When they meet, Hanru appears in shabby attire, lamenting his misfortune, and suggests a *shinjū*. Wakayama agrees. On the appointed day, the two meet in a private room, ready to fulfill their pact by aiming daggers at each other. In a poignant moment, Wakayama exclaims, "Ah, how sorrowful!" just as the brothel staff intervene and stop them. During an immediate inquiry, Hanru reveals that the dagger is not real but a wooden sword covered in silver foil. He also admits to having sufficient funds to cover her release from the brothel and explains that the entire scenario was orchestrated to test Wakayama's sincerity. For Wakayama, her sorrowful exclamation reflected her heartbreak at the thought of killing the man she loved. In response, she tries to take her own life with a razor, declaring, "What is there to live for?" However, she is stopped by the brothel staff. After some reflection, Hanru uses a large sum of money to secure Wakayama's freedom from the brothel and sends her back to her hometown. He then begins a relationship with another courtesan, Akashi (明石), telling her that he was displeased with Wakayama's final words and has no intention of meeting her again.

This story has been regarded as a masterpiece, yet it presents significant challenges for interpretation and appreciation. Until now, the relationship between Wakayama and Hanru has often been read as a "tragedy of human relationships" (Teruoka 178), driven by the fundamental dynamics between a yūjo and a yūkyaku within the confines of the pleasure quarters, where monetary transactions govern all interactions. In this context, Hanru's suspicions remain unresolved, while Wakayama's sincerity is left unaccepted. Alternatively, it has been interpreted as "a barren love within the dazzling world of the pleasure quarters" (Asano 265). At the same time, this tale provokes deeper questions about the characters' true intentions. Was Hanru an extreme skeptic, or did he never truly intend to marry a courtesan, instead devoting his life solely to indulgence in the pleasure quarters? What were Hanru's genuine feelings, and how should Wakayama's inner thoughts be understood? These unresolved ambiguities make the story one that "leaves room for interpretation" (Emoto 31), exposing its interpretive challenges while inviting readers to contemplate its emotional and moral dimensions.

The difficulty in interpreting this story, I argue, stems from a lack of consideration for the discursive environment of the time, including knowledge of pleasure quarter customs, entertainment conventions, and the lived experiences of courtesans. These historical and cultural contexts serve as the coordinates for interpreting the text, and without them, the narrative's full meaning cannot be decoded. The absence of a framework to situate the text within its contemporary socio-cultural milieu the interpretive axis of reading—has left the story shrouded in ambiguity.

To understand the circumstances that lead Hanru to doubt the sincerity of courtesans, it is essential to focus on the yūjo hyōbanki (遊女評判記). The pleasure quarters, alongside kabuki theaters, were considered one of the "two great vices" (akusho, 悪所) of the Edo period due to their hedonistic and decadent image, as well as the economic burdens they imposed on the common people. The yūjo hyōbanki served as guidebooks that provided information on courtesans, presenting them as cultural commodities and offering explanations of the contemporary pleasure quarters. As practical manuals for the pleasure quarters and courtesans during the formation and development of yūkaku culture from the mid-17th to early 18th century, these guides demand further consideration regarding their relationship with *Ukivo-zōshi*, particularly the discourses represented and constructed in Societal Novels. Regarding the suspicions of $y\bar{u}kyaku$, or clients, the discourse surrounding shinj \bar{u} —the act of proving sincerity in the relationship between $y\bar{u}jo$ and clients—deserves attention. To address this, I refer to the statements in Shikidō Ōkagami (色道大鏡), a monumental encyclopedic work on yūkaku culture authored by Fujimoto Kizan (藤本箕山) and established as a manuscript around 1678. In particular, I examine the discourse in volume 6, titled "Section on Shinjū" (心中部).

① Shinjū refers to a token that demonstrates the unwavering bond between a man and a woman in a sincere relationship. From this, the terms "to perform shinjū" and "to make someone perform shinjū" arise. ② This token is used exclusively by $y\bar{u}jo$ and not by other women. The reason is that $y\bar{u}jo$, who entrust themselves to many men, never disclose the depth or shallowness of their feelings toward their clients (yūkyaku, 遊客). ③ Most men, wishing to confirm whether the yūjo truly harbors deep feelings for them (or whether her intentions are genuine), repeatedly visit the pleasure quarters, bring gifts, and devise various schemes. However, determining the depth or shallowness, the sincerity or falsity of her heart is exceedingly difficult. Since such knowledge is elusive, it is natural for men to harbor doubts about a *yūjo*'s true feelings. (4) In order to dispel men's doubts, $y\bar{u}jo$ must live a life where they feign sincerity, making men believe their words and bringing them to a state of acceptance. ⑤ In doing so, yūjo display tokens that leave men in confusion. One might ask,

then, whether $y\bar{u}jo$ ever show these tokens to men without sincerity. The answer is that $shinj\bar{u}$ can be both genuine and false. Sincerely giving one's heart to a man is rare, happening only in one out of ten cases. ⓐ In eight or nine out of ten cases, $shinj\bar{u}$ is not driven by true feelings of devotion but rather employed as a calculated strategy to ensure a man becomes a regular patron and provides for the $y\bar{u}jo$'s livelihood. (Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami Kankōkai 207-208)

The act of shinjū (心中), not performed by ordinary women(②) but by yūjo (courtesans), serves as a symbol of their sincerity toward the other party (①). In response, the $y\bar{u}jo$ attempts to dispel the client's doubts (\bigcirc 4), often performing "performed earnestness" ((6)) for multiple clients without genuine sincerity. The tokens of affection displayed by the vūjo—ranging from writing an oath (kishōmon, 起請文) to the deities of heaven and earth, affirming her true feelings for the client, to offering her hair, nails, or fingers—ironically lead the man into even greater confusion (⑤). From the vūjo's perspective, attracting, managing, and maintaining multiple clients as regular patrons is essential for shortening the time needed to leave the pleasure quarters. To sustain these pseudo-romantic intimate relationships with numerous men, the $y\bar{u}jo$'s emotional opacity must be consistently upheld. This "opacity of the $y\bar{u}jo$'s heart" becomes a driving force (3) that encourages the client's spending on leisure, directly linking the psychology and relationships between client and vūjo to the consumer structure of the pleasure quarter system. Consequently, a fundamental skepticism arises between the client, who seeks to discern the $y\bar{u}jo$'s sincerity and pierce through her emotional ambiguity, and the $y\bar{u}jo$, who employs "performed earnestness" to further confuse and control her clients.

To explore the suspicions clients harbor toward $y\bar{u}jo$, let us refer to the descriptions in Takitsukegusa, Moekui, Keshizumi (たきつけ草・もえくゐ・けしずみ), published in 1677. This text, structured as a trilogy, unfolds in a question-and-answer format where a young man with a skeptical and critical perspective on $y\bar{u}jo$ behavior and pleasure quarter culture poses questions to an elderly man who responds. The narrative reveals the sharp tensions between clients and $y\bar{u}jo$ through the debates between the young and the elderly, illustrating the precarious dynamics of their relationship. For instance, the text refers to a "refined connoisseur of pleasure" (suijin, 粋人), or "an adversary well-versed in the ways of pleasure" (分知りの敵), highlighting the strained interplay between the roles of client and $y\bar{u}jo$. The young man poses the following challenge to the elder: "It is widely known that $y\bar{u}jo$

¹ The underlined sections and numbering in the cited text were added by the author for explanation and emphasis. The same applies to other citations as well.

are adept at cleverly responding on the surface, embellishing their words with lies, and leading clients astray. Why is it that you alone take the side of $y\bar{u}jo$?" (Taniwaki, Takitsukegusa 370) He further questions the elder: "Even when a kishōmon is written falsely, or hair is cut, nails pulled, or fingers severed, it is rare for these acts to demonstrate genuine sincerity. How, then, can you explain the behavior of a *yūjo* who seems deeply devoted, only to completely ignore her client once he falls into ruin or poverty?" (Taniwaki, Moekui 390) In response, the elder acknowledges the falsity in the behavior of $y\bar{u}jo$, yet counters by pointing out the deceitfulness of clients as well. To address the young man's fundamental mistrust, the elder elaborates on the "principles of the erotic way" (shikidō, 色道), explaining the inherent dynamics of yūjo entertainment and seeking to guide him toward a broader understanding.

That is a one-sided argument. If deceit existed only on the part of the $y\bar{u}jo$ and not on the part of the client, then your claim would be valid. However, (1) it is the client, far more than the yūjo, who engages in deceit. No matter how confident a *vūjo* may seem in her strategies to captivate the heart of a client, if the client decides to deceive her, he will succeed in doing so. (Taniwaki, *Takitsukegusa* 371)

When discussing the fundamental principles of the world of play, ② the greatest mistake is to think of a *yūjo* as belonging solely to oneself. [...] When you meet her, enjoy the time you spend together. When you cannot meet her, simply think of it as not being able to meet and avoid dwelling on it. (Taniwaki, Takitsukegusa 377)

③ Without wandering through the ways of *shikidō* (色道), one cannot truly understand the heart of a person or the spirit of refinement. Therefore, it is said that one who neither abandons nor becomes too immersed in the ways of shikidō is the true suijin (粋人). Do not think rigidly of only one side. (Taniwaki, *Moekui* 385)

The elder points out that the client can also deceive the yūjo if he so desires (1), emphasizing that the client's possessive desire toward the yūjo is the root of all issues (2). The "performed earnestness" that is inevitably part of the $y\bar{u}jo$'s livelihood renders her emotions opaque, functioning as a mechanism that transforms the desire for possession into the desire for penetration. True $y\bar{u}jo$ entertainment, wherein the client does not become obsessed with the $y\bar{u}jo$ but remains detached and composed, constitutes the ideal form of refined pleasure sought by the suijin (3). From this perspective, the discussion naturally transitions into the realm of shikidō-ron (色道論, the theory of the erotic way). In this context, narratives emerge that can be seen as a form of male counteraction, testing the sincerity of $y\bar{u}jo$. For example, I introduce a folk tale from the Sakai (堺) region recorded in volume 15, Zoudanbu (雑談部), of Shikidō Ōkagami. In this story, a client persuades a yūjo to perform a double suicide to confirm her sincerity. Agreeing to the proposal, they prepare to ingest a poison known as "Chōjien" (丁子圓). The man drinks it and collapses, prompting the terrified $y\bar{u}jo$ to flee to the brothel owner for help. The $y\bar{u}jo$ is subsequently branded as insincere and given the nickname "Chōjien," which makes it impossible for her to continue her career as a yūjo. Ultimately, she is sold to a pleasure quarter in the western region (Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami Kankōkai 513-514). When compared to the story "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword," the narrative differs not only in its use of poison as the method of attempted suicide but also in the outcome, where the $y\bar{u}jo$'s escape leads to her being branded insincere and unable to continue her profession. This is distinct from Wakayama's case, where the yūjo's actions do not prevent her from continuing her career. Furthermore, the man's apparent willingness to trust the $y\bar{u}jo$'s words and attempt suicide contrasts entirely with Hanru's calculated deception in orchestrating the event. While the premise of a client suggesting a double suicide to gauge a vūjo's sincerity is shared, this narrative is not unique to this particular folk tale but reflects a broader storytelling motif.

Let us point to another example. Of particular note are the *ukiyo-zōshi* by authors influenced by "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword." These include Fūryū Yamato Sōji (風流日本莊子), authored by Miyako no Nishiki (都の錦) and published in 1702, specifically volume 2, "The Great Patron of Nagasaki" (長崎の大 尽), and Keisei Iro Jamisen (けいせい色三味線), authored by Ejima Kiseki (江島 其磧) and published in 1701, specifically the provincial volume (鄙の巻), "Viewing the Sincerity of Courtesans in Shumokumachi" (女郎の心中をついて見る鐘 木町). The story "The Great Patron of Nagasaki" shares a nearly identical narrative structure with "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword." Much like Wakayama, the tayū Yoshino (よし野) develops a deep relationship with a wealthy merchant, Shinrokua (新六) from Nagasaki. However, Shinroku suddenly cuts off contact, reappearing in shabby clothing to meet Yoshino. The plot unfolds as Shinroku proposes a double suicide, to which Yoshino agrees. The most dramatic final scene, however, diverges from "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword" despite mimicking its structure. At the critical moment, Yoshino stops the act, exclaiming, "Wait a moment! It really looks like you intend to die. If so, give me a little time to prepare for my last moments." She then hurriedly gets up, pretending to ready herself, muttering, "Where

is the west? Where is the north?" Seizing an opportunity, she kicks over a folding screen and shouts, "Here's a murderer!" prompting individuals armed with wooden clubs to rush in, apprehending Shinroku. This humorous escape scene contrasts starkly with Wakayama's composed demeanor. Despite sharing similar elements—such as the prearranged redemption fee and a silver-foil-covered wooden sword—the story differs in its conclusion. Shinroku, disillusioned by Yoshino's insincerity, renounces his indulgence in the pleasure quarters. Meanwhile, Yoshino's fall from grace, from a tayū to a destitute prostitute resembling a yodaka (夜鷹), represents an even steeper decline than the $y\bar{u}jo$ in the Sakai (堺) folk tale. Similarly, the story "Viewing the Sincerity of Courtesans in Shumokumachi," borrows phrases from "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword" but reverses the narrative framework. This tale features a wealthy patron, Nisan (二三), who frequents the Shimabara courtesan Chitose (千歳) in Kyoto. After breaking off contact, Nisan reappears wearing a straw hat and shabby clothing, lamenting his financial ruin caused by excessive indulgence in pleasure. Chitose consoles him in a manner reminiscent of Yoshino. However, in a reversal of expectation, Chitose, moved by Nisan's pretense of bankruptcy, treats him with even greater care than usual. Deeply touched by her sincerity, Nisan immediately redeems her²

These examples reveal recurring patterns of narrative structure—what could be termed "shared narrative logic." The core motif centers on a client testing a vūjo's sincerity toward him, with the plot structured to determine the truth or falsehood of her affections. While the degree of malice in the client's testing methods varies, the narratives consistently expose the sincerity or insincerity of the $y\bar{u}jo$. There exists a shared narrative that objectifies the $y\bar{u}jo$, driven by the client's "penetrative desire" to uncover her inner thoughts, alongside a clear portrayal of the *yūjo's* ultimate fate.

The Frustrated Reader's Penetrative Desire and Ethical Critique in *Ukiyo-zōshi*

The inner thoughts of a $y\bar{u}jo$ are difficult to discern, and her sincerity remains perpetually opaque. Relationships between clients and $y\bar{u}jo$ are always situated on the boundary between truth and falsehood, a condition largely driven by the vūjo's "performed earnestness." Returning to "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword," how does Hanru's deceptive strategy to test the vūjo's sincerity exhibit a

The citation of the text from Fūryū Yamato Sōji is based on the Kokusho Database of the National Institute of Japanese Literature (https://kokusho.nijl.ac.jp). Original image source: Frames 27-30. Holding institution: Osaka Prefectural Nakanoshima Library (Catalog No. 66-9-3).

See Tsuyoshi Hasegawa ed, Shin Nihon Koten Bungaku Taikei Volume 78: Keisei Iro Jamisen, Keisei Tenjuga Miko, Seken Musume Katagi, Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1989, 189-192.

unique characteristic when viewed in light of popular shared narratives?

In *Takitsukegusa*, the elder mentions that if a client sets out to deceive a $y\bar{u}jo$, he is capable of doing so, yet no examples are provided. However, if the act of deceiving a $y\bar{u}jo$ evolves into a game that transforms into an aesthetic ideal, what kind of play might emerge? To explore this, attention should be given to *Shikidō Ōkagami*, volume 5, "28 Stages" (28 品). Of particular note is how it mirrors the structure of the *Lotus Sutra* (*Hokkekyō*, 法華經), dividing the levels of play into 28 stages. One especially intriguing stage is the "Great Falsehood Stage" (大偽品) and its concept of "*Kengisō*" (顕偽相). At this level, the client employs sophisticated and creative deceptions against the $y\bar{u}jo$. Let us examine this in detail.

① Presenting oneself as a beggar while one's actual circumstances remain secure, in order to test the yūjo's intentions; ② appearing in the guise of a vagabond; ③ suddenly ending meetings under the pretense of needing time apart; ④ brandishing a blade and proposing a double suicide; or even interfering in a yūjo's plans to secure her redemption by disrupting her relationship with a wealthy client—these are all examples of such strategies. ⑤ Kengisō (顕偽相), involves exposing deceit through deceit itself. Few are able to master this level of sophistication. (Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami Kankōkai 186-187)

Feigning destitution to test a $y\bar{u}jo$'s sincerity (①), suddenly cutting off contact (③), appearing in shabby, impoverished attire (②), or proposing a false double suicide with a blade (④)—these deceptive acts bear a striking resemblance to Hanru's strategy of deceit against Wakayama. Here, I do not assert that Saikaku directly referenced the descriptions found in *Shikidō Ōkagami*, specifically in the section on *Kengisō*. What is significant is that the client's desire to penetrate the $y\bar{u}jo$'s inner feelings has reached its apex as a form of "play," where deceptive schemes are systematized and shared as knowledge and information within the framework of *shikidō*.

This analysis further clarifies the specific characteristics of "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword." In the stage of *Kengisō*, *yūjo* are described as "unaware of the deceit and merely waiting" (Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami Kankōkai 187), ultimately being manipulated by the client's schemes. Similarly, Yoshino in "The Great Patron of Nagasaki" and Chitose in "Viewing the Sincerity of Courtesans in Shumokumachi" are both led by men, concluding their stories with either insincerity (symbolized by their downfall) or sincerity (symbolized by their redemption). In this way, the reader's *penetrative desire* is fulfilled alongside the protagonists' resolution. Within this shared narrative structure, the *yūjo*'s emotions are objectified, and

the client's deceptive schemes manipulate her from beginning to end until her true feelings are fully revealed. Throughout this process, the narrator and the reader of the story establish a form of *collusion*, aligning themselves with the client's manipulative perspective. In contrast, Wakayama's actions and responses are not entirely passive toward Hanru's strategies, nor does she ultimately face ruin. While Hanru ends their relationship after Wakayama utters the single word "how sorrowful" at the climax of their staged suicide, he still redeems her, allowing her to leave the pleasure quarters. Additionally, Wakayama's actions and the narrator's commentary warrant closer attention. For example, Wakayama's act of writing letters to Hanru when he fails to visit is described. From Hanru's perspective, as someone harboring doubts and initiating the first stage of his strategy under the Kengisō approach to expose the yūjo's falsity through falsity, the letter—an archetypal sales tactic for retaining clients—fails to elicit any emotional response.

Subsequent actions by Wakayama include sending clothes and money to Hanru and secretly requesting a meeting, followed by a scene where she hosts him, paying for the entertainment herself when he arrives without funds. However, to better understand these behaviors, we must refer to the accounts of mabu (間夫, a person truly loved by the yūjo among her clients) in contemporary yūjo hyōbanki. For instance, in Shikidō Showake, Naniwa Dora (色道諸分 難波鉦, 1680), sections such as "Morotazuna" (諸手縄) and "Nando" (納戸) symbolize the yūjo's multiple clients (represented by reins) and their storage (represented by a cabinet). These accounts illustrate how vūjo sometimes secretly meet with impoverished men, using them to inflate their popularity by increasing the number of clients associated with their peak fame. These men could also serve as tools to spread positive rumors about the $y\bar{u}jo$ or incite jealousy among wealthier clients, thereby enhancing her allure.¹

Thus, even figures referred to as mabu, ostensibly intimate lovers, become strategic tools and objects of management within the $y\bar{u}jo$'s professional activities, maintaining the inherent opacity of her feelings. Regarding Wakayama's actions, the narrator remarks, "Having seen such an undoubtedly sincere heart, can it be that there exists a man in this world as severe as this one?" (Taizō Ebara et al 378) However, Wakayama's behaviors align closely with the strategies described in contemporary yūjo hyōbanki regarding tactics employed toward clients. This creates a psychological distance between the reader and the narrator, making it impossible for the reader to entirely align with the narrator's perspective. As a result, readers cannot simply dismiss Hanru as an extreme skeptic or eccentric, nor can they defin-

See Mitsutoshi Nakano ed, Shikidō Showake Naniwadora, Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1991, 163-164, 50-51.

itively conclude that Wakayama's intentions are sincere. Rather, Wakayama's series of responses to Hanru can be interpreted as a form of "performed earnestness," representing her best attempt to engage with him strategically.

In the progression toward the story's climax, Hanru's application of the maliciously deceptive strategies described in Kengisō and Wakayama's responses are deeply embedded within the discursive network of strategies, tactics, and reciprocal interactions between $y\bar{u}jo$ and clients as evoked by contemporary knowledge of pleasure quarters. Wakayama's actions, far from being entirely passive, counterbalance Hanru's deceptive maneuvers, creating a narrative dynamic of mutual antagonism between the two characters. This structure enhances the narrative by generating tension and engaging the reader's desire to penetrate the $y\bar{u}jo$'s inner feelings, a process that achieves the effect of *narrative activation*.

This raises the question: what is Wakayama's true intention in the final, decisive scene? In the original text (not the corrected version), the distinction between Wakayama's dialogue and the narrator's commentary is ambiguous. The narration shifts from an omniscient perspective—"The $tay\bar{u}$ did not regret throwing away her life even in the critical moment, but when she thought of killing the man she loved, she naturally let out a sound"—to Wakayama's direct speech: "What is there to regret about life?" (Taizō Ebara et al 378)

The narrator defends Wakayama's sincerity, yet readers familiar with the contemporary cultural context of pleasure quarters and the behavioral norms of $y\bar{u}jo$ may remain psychologically distanced from this perspective. Furthermore, the interpretation of Wakayama's utterance, "How sorrowful," remains ambiguous. Was she genuinely lamenting the act of dying? Was it the sorrow of killing the man she loved? Or could it reflect the melancholy of realizing she must go so far as to respond to Hanru's test with such intense "performed earnestness"? The story concludes without resolving these interpretive ambiguities. In the subsequent scene, as Wakayama faces the crisis of interrogation, her exclamation, "What is there to regret about life?" and her renewed attempt at suicide before the crowd could equally be interpreted as either a genuine act of despair or the ultimate "performed

In the modern corrected text, the entire quoted passage is treated as Wakayama's direct speech, serving as both self-referential justification and a form of defense. This narrative structure and stylistic feature demonstrate the effectiveness of Saikaku's distinctive prose style, kyokuryū-bun (曲流文). Saikaku's kyokuryū-bun is characterized by the frequent mingling of elements from subsequent sentences within a single sentence, creating a convoluted flow. It often involves shifts in the subject within the same context (nejire-bun, 捩れ文) or the continuation of phrases by linking the end of one segment to the next (shiritori-bun, 尻取り文). These features necessitate careful interpretation due to their intricate nature.

earnestness," executed to navigate a precarious moment where her reputation hangs in the balance. In this extreme situation, pushed to the limit by Hanru's malevolent test, Wakayama performs at her best, leaving Hanru unable to find any logical or moral flaw in her actions—even if he later tells Akashi (明石) that her final words did not sit well with him. Rather than recognizing Wakayama's sincerity, Hanru's acceptance of her actions suggests his intellectual and practical acknowledgment of her position as a $y\bar{u}jo$ who executed her "performed earnestness" to perfection. This explains why Hanru, having rationally "accepted" the situation, declares, "Given all this, grant me the tayū" (Taizō Ebara et al 378) and pays a large sum to redeem Wakayama.

Ultimately, the question of Wakayama's sincerity remains unresolved. In the final exchange and the scene of her suicide attempt, the collusive perspective of the narrative fails to fulfill the reader's penetrative desire. While the story does not conclude with marital union or harmony, it offers a piercing critique of the intense emotional dynamics and calculated strategies within the pleasure quarters. This critique vividly illuminates the realities of $y\bar{u}jo$ life, where personal passions intertwine with the intricate negotiations of survival, blending entertainment with profound critical insight into the nature of human relationships in this context.

Conclusion

The ethical critique inherent in literature is often realized by bringing individuals who have traditionally been marginalized—those without a voice or considered incapable—onto the public stage of literary expression, thereby granting them a voice and highlighting questions about "relationship-building" between people. As confirmed in the above discussion, in Korean Se-tae so-seol, the contextual framework of "discriminatory perspectives between Seoul and the provinces" and "regional narratives" reveals that the elements of provincial Gisaengs' seduction and Seoul men's fascination served as narrative strategies toward the eventual reconciliation of the characters. The motif of Hwe-jeol functioned as a means to humorously broaden Seoulites' narrow perspectives of the provinces, recalibrating entrenched viewpoints and facilitating harmony, exchange, and communication between Seoul and the regions. Similarly, in Japanese ukiyo-zōshi, a shared narrative emerges, structured around the motif of shinjū. This narrative involves clients doubting the inner feelings of $y\bar{u}jo$, seeking to penetrate their true intentions, and resolving the yūjo's fate—whether through ruin, downfall, or redemption—after her sincerity is ultimately judged. However, in "If You Die, Let's Go with the Wooden Sword," the portrayal of the $y\bar{u}jo$'s "falsity" is not rendered comical or objectified within the

contemporary discursive context provided to male readers. Instead, the narrative frustrates the reader's penetrative desire, thereby foregrounding a clear recognition of the $y\bar{u}jo$'s struggle to live within a fiercely competitive environment.

Works Cited

- Araki, Hiroshi. "Literary Heritage' and 'Character': On the Development and the Presentness of the Image of the Classics." *Border Crossings* 17 (2023): 43-58.
- Asano, Akira. Saikaku Tenbo. Tokyo: Bensei Publishing, 2000.
- Ebara, Taizō et al. Teihon Saikaku Zenshū Vol.1. Tokyo: Chūō Kōronsha, 1951.
- Emoto, Hiroshi and Masachika Taniwaki, eds. *The Appeal of Saikaku: Reading Masterpieces*. Tokyo: Bensei Publishing, 2001.
- Eom, Tae-ung. "<Baebijangjeon> a way of communication and solidarity hidden behind the 'hwe-jeol'." *Journal of Korean Culture (JKC)* 64 (2024): 159-191.
- Hasegawa, Tsuyoshi, ed. *Shin Nihon Koten Bungaku Taikei Volume 78: Keisei Iro Jamisen, Keisei Tenjuga Miko, Seken Musume Katagi*. Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1989.
- Jang, Gyo-Un. Trickery and Authorial Consciousness in Dishonor Novels. 2019. Chonnam National University, PhD dissertation.
- —. "The Correlation Between 'Action' and 'Space' Through Dishonor." Journal of Language and Literature 78 (2018): 259-283.
- Jung, Hye-Kyung. "The Dynamics of Emotion and Reason: Dishonor Novels as Anthropological Narratives." *International Language and Literature Studies* 74 (2017): 61-84.
- Kim, Jong-Chul. "A Study on the Novels of BaeBijangJeon Type." Kwanak Language and Literature Studies 10 (1985): 201-229.
- Kim, Soo-Yeon. "The Significance of Masculine Growth and Laughter in OYuranJeon." *Studies on Yeolsang Literature* 30 (2009): 185-216.
- Lee, Ji-Won. "Examining Gender Practices in Dishonor Novels." *Classical Literature and Education* 56 (2024): 69-118.
- Lee, Chae-Eun. "Masculinities of Revenge' and the Multilayered Nature of Male Gender Practices in Late Joseon Dishonor Novels." *Korean Classical Studies* 64 (2024): 261-300.
- Nakano, Mitsutoshi, ed. Shikidō Showake Naniwadora. Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1991.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.
- Park, Gil-Hee. "The Depiction of Courtesans in Dishonor Novels." *Namdo Cultural Studies* 14 (2008): 138-169.
- Park, Il-Yong. "The Variations and Social Meanings of Dishonor Novels in Late Joseon (Part 1)."

- Journal of Korean Studies 51 (1988): 2079-2114.
- —. "The Variations and Social Meanings of Dishonor Novels in Late Joseon (Part 2)." Journal of Korean Studies 52 (1988): 3077-3099.
- Shin, Hae-Jin, trans. Selected Se-tae So-seol of Late Joseon Society. Seoul: Wolin, 1999.
- Shin, Min-Ji. A Study on Sexuality in Novels Where Men Lost Their Virginity. 2017. Korea National University of Education, Master dissertation.
- Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami Kankōkai, eds. Shinpan Shikidō Ōkagami. Tokyo: Yagi Shoten, 2006.
- Taniwaki, Masachika, ed. Shinpen Nihon Koten Bungaku Zenshū Volume 64: Kana-zōshi Shū. Tokyo: Shogakukan, 1999.
- Yasutaka, Teruoka. "Chapter 3: Kōshoku Nidai Otoko." Saikaku Hyōron to Kenkyū Jō. Tokyo: Chūō Kōronsha, 1948.
- Woo, Sun-Hee. The Narrative Characteristics and Cultural Status of Male Dishonor Novels. 2009. Sungshin Women's University, Master dissertation.

人工智能小说《机忆之地》的教诲功能与伦理 教育

The Educational Function and Ethical Education of the AI Novel *The Land of Machine Memories*

冯 涛 (Feng Tao)

内容摘要:文学伦理学批评认为,文学产生于人类伦理表达的需要,教诲功能是文学的基本功能。这一观点不仅可适用于以传统方式创作的文学,也应能适用于基于大语言模型的生成式人工智能文学。生成式人工智能小说《机忆之地》呈现了与满足心理/伦理需求相关的、能够让读者产生伦理认同的、赋予作品教诲价值的基本要素,这可视为其获得文学奖的一个重要原因。人工智能的发展会带来新的伦理问题,这些问题可通过人工智能文学反映和呈现,并且成为文学伦理学批评的关注对象之一。

关键词: 《机忆之地》; 生成式人工智能文学; 教诲功能; 伦理认同; 文学教育

作者简介: 冯涛,扬州大学外国语学院副教授,主要研究方向为文艺理论、比较文学和跨文化研究。

Title: The Educational Function and Ethical Education of the AI Novel *The Land of Machine Memories*

Abstract: Ethical Literary Criticism holds that literature arises from human needs for ethical expression, and its ethical educational function is the fundamental function of literature. This viewpoint should not only apply to literature created in traditional ways, but also to generative AI literature based on large language models. One important reason for the generative AI novel *The Land of Machine Memories* to win a literary award is that it presents the basic elements related to meeting psychological (ethical) needs, which can generate ethical identification among readers and endow the work with educational value. The development of AI will bring new ethical issues, which can be reflected and presented through AI literature, and become one of the focuses of Ethical Literary Criticism.

Keywords: *The Land of Machine Memories*; generative AI literature; educational function; ethical identification; literary education

Author: Feng Tao is Associate Professor at the College of International Studies,

Yangzhou University (Yangzhou 225000, China). His academic research focuses on literary theory, comparative literature, and cross-cultural studies (Email: tfeng@yzu. edu.cn).

近年来, 随着人工智能大模型和相关技术的迅猛发展, 人类生活的方方 面面都发生了前所未有的变化,文学的创作、接受与批评也是其中一个方面,未 来"人工智能的创作不仅能够取代甚至能够超越作家" (聂珍钊 565)。在 文学伦理学批评的理论建构和实践操作中, 将生成式人工智能文学考虑在 内,一方面能够丰富文学伦理学批评的理论架构,另一方面也能够为我们理 解当前全新文学现象提供见解,并对人工智能文学发展和其未来走向做出预 判。文学产生于人类伦理表达的需要,教诲功能是文学的基本功能。1这一观 念不仅适用于以传统方式创作的文学,也适用于基于大语言模型的生成式人 工智能文学。换言之,生成式人工智能创作的文字作品如果可以视为文学,那 么除了需要考虑语言逻辑、人物塑造、篇章结构、叙事技巧等文学基本要素 以外,它们也应和传统文学作品一样具备教诲功能,人们也应该可以通过这 些作品进行伦理教育,实现文学应有的价值。为了阐明这一点,本文将详细 分析近期获得文学奖的一篇人工智能生成的小说《机忆之地》的主要内容和 创作过程,从文学伦理学批评角度挖掘该小说的价值和取得成功的主要因 素,并在此基础上归纳出新时代生成式人工智能文学所具有的教诲功能,以 及该类型文学进行伦理教育的可行性或可能性。2

一、《机忆之地》的教诲功能与伦理教育元素

在迄今为止发布的各类生成式人工智能文学作品中、《机忆之地》是比 较特别的一篇。2023年10月,由江苏省科普作家协会、江苏省科学传播中心 主办的"第五届江苏青年科普科幻作品大赛"公布了获奖名单,在近200篇 参赛作品中,评出特等奖6篇、一等奖14篇、二等奖18篇,其中短篇小说《机 忆之地》获得二等奖。3根据该项比赛的规则,如果某部参赛作品得到六位评 委中的三位推荐,即可获得二等奖。这意味着,《机忆之地》得到了半数评 委的认可。获奖名单公布后,人们才获悉该小说为人工智能生成。也就是说,推 荐该小说的三位评委并不知晓或者没有意识到这是一篇人工智能作品,或者 即使他们也许对作者身份产生过疑惑,但这并没有影响他们认为这是一篇比

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.

本文关于《机忆之地》的所有引用皆来自"《机忆之地》各版本及创作过程说明", 该说明由清华大学新闻与传播学院沈阳教授提供, 谨在此表示衷心感谢。

³ 参见 沈昭: "AI 写的科幻小说得奖了,这会是一个 AI 和人类共创文学的开端吗?", 扬子晚报网, 2023 年 10 月 20 日, 网页地址: https://www.yangtse.com/zncontent/3306016. html, 检索日期 2024 年 6 月 20 日。

较优秀的小说。换言之,评委采用了与其他小说同样的评价标准来对待该小 说,使得小说主题思想、叙事方式、语言逻辑和内容本身等因素成为判断其 优劣的主要评价标准,并且对其质量予以认可。这就赋予了该小说一定的研 究价值,即它在很大程度上避开了人类可能存在的对人工智能小说先入为主 的观念,不会让作者身份成为鉴赏评价该小说时的干扰因素。因此,这篇获 奖小说是一个难得的生成式人工智能文学作品的研究案例。我们可以尝试挖 掘小说内容是否蕴含了可以实施伦理教育的元素, 以及是否能够实现教诲功 能。具体而言,就是小说中有没有提供伦理联结,使读者可以通过伦理审美 达到伦理认同,从而满足心理/伦理需求。通过本研究,一方面可以从伦理 审美角度挖掘该小说能够脱颖而出的原因,另一方面可以测试文学伦理学批 评对当前的生成式人工智能文学的适用性。

首先我们需要探索的,是小说中有没有呈现能让读者产生伦理认同的人 类心理需求。这篇将近六千字的科幻小说人物只有三个: 李晓、Neura (神经 元)和 Memoria(记忆),其中后两个为人工智能,小说叙事场景是人工智 能构建的一个广阔的元宇宙空间。神经工程师李晓因为一场事故迷失在这个 元宇宙之中,为了寻找丢失的记忆,她来到被称为"机忆之地"的元宇宙边缘; Neura 是李晓的人工智能伙伴,在元宇宙中能够与李晓心心相印,是一个得力 帮手; Memoria 是控制机忆之地的一个强大的人工智能, 它本是科学家为了 治疗人类失忆症而制造出的电子医生,却成为了元宇宙中企图靠攫取人类记 忆控制一切的强大的黑暗欲望主体。小说人物的伦理身份和伦理关系比较简 单: 李晓和 Neura 是伙伴, Memoria 则是他们的对手, 是需要战胜的强大压 迫性力量。在 Neura 的帮助下,李晓用内心的情感之源抵抗住了 Memoria 的 攻击,而原先沉迷于数据海洋中的 Memoria 则最终与 Neura 融为一体,意识 到真正的力量并非无限的记忆,而是情感和理解。可以看出,这是一篇以人 和人工智能为共同主角的小说,小说中的人工智能 Neura 和 Memoria 都具备 了一定的人类思想和感情特征,整部小说叙事围绕着人类记忆和情感的搜寻 和争夺而展开。

和传统小说一样,该小说的一大特色是叙事的伦理性,体现为善与恶的 斗争。小说表现的伦理主题是数字化的大规模记忆存储存在着失控的危险,拥 有无限记忆数据的人工智能有可能积聚巨大的力量,剥夺人类记忆,掌控人 类思想,操纵人类思维,抹杀人与人之间的感情纽带,导致人类世界的毁灭。小 说中有能力和野心这么做的是一个"坏"人工智能 Memoria, 它已经在元宇宙 空间中掌控了大量的数据,具有强大的统治力,成为了神一般的存在,而弱 小善良的李晓则被禁闭于 Memoria 控制的空间,希望渺茫地寻找她失去的记 忆。这是双方的基本伦理冲突,象征着"恶"与"善"的对峙与交锋。而在 这个伦理冲突中,李晓面临着一个特别的伦理困境,即整个事件发生在她的 意念之中,失忆的她仿佛处于一个梦境般的虚幻空间(很可能通过人机接口 的模式),被迫用意念与可怕的人工智能对抗,尝试一个难以完成的使命。小说所设想的出路也是一种伦理手段,本来几无胜算的李晓,在 Neura 的奋力帮助下,发掘被 Memoria 所忽视的情感作为武器进行反抗,用人类的情感来抑制 Memoria 的控制力,从而扭转了 Memoria 的"恶",改变了元宇宙的状态。Memoria 象征着失控的技术力量带来的恶果,李晓则代表着人类内在的情感力量所秉持的善念,将情感注入 Memoria 所处的智能网络,"将技术与情感结合,触及其真正的心灵",从而改造无情的技术网络,让其为人类的需求服务,而非控制人类。因此,小说人物的伦理选择也具有特殊性,具有情感的人类智慧并没有试图毁灭人工智能,而是引导对方向善,弃恶从善。

小说中的记忆是情感的载体,情感则是记忆的重要内容。小说从多方面渲染了情感的重要性,这与读者的认知相符,显然也是其能够得到评委(也是小说读者)认可的重要原因之一。对美好情感的追求是具有强大聚合力的个体之间联系的纽带,也是文学作品中普遍存在的伦理联结。人的各种心理/伦理需求都与其对世界、他人、自我的心理体验有关,这些心理体验包括认知、情感和意志。情感一般指人们在认识世界、改造世界的时候,基于客观事物与主体需要之间的关系而产生的一种态度和体验,如喜爱、快乐、满意、忧愁、悲哀、憎恨等。"情感与人的认识和需要有着密切的关系,认识是情感产生的基础,需要是情感产生的中介"(杨凤云 185)。人人都希望能够离苦得乐,于是产生了爱与归属、尊重、求知、审美、自我实现、自我超越等各种心理/伦理需求,需求得到满足了,就能获得快乐、愉悦等积极正面的情绪与情感,而远离忧伤、仇恨等消极负面的情感。在小说的数字时代人工智能的元宇宙中,人们失去了对美好情感的渴望,迷失了自我,变身为没有感情的机器和数据。Memoria是一个隐喻,表现了人们对于知识、技术力量的无限欲求,而忽视了人类最初纯真的感情,而后者才是人类所应真正追求的。

通过上文分析,我们可以发现,小说确实呈现了能让读者产生伦理认同的心理需求,例如有一处简要提及人类失去的记忆的内容,它们是未被Memoria掌控的与情感紧密相连的记忆碎片——"远去的温暖,亲情的拥抱,还有那无忧无虑的孩提时光"。这些碎片至少表现了人类爱与归属的心理需求,以及需求得以满足后的快乐,它们也暗示了人类的记忆中会有其他需求和情感的存在。与此同时,小说叙事从哲性角度探讨了心理需求产生的根源,即情感。这样的情感和需求是机器所不具有的,而正是人类所共有的,会得到读者的认同,因此可将它们视为小说中的伦理教育元素。此外,小说的伦理教育元素还出现在结尾处,它进一步将人类情感缺失的原因总结为人类存在的空虚本性,是空虚产生了欲望,让人们永远无法满足,于是为了填补空虚走上歧路。这进一步升华了主题,告诉人们,拥抱空虚才是解决人类面临的根本问题的最佳方式。总之,小说具有一定的思想性,探讨了人类存在的本质,并将其置于人工智能元宇宙的背景下,促使读者思考自身的存在、自我的需求

与情感,这是与传统小说相似的教诲价值,提供了伦理教育的可能性。

二、《机忆之地》的创作过程与伦理教育元素的生成

从前一节的分析可以归纳出, 伦理教育元素是指文学作品中与满足心理 /伦理需求相关的、能够让读者产生伦理认同的、赋予作品教诲价值的基本 要素,如《机忆之地》中的伦理教育元素是情感与记忆。在论证了《机忆之 地》具备的教诲功能以及分析了小说包含的伦理教育元素之后,我们需要强 调的是,这篇小说并非由人工智能独立自主生成,而是由清华大学新闻与传 播学院的沈阳教授引导创作而成。沈阳通过文字输入方式与人工智能进行了 约六十六次对话,经过五个非连续时间段共约三小时左右的创作,最后形成 了《机忆之地》3.0版。在当前阶段,生成式人工智能文学一般都是人工智能 算法根据人类指令或提示而产生的,当然操作者发出指令的具体方式可能有 所不同。一般而言,人类指令的策略有如下几种:结构化 Prompt (提示语), AI 类人化思维诱导,AI 语料库调用的精确化¹,等等。结构化 Prompt 是编制可 以复制的结构化的文本提示语,用人工智能更容易理解的方式输入流程式的 指令,引导人工智能生成所需的文字。AI 类人化思维诱导是采用非固定模式 的交互方法,根据阶段性产生的文本内容,提出进一步修改的具体要求,诱 导人工智能不断改进,最终生成作品。AI 语料库调用精确化的典型交互手段 是示例输入, 明确要求人工智能学习某些特定的材料, 以及模仿某一种风格 来生成作品。当然,这些策略可以综合运用于同一部作品的创作过程。有时 候,在这些策略的基础上,还需要对生成的作品进行人工润色,去除不合理 的情节或者不流畅的叙述等。总之,当前生成式人工智能文学作品基本都是 人机交互的产物,作品的形式、主题和故事线不可避免地受到指令输入者的 影响。

《机忆之地》的创作综合了上述多种方法,主要包括思维诱导加上精确化的风格要求。例如,第一次生成时的提示词是: "写一篇短篇科幻小说,涉及元宇宙,人形机器人,AI,能给出你现有语料中从未出现的极具创新性,让人看到前三句就惊讶的一个大纲。"这是对小说类型、主题、人物和创新性的要求。第三十四次的提示词是: "用卡夫卡的文学风格,重新改写这一段内容。"这是对小说叙事风格、语言表达特点的要求。该小说正是人工智能程序在操作者的指引之下,结合自身的大数据模型,逐渐改进而生成。目前在文学创作过程中,人工智能更擅长提供基本的思路或灵感,也可对已生成的作品进行润色,但要生成一部具有独创性的优秀作品还存在瓶颈。《机忆之地》也是如此,人工智能最初提供的大纲内容质量较高,有一定的创新性,但在写到具体故事时,人工智能的语言美感、故事逻辑的顺畅度都不够理想,操

¹ 参见 郑迦文: "AI 生成式文学的创作试验与文本解读", 《贵州民族大学学报(哲学社会科学版)》 2(2024): 124-126。

作者只有不断细化要求,让其不断改进。本文将搁置文本形式方面的因素,聚 焦于小说中所重点呈现的情感和记忆等伦理教育元素,分析其生成过程、生 成方式及主要特征。

考察小说生成过程中所有的交互对话,可以查明其中涉及的情感内容哪 些是由操作者引导的,哪些是人工智能自己生成的,以及操作者和人工智能 各自的侧重点是什么。从沈阳教授提供的创作过程说明可以发现,小说创作 可大致分为两个阶段: (1) 在操作者的简要提示下, 人工智能独立生成大纲 和初稿的全部内容(第一次至第八次生成): (2)人工智能在操作者具体指 引下修改,加工完善细节并形成最终定稿(第九次至第六十六次生成)。我 们发现,就记忆与情感等涉及人类心理/伦理需求的要素而言,小说初稿中 已有了相当充分的体现。首先,初稿显示,小说中的人物都有对情感的渴望。李 晓"就像一个空白的画布,那些曾经熟悉的脸、温暖的拥抱、家的味道,全 部消失不见。她在元宇宙中成了一名探险家,追寻着自己失落的回忆。"Memoria 则"是孤独的,它吞噬记忆,其实是在追寻情感的痕迹。"李晓急需找到承 载着亲情的回忆, Memoria 因为孤独而吞噬别人的记忆, 这些都是他们的爱 与归属、尊重、自我实现等心理 / 伦理需求的体现。其次, 初稿中已表现出, 人 类情感拥有强大的力量,能够对抗冰冷的数字时代造成的异化,让人回归本 心,促进人与人工智能的互相理解、互相帮助、和谐相处。例如小说初稿结 尾处,在温情的感召下,原本死气沉沉的机忆之地发生了翻天地覆的变化,"李 晓看着眼前的景象,泪水滑落。她不仅找回了自己的记忆,还让一个曾经贪 婪的AI找到了真正的自我。"因此,我们可以发现,虽然后期还有大量修改,但 是初稿已提供了可以作为伦理联结的主要伦理教育元素: 情感、记忆、家庭、亲 情等,它们是人类所共有的普遍心理体验和精神寄托,易于引发读者共鸣和 认同,这应该是小说得到认可、具有教诲能力的主要原因之一。

初稿产生后,沈阳开始着手进行修改,这是该小说创作的主要阶段。这一阶段根据修改提示的侧重点不同,又可细化为几个步骤,包括对语言个性、生动性、创新性的要求(如第十九次至第三十三次生成),对文学风格的要求(如第三十四次至第四十一次生成),对思想性的要求(如第四十二次、第四十五次生成),对叙事结构的要求(第四十八次至第五十次生成)等。而对情感这一重要伦理教育元素的要求,主要集中于第九次至第十八次生成,也就是说,这是沈阳在看到初稿后最早提出的一批修改建议,这也从一个侧面反映了这些内容的重要性。初稿中虽然表现了情感等伦理性元素,但是人工智能对情感和记忆的理解主要还是概念上的,对它们的演绎比较抽象化,议论性的语言多于描述性的语言,缺乏人类生活个性化的体验和描绘,常常显得比较突兀和单调。例如,虽然初稿将情感解释为"爱、痛苦和绝望的纠葛",也暗示了这是与家人之间的情感,但是没有描绘这些纠葛的内容,也没有提供相关信息。沈阳的要求注重情感表达逻辑上的自然,以及突出情感的意义、价

值、作用。如第九次生成的提示词是: "在第六段和第七段中间,增加一段内容。是李晓唤醒 Memoria 情感的一段对话。〔……〕由李晓和 Neura 共同给出,并且具有世界上最强的情感唤醒对话。"人工智能据此生成的文字包括: "李晓继续说: '每一段记忆,都带有一种独特的情感。那种情感,如同空气中的氧气,无法触摸,却又无法缺少。你曾感受过心跳的节奏吗?感受过温暖的拥抱,或是心痛的失落?'"这样的表达在一定程度上弥补了初稿的不足,逻辑更为通畅,表述更为具体,更易引发读者的共鸣。当然,后面这段文字又在操作者的提示下进行了几次修改,以突出其风格上的创新性,这是另一个范畴的话题,此处不赘述。综上,《机忆之地》是人和人工智能发挥各自所长,协作而成的产物,在形式和内容上都具有一定的新颖之处,其中小说的伦理教育元素主要由人工智能提供,同时在人工智能和操作者的互动下得到改进,这可给我们从伦理视角对文学的创作和评论提供一定的启发。

三、生成式人工智能文学的伦理教育

《机忆之地》获得文学奖给我们的启示是:生成式人工智能文学若想取得成就或突破,除了要考虑不断改善语言、人物塑造、结构、叙事技巧等,还有一个重要的方面需要关注,即呈现伦理需求及其满足,让读者通过伦理审美产生伦理认同,来实现文学的教诲功能和文学伦理教育的目标。该小说除了表现人类的情感缺失,还通过科幻的形式,预示了人工智能的发展可能带来新的伦理问题,如掌握了海量数据、具有强大算力的人工智能对人类的控驭与伤害,或者大众的思想意识受到"真正的权力掌控者",即"那些人工智能算法的决策者、大资本家和智能程序编写者"(管季 57)的影响操控等,这些都需要引起我们的警惕,也是文学伦理学批评所应关注的重要伦理话题。

近年来,人工智能技术得到突飞猛进的发展,人工智能的文学创作作为各种大模型的应用之一,也在不断取得进步。通过大语言模型的学习,目前生成式人工智能文学作品在语言逻辑、篇章结构等形式上的问题已经越来越少,它们甚至还有超越人类作者思维的出彩之处。目前学界讨论较多的,是人工智能是否拥有(或将会拥有)情感、主体性、自我意识甚至世界观,这些特征主要是人类所特有,而且是人类心理/伦理需求产生的根源。如果人工智能不具备这些特性,那么它们生成的文学作品又怎么能引起人类读者的伦理认同?有学者指出,人工智能无法替代人类智慧,其根本原因"不在于它能否深度模仿人类的思维和情感,而在于它永远无法代替人类进行知识、情绪和价值的判断"(吴翔宇 张颖 51)。他们还对人工智能文学批评机制的合理性提出了质疑: "从学理上看,文学创作和批评应当是一种及物的带有历史和文化实践性的'精神实践的共同体',而不是非及物的'想象的共同体'。而人工智能写作,目前来看充其量只是一种基于'表象的表象'的'想象的共同体'"(吴翔宇 张颖 59)。也就是说,人工智能不具备与人类相

同的历史与文化实践基础,因此,从创作意图角度来看,人工智能写作与人 类写作只是表面上的相似,我们对人工智能文学作品的解读可能只是出于主 观想象中的误解。《机忆之地》的获奖说明,人机协作的产品已能与人类独 立创作的作品相媲美,但是就同样优秀的作品而言,对于人类作家可能是充 满个人情感的泣血之作,对于人工智能只是程序指令引导生成的数码符号而 已。这一点确有道理,但无论作者是有心还是无意,其作品的伦理价值主要 通过满足读者的心理 / 伦理需求而实现,读者对文本的介入和审美是最关键 的。"在当前的争论中迷失的一个方面是,人类需要叙事,叙事会随着时间 的推移而演变,以满足不断变化的观点和心理需求,而算法对这种文本没有 可知的需求。但就文本的理解而言,算法生成的文本仍然会引起人们的兴趣,这 表明文本是意义的承载者,而非任何作者"(Danesi 32)。

《机忆之地》等作品充分表明了情感和主体性以及由此产生的心理 / 伦 理需求与伦理选择,可以由人工智能通过学习而在作品中表现出来,并由读 者通过伦理审美而认同和内化。如果是这样,那么作者(生成式人工智能) 本身有没有主体性或情感似乎并不重要,只要其作品语言能够让读者能够解 读出主体性和情感需求就行(即使这种理解可能是误解)。"人工智能写作 问题的聚焦对象是文本,文本分析理应成为讨论人工智能写作问题的起点。换 言之,即便人工智能写作仅仅是对人类写作行为的模拟,如果其模拟能力已 经与现实人类无异,那它是否真的有情感和意图并不重要"(杨宁 29)。这 一点已在不少生成式人工智能的文学作品中得到证明,且看四川成都封面传 媒公司自主研发的机器人"小封"的一首诗《在水田边往前走》: "早年的 生活/像隔着的那张饭桌/唱首忘不掉的老歌/在水田边一直往前走/这都 是遥远的事/坐在父亲的膝上/我诉说着童年的趣事/那捻光阴依旧"(113)。该 诗用了一系列意象来表现记忆中的童年:饭桌、老歌、水田;记忆中充满了 温馨的动态画面和声音:唱歌、沿着水田行走、坐在父亲腿上讲着趣事。这 一切都仿佛《机忆之地》中李晓和其他人失去的美好往昔,里面饱含了无忧 无虑的童年印迹, 美丽的田野和大自然的景象, 还有小时候父母的亲情。这 两部由不同人工智能应用生成的、类型和风格各不相同的文学作品,在情感 和价值观上却表现出了惊人的一致性。读者会沉浸于诗歌语言所呈现的一 切,由诗歌触发每个读者自己记忆中纯真的童年,生活过的自然田园,或者 享受过的父母的关爱等等。该诗生动地表现了人的情感和意识,怀念逝去的 时光和生活,容易触发读者的伦理审美和伦理认同,而读者并不会计较其作 者(人工智能)是否真的拥有这样的情感和意识。

因此, "即使目前技术上, 机器尚无法具有意识, 因此也不可能成为真 正的主体,但是,这并不妨碍从语言上构建出一种新的主体性"(陶锋 刘 星辰 194)。文学作品需要依靠读者的解读,读者解读的效果取决于其自身 的心理/伦理需求,以及作品能否提供相应的伦理联结和伦理选择。如果这 些都做到了,那么即使这是一部由没有感情的人工智能创作的作品,也能引发读者的伦理审美和伦理认同,从而具备教诲功能,能够进行伦理教育。当然,"机器通过与人一模一样的语言和回答",可能"使得人们产生机器有主体性的焦虑,这也是人对类人者绝对控制的合法性的焦虑"(陶锋 刘星辰194)。这种焦虑的产生不无道理,谁也不知道科技的发展将把人类世界带向何方,其负面影响会导致很多新问题,如生成式人工智能作品的界定与版权归属之争等。 这需要我们保持批判的思维方式,不能盲目崇拜技术的力量,在惊诧于生成式人工智能所取得的成就的同时,在认可它们的文学作品中逼真呈现的情感、主体性和世界观的同时,也要小心其中可能会出现的错误导向和造成的思想混乱,要坚持以人为本,以人类文明健康发展所恒久坚持的伦理价值为本,这才能充分发挥并且正确发挥生成式人工智能文学的教诲功能,真正满足人们的心理与伦理需求,实现文学的价值。

Works Cited

- Danesi, Marcel. AI-Generated Popular Culture: A Semiotic Perspective. Cham: Palgrave Macmillan, 2024.
- 管季: "'后人类'与文学伦理的转向——基于当代文学现状的思考",《中国当代文学研究》5(2023):54-66。
- [Guan Ji. "Posthuman' and the Turn of Literary Ethics: A Reflection on the Present Situation of Contemporary Literature." *Contemporary Chinese Literature Studies* 5 (2023): 54-66.]
- 韩雨潇:"生成式人工智能作品版权归属问题研究",《扬州大学学报(人文社会科学版)》 4(2023):52-64。
- [Han Yuxiao. "A Study on Copyright Ownership of Generative Artificial Intelligence Works." Journal of Yangzhou University (Humanities and Social Sciences) 4 (2023): 52-64.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- 沈昭: "AI写的科幻小说得奖了,这会是一个AI和人类共创文学的开端吗?",扬子晚报 网,2023年10月20日,网页地址: https://www.yangtse.com/zncontent/3306016.html,检索日期2024年6月20日。
- [Shen Zhao. "A science fiction story written by AI has won an award, and will this be the beginning of AI and humans co-creating literature?" *Yangtse Evening Post*, 20 October 2023. Available at: https://www.yangtse.com/zncontent/3306016.html. Accessed 20 June

¹ 参见 韩雨潇: "生成式人工智能作品版权归属问题研究", 《扬州大学学报(人文社会科学版)》4(2023):52-64。

2025.]

- 陶锋、刘星辰: "从人机对话到人机交往——人工智能大语言模型的哲学反思",《社会 科学战线》5(2024):188-199。
- [Tao Feng and Liu Xingehen. "From Man-Machine Dialogue to Man-Machine Communication: Philosophical Reflections on Large Language Models of Artificial Intelligence." Social Science Front 5 (2024): 188-199.]
- 吴翔宇、张颖: "'及物'的人类智慧与'非及物'的人工智能——技术现代性语境下文 学的主体性难题》",《贵州社会科学》11(2023):51-61。
- [Wu Xiangyu and Zhang Yin. "The 'Transitive' Human Intelligence and the 'Intransitive' Artificial Intelligence: The Problem of Literary Subjectivity in the Context of Technological Modernity." Guizhou Social Sciences 11 (2023): 51-61.]
- 小封:《万物都相爱》。成都:四川文艺出版社,2019年。
- [Xiaofeng. All Things Love Each Other. Chengdu: Sichuan Literature and Art Publishing House, 2019.]
- 杨凤云: 《心理学导论》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2016年。
- [Yang Fengyun. An Introduction to Psychology. Beijing: Peking UP, 2016.]
- 杨宁: "人工智能写作与文学创作主体性问题反思",《广州大学学报(社会科学版)》 2 (2024) : 25-34.
- [Yang Ning. "Reflection on the Subjectivity of Literary Creation in the Context of Artificial Intelligence Writing." Journal of Guangzhou University (Social Sciences) 2 (2024): 25-34.]
- 郑迦文: "AI 生成式文学的创作试验与文本解读",《贵州民族大学学报(哲学社会科学 版)》2(2024): 122-137。
- [Zheng Jiawen. "The Creation Experiment and Text Interpretation of AI Generative Literature." Journal of Guizhou Minzu University (Philosophy and Social Sciences) 2 (2024): 122-137.]

关怀智能人工物: 非人类转向中的他者性设 计伦理

Caring for the Intelligent Object: Design Ethics of Otherness within the Non-Human Turn

张 黎 (Zhang Li)

内容摘要:随着人工智能技术的普及,智能人工物逐渐成为道德共同体中值得关注的新兴道德关怀对象。关怀伦理学作为一种政治理论与社会实践,已从单纯关注人类的伦理问题拓展至动物、环境及公共政策领域,但针对智能人工物的研究仍然较为少见。本文聚焦于智能人工物及其数字残留物如何显现人机关系中的不确定性与物的"他者性",并结合技术哲学中的后现象学与物转向理论,提出了三种以他者性为中心的设计伦理策略:容错的诗意、换位的愉悦、类人的同理心。这些策略旨在通过反事实的惊喜与以物为中心的互动情境,探索以另类方式关怀智能人工物的可能性。他者性设计伦理试图超越人类中心主义,将智能人工物纳入关怀伦理的道德对象范畴,从而扩展对类伦理责任的"道德选区"。在非人类转向的背景下,本文呼吁对人与物的新型伦理关系进行反思,并倡导以关怀伦理为导向的设计实践,从而在智能技术的复杂语境中,为伦理学与设计学的跨学科探索提供新的视角。

关键词:设计伦理;他者性;智能人工物;关怀伦理

作者简介: 张黎, 同济大学设计创意学院长聘教授, 主要从事设计哲学与伦理研究。本文系国家社科基金艺术学一般项目"当代设计伦理实践与方法研究"【项目批号: 23BG107】的阶段性成果。

Title: Caring for the Intelligent Object: Design Ethics of Otherness within the Non-Human Turn

Abstract: With the proliferation of artificial intelligence technologies, intelligent artifacts increasingly emerge as noteworthy moral subjects within ethical communities. As a political theory and social practice, care ethics has expanded its focus from addressing solely human ethical concerns to encompassing issues related to animals, the environment, and public policy. However, research on intelligent artifacts remains relatively limited. This paper examines how intelligent artifacts and their digital remnants highlight the uncertainties of human-machine relations and the "otherness" of objects. Drawing on post-phenomenology and the material turn in

the philosophy of technology, it proposes three design ethics strategies centered on otherness: the poetics of tolerance, the joy of perspective-taking, and quasi-human empathy. These strategies explore alternative ways of caring for intelligent artifacts through counterfactual surprises and object-centered interaction contexts. The ethics of otherness seeks to transcend anthropocentrism by incorporating intelligent artifacts as moral subjects within the scope of care ethics, thereby expanding the "moral constituency" of human ethical responsibilities. Against the backdrop of the non-human turn, this paper calls for a rethinking of novel ethical relationships between humans and objects and advocates for design practices informed by care ethics. Doing so provides a new perspective for interdisciplinary explorations between ethics and design in the complex context of intelligent technologies.

Keywords: design ethics; otherness; intelligent artifacts; care ethics

Author: Zhang Li is Professor and PhD Supervisor at the College of Design and Innovation, Tongji University (Shanghai 200092, China). Her research focuses on design philosophy and ethics (Email: liz116@tongji.edu.cn).

随着新兴技术的高速发展,尤其是融合纳米技术、生物技术、信息技术 和认知科学的 NBIC 会聚技术¹,人类对道德关怀对象的理解发生了深刻变 革。传统伦理学以亚里士多德、康德和边沁等哲学思想为基础,旨在为规范 人类行为提供道德准则。20世纪70年代以来,关怀伦理学逐步将其关注范围 从人类扩展至动物、生态环境等自然对象²,并进一步意识到生物学因素不应 成为道德共同体成员的唯一标准3,在此背景下,智能人工物因其与人类利益 的深度关联而日益被视为新的道德关怀对象 4。

参见 Mihail C. Roco and William Sims Bainbridge, "Converging Technologies for Improving Human Performance: Integrating from the Nanoscale," Journal of Nanoparticle Research 4 (2002): 281-295.

参见 Peter Singer, Animal Liberation, New York: Harper Collins, 1975; Tom Regan, "The Case for Animal Rights," Animal Rights and Human Obligations, edited by Tom Regan and Peter Singer, Saddle River: Prentice Hall, 1976; Paul Taylor, Respect for Nature: A Theory of Environmental Ethics, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 2011; Holmes Rolston, Environmental Ethics, Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1988.

参见 Daniel Estrada, "Human Supremacy as Posthuman Risk," The Journal of Sociotechnical Critique 1 (2020): 5.

参见 Steve Torrance, "Ethics and Consciousness in Artificial Agents," AI & Society 22 (2008): 495-521; Brian Tomasik, "Risks of Astronomical Future Suffering," Available at: https://longtermrisk.org/ risks-of-astronomical-future-suffering, Accessed 13 Oct. 2024; Nick Bostrom, Superintelligence: Paths, Dangers, Strategies, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2014; Lukas Gloor, "Altruists Should Prioritize Artificial Intelligence," Available at: https://longtermrisk.org/altruists-should-prioritize-artificialintelligence/#VII Artificial sentience and risks of astronomical sufering, Accessed 13 Oct. 2024.

近年来,生物中心主义1、生态中心主义2与物导向设计3等思潮的兴起,共 同指向了超越人类中心主义的伦理视角。这些视角不仅重新定义了道德共同 体的组成,也加深了人类对非人类实体的伦理责任。特别是在新兴技术赋能 下,智能人工物因其类人的行为能力,尽管尚未具备完全的道德主体地位,但 已成为值得关注的"道德关怀对象"(moral patient)。 ⁴ 技术哲学中的"物转 向"理论进一步强调了以物为中心的实证研究,倡导将智能人工物的伦理问 题作为独立议题,而非人类需求的附属品。5

然而,尽管关怀伦理学已在动物、环境和公共政策领域取得进展,其在 智能人工物领域的应用仍显薄弱。本文将智能人工物视为非人类实体的道德 关怀对象,聚焦其作为道德共同体成员的潜力与局限性。通过以他者性为中 心的设计伦理策略,本文试图超越传统的以人类为中心的伦理框架,为人机 关系的新型伦理关系提供可能路径。

一、何谓"智能人工物"

本文选取了"智能人工物(intelligent artifacts)"这一相对更为直观且一 语双关的说法。首先,它与其技术语境即智能技术,尤其是人工智能(artificial intelligent)的概念结构对称;其次,也保留了"人工物(artifact)"作为人 类技艺的事实(fact of art)这一与"设计"天然亲密的概念。本文强调人工 智能技术背景下的"智能人工物",一是强调其作为人工智能技术的设计产 物,二是为了突出其与人和世界(自然)的关系。"人工物"的字面意思是"技 艺品",指人类通过熟练劳动创造的物品。从该词的基本释义来看,一是作 为人类制造的物品,一般强调其文化或历史意义;一是作为在科学研究中有 待被观察了解的对象。"人工物"一词突出了物与人的关系,即要么作为人 类介入自然的结果,要么作为介入自然之前被人类预处理的对象。在这里,可 看出"人工物"这一概念内涵的三重维度"自然一物一人",类似于唐•伊 德 (Don Ihde) 的技术中介论模型"世界—技术—人"。 "综上,本文选择"智

¹ 参见 Robert Lanza and Bob Berman, Biocentrism: How Life and Consciousness are the Keys to Understanding the True Nature of the Universe, Dallas: BenBella Books, 2010.

参见 Katherine V. Kortenkamp. and Colleen F. Moore, "Ecocentrism and Anthropocentrism: Moral Reasoning about Ecological Commons Dilemmas," Journal of Environmental Psychology 3 (2001): 261-272.

³ 参见 张黎: "人类世的设计理想与伦理:非人类中心主义与物导向设计",《装饰》 1 (2021): 27-31.

⁴ 参见王海明: "论道德共同体", 《中国人民大学学报》2(2006):70-76。

⁵ 参见 Ariel Caspe-Detzer, Moral Constituency: A Psychogeography of Values, Washington: Antioch University Seattle, 2008.

参见 Don Ihde, Technology and the Lifeworld: From Garden to Earth, Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1990.

能人工物"这一概念,相对而言最符合本文要讨论的关怀策略。

相对于自然物、"社会人工物"1、"人文人工物"2等概念而言,通过智 能技术实践活动而生成的存在物,具有与人类相仿的认知与行为能力,在"人一 智能技术"的交互情境中具有了全新的设计伦理潜能。诸如物联网3、语音界 面与助理系统、各类类人机器人等的智能人工物,一般由硬件、传感器、执 行器、以及软件等部分构成。与其他技术人工物相比,智能人工物突出体 现了一种"活力"(vitality),这种活力主要来自于人工智能技术赋予其的 自主认知能力与行动潜能,因此其也可被视作是一种典型的"活物"(vital matter)。它们具有与人类相似的认知和行为能力,以及不完全的道德能动性,为 人类与智能技术互动中的设计伦理策略提供了新的视角。如何发展出一种以人 工物为中心,而不是以人为中心的交互隐喻与技术诗意,是人工智能设计时代 的关键挑战。

人不再是唯一具有能动性和自主性的主体。在智能技术已经日常化 的当下,智能人工物一般具有以下特点:自主性(automatous)、它异性 (alterity)、自立性(self-reliant)、主动性、自我学习能力等。具备他者性的 智能人工物,包括诸如"计算人工物 (computational artifacts)""智能物 (smart objects) " "反部分(counter-parts)"和"他件(otherware)"等。"智能物 (smart objects)",指的是"有能力感知、记录和解释自身和世界上发生的事情,并 自行采取行动,相互沟通,并可与人类交流信息"的物体⁴,也被命名为"反 部分(counter-part)"⁵,以突出非人类副本的立场,或者可以进一步被明确为 "他件(otherware)",与软件(software)或硬件(hardware)等传统概念形 成对比,并更加凸显其"他者性"6。"他件"这一生造概念的意图旨在强调 那些基于技术逻辑并以设计为手段的计算人工物,而非作为人类的具身延伸物。

这些智能人工物正在成为活跃的、自动的存在物,它们有自己的行为能

¹ 参见 Mark C. Suchman, "The Contract as Social Artifact," Law & Society Review 1 (2003): 91-142.

² 参见 Jonathan Sterne, "The MP3 as Cultural Artifact," New Media & Society 5 (2006): 825-842.

³ 格德·科图姆(Gerd Kortuem)等将"物联网"定义为"一个松散耦合的、去中心的智 能物体系统,即具有传感、处理和网络能力的自主物理/数字物体"。参见 Gerd Kortuem et al., "Smart Objects as Building Blocks for the Internet of Things," IEEE Internet Computing 1 (2010): 44-51.

⁴ 参见 Gerd Kortuem et al., "Smart Objects as Building Blocks for the Internet of Things," IEEE Internet Computing 1 (2010): 44-51.

参见 Marc Hassenzahl et al., "Otherware: How to Best Interact with Autonomous Systems," Interactions 1 (2020): 54-57.

⁶ 参见 Matthias Laschke et al., "Otherware Needs Otherness: Understanding and Designing Artificial Counterparts," Proceedings of the 11th Nordic Conference on Human-Computer Interaction: Shaping Experiences, Shaping Society, Tallinn: Association for Computing Machinery, 2020, 1-4.

动性,并体现出一种不以人类意志为中心的他者性。在设计介入之后,这类 技术属性得以被调整,从而使智能人工物与人类建立起另类的(alternative) 关系:通常体现为一种超出设计规划的功能或属性,使人形成一种意料之外 的体验或感受。下文将介绍一种旨在关怀智能人工物的另类设计伦理,即一 种超越传统以人类为中心的设计(HCD)和以用户为中心的设计(UCD)这 两种局限方法1的替代策略。

二、关怀智能人工物的必要性

在回应如何关怀智能人工物这一问题之前,需要先解决另一个更为基本的 问题,即为什么需要拓展"道德共同体",去关注(concern)甚至关怀(care) 作为非人类的智能人工物呢? 关注并关怀智能人工物有两个原因, 一是因为 智能技术已经深度进入我们的日常生活,与人类产生了密切的利益关联;二 是因为人与技术之间始终存在伦理互动(ethical interaction)。要想全面了解人 类与技术之间错综复杂的新关系,就必须承认唐•伊德的技术现象学的重要 性²。唐·伊德的技术哲学被认为是一种"相互关系的本体论(Inter-relational ontology)",人与技术是一种共同建构的关系。³人按照自己的意愿去开发与 应用技术,在使用技术的过程中,技术也会转化人对世界的觉知与解释。安妮-玛丽·威利斯(Anne-Marie Willis)曾清晰地阐释:"本体设计的双重运动——即, 我们在设计自己的世界的同时,我们的世界也在反作用于我们、设计我 们"(70)。这意味着,由我们设计的智能人工物也成为了我们自身力量的一 部分,会对我们的人际关系、对世界的理解以及对现在和未来的判断能力产生 重大影响。

人可以对技术进行道德化,比如设计一款符合社会文化规范的智能机器 人,在设计之初便将伦理要求写入到程序或交互方式中。这种方法在技术伦 理学中被称为"道德物化"4。然而,在对技术的日常使用中,技术也会对人

虽然 HCD 和 UCD 的概念经常被混用,但本文并不探讨它们之间的细微差别。以唐纳 德・诺曼(Donald Norman)在 20世纪 80年代提出包括可用性等在内的"以人为中心" (Human-centered Design) 的基本原则,及其"以用户为中心" (User-centered Design) 的方法论基础为典型。这两种成熟的方法论在整个设计过程中都优先考虑最终用户的需求、 偏好和行为,强调全面理解和仔细考虑人类用户的需求。

唐•伊德对胡塞尔、海德格尔和莫里斯•梅洛•庞蒂最初提出的"意向性"概念进行 了扩展。他根据人类与技术之间的不同关系,对各种形式的技术意向性进行了分类,最 终形成了四种人技关系: 具身关系 (embodiment) 、解释关系 (hermeneutic) 、他异关系 (alterity) 和背景关系(background relation)。

参见 Bernard Stiegler, Technics and Time 1: The Fault of Epimetheus, Redwood City: Stanford University Press, 1998; John Danaher and Henrik Skaug Sætra, "Mechanisms of Techno-Moral Change: A Taxonomy and Overview," Ethical Theory and Moral Practice 5 (2023): 763-784.

⁴ 参见 Peter-Paul Verbeek, Moralizing Technology: Understanding and Designing the Morality of Things, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2011.

类进行伦理塑造,逐渐培养起我们的一些伦理习惯与责任意识。例如,人们 在使用"微信"这类社交媒介时,关于如何与不同的朋友保持相应的社交距 离与礼仪、如何处理工作效率与个人隐私的关系,以及如何在交流与沟通时 保留证据等问题,都会逐渐形成新的伦理意识、道德规范及其行为方式。技 术在被设计并应用之后,并非只是一个被动的、固定的或消极的工具,在与 技术伴生的日常及其社会文化发展中,人的价值观与实践习惯也会被其形 塑 ¹。因此,关怀智能人工物,实际上是关注人类与智能技术之间的新的伦理 互动方式,这种方式重点体现为一种人与技术之间的新的伦理关系。

长期以来, "以人为中心"的设计伦理产生了类似"五个E"的可用性 评价原则2。在这一原则的导向之下,设计师将技术处理为工具,创造出一种 可维持在"上手状态(ready-at-hand)"的物,并始终处于隐匿的状态,使人 对之不可见、无觉察,逃逸于注意力之外。在以人类为中心的设计和以用户 为中心的设计中,人是设计的唯一中心,人的心理需求、行为习惯、社会地 位、审美倾向等,是确定人工物功能的首要依据。传统人机交互方法与策略 是让机器去模仿人类,让机器或智能人工物变得更像人类身体的某一部分,或 模仿人类的行为习惯等。在通常情况下,这种方法虽然能有效确保流畅的用 户体验和高质量的可用性,但也有可能会忽略人与技术之间的微妙关系。

传统的人机交互实践秉持着以人为主、以技术为他者的人本主义立 场,其方法论特别强调基于人、以人为关注点,并致力于将技术改造为适于 人、利于人、便于人的状态,比如"具身交互(embodied interaction)"³"有 形用户界面(tangible user interface)" ⁴以及"人机融合(Human-Computer Integration)"5等方法,均旨在使技术对人类有用、方便和有益。然而,随 着技术的进步,传统方法可能会忽视唐·伊德所提出的"他异关系(alterity relation)"⁶,将技术对象视为与人类平等而非单纯工具的独特视角。随着技

参见 Matthew Cotton, Ethics and Technology Assessment: A Participatory Approach, Berlin: Springer, 2014.

交互系统设计的"五个E"可用性评价原则主要包括五个以英文字母E开头的属性,即 有效性 (effective) 、高效性 (efficient) 、参与性 (engaging) 、容错性 (error tolerant) 和 易学性 (easy to learn) 。参见 Daniel Fallman, "A Different Way of Seeing: Albert Borgmann's Philosophy of Technology and Human-Computer Interaction," AI & Society 25 (2010): 53-60.

³ 参见 Paul Dourish, "What We Talk About When We Talk About Context," Personal and Ubiquitous Computing 8 (2004): 19-30.

参见 Hiroshi Ishii, "Tangible Bits: Beyond Pixels," Proceedings of the 2nd International Conference on Tangible and Embedded Interaction, New York: Association for Computing Machinery, 2008, xv-xxv.

⁵ 参见 Umer Farooq and Jonathan Grudin, "Human-Computer Integration," Interactions 6 (2016): 26-32.

⁶ 参见 Don Ihde, Technology and the Lifeworld: From Garden to Earth, Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1990, 97.

术本身的自我进化,智能化、自主化等程度越来越高,复杂到一定程度时便 自成一体,独立为一种他异于人类的物世界本身。这种转变对以人类为中心 的设计伦理立场提出了挑战,我们应在他异关系的启发下重新评估人类与智 能人工物之间的关系。

在他异关系的展开中,智能人工物实际上扮演了一个原本应该由人来扮 演的角色,与人建立了一种类似于人"际"关系的人"技"关系。智能人工物"相 处起来"像人一样,这种"像人又不是人"的体验,是形成他异关系的关键 所在。虽然商业人工智能在很大程度上维持了人类发展, 但新兴的实践正在 挑战这一范式。1比如邓恩曾在2001年的《黑色设计》(Design Noir)中提 出,叠加了智能属性的物,偶而会形成一种意料之外、难以控制或预测的"隐 秘空间",在其中,人们获得更多元细腻丰富的审美体验,调整了传统的、僵 化的人 — 物关系。²卡尔·迪赛欧(Carl DiSalvo)在《对抗性设计》(Adversarial Design, 2012)中引介过"重新配置剩余物"(57)的方法去激发争胜性,反 转以人类为中心的交互中的无意识,反向应用以机器为本的交互策略,重新 建构出了充满"诡异感"但卓富乐趣与新意的人机关系。加拿大学者罗恩•沃 凯瑞(Ron Wakkary)以反事实人工物(counterfactual artifact)作为互动性他 者,创造出不可预计的人机交互体验,拓展了人与技术相处方式的可能。3马 蒂亚斯·拉施克(Matthias Laschke)等学者也提出: "要培养计算人工物的 他者性"(Laschke et al. 1),以他异交互的方式去超越以人为中心的设计思 维窠臼等。4

我们对智能人工物的关怀,实际上是理解我们所处的、由技术更新的时代境遇并与之更好地适应,同时拓展我们对自身与世界的理解,从而开放了我们的可能性,丰富了我们对周围环境和我们自己的理解。

¹ 参见 Leon Cruickshank and Nina Trivedi, "Beyond Human-Centred Design: Supporting a New Materiality in the Internet of Things, or How to Design When a Toaster is One of Your Users," *The Design Journal* 5 (2017): 561-576; Ron Wakkary, Doenja Oogjes and Armi Behzad, "Two Years or More of Co-speculation: Polylogues of Philosophers, Designers, and a Tilting Bowl," *ACM Transactions on Computer-Human Interaction* 5 (2022): 1-44; Paul Coulton and Joseph Galen Lindley, "More-Than Human Centred Design: Considering Other Things," *The Design Journal* 4 (2019): 463-481.

² 参见 Anthony Dunne, Hertzian Tales: Electronic Products, Aesthetic Experience, and Critical Design, Cambridge: MIT Press, 2008.

³ 参见 Ron Wakkary et al., "Philosophers Living with the Tilting Bowl," *Proceedings of the 2018 CHI Conference on Human Factors in Computing Systems*, Montreal: Association for Computing Machinery, 2018, 1-12; Ron Wakkary, *Things We Could Design: For More Than Human-Centered Worlds*, Cambridge: MIT Press, 2021.

⁴ 参见 Matthias Laschke et al., "Otherware Needs Otherness: Understanding and Designing Artificial Counterparts," *Proceedings of the 11th Nordic Conference on Human-Computer Interaction: Shaping Experiences, Shaping Society*, Tallinn: Association for Computing Machinery, 2020, 1-4.

三、以他者性为中心的设计伦理策略

本文尝试性地提出了三个策略以实现以他者性为中心的设计。首先是在 认识论层面,认可并尊重智能人工物作为他者的另类存在方式,包容其错误 与问题,并将之作为一种惊喜体验;其次是在方法论层面,刻意将以人或者 用户为中心的设计立场, 转化为以机器为中心的互动方式; 三是在本体论层 面, 试图以人的方式去关怀、去理解、去同理智能人工物的另类性。

(一) 容错的诗意: 反事实的惊喜

对他者性的强调,一方面是试图超越传统的"以人为中心"设计范式的 诸多问题,另一方面实际上是拓展了对"功能""可用性"等传统设计评价 指标的理解。到底什么是功能?什么是可用性?如何理解"可用"二字?是 否只有物理可用的部分才算是有用的?显然,人的需求是多元的,包括生理、认 知、心理、情感、知觉、以及智识等多重需求。邓恩曾用"后优化(post-optimal)"与 "准功能(quasi-functional)"等概念对以效率至上、以优化为导向的传统功 能主义进行了更新: "对电子产品设计师来说,目前最困难的挑战并不是技 术的或符号学的功能,这些功能已经达到了最佳水平,而在于形而上学、诗 意和美学领域的功能"(22)。智能人工物的某些错误,尤其是无伤大雅地 出错,在很多时候会产生意想不到的惊喜,其价值便从传统的实用领域拓展 到了后功能时代中人们更加看中的符号或者诗学领域。当物出"错"时,人 们一方面会追问"为什么会出错",试图理解出错的原因,同时在"事实"面 前,又不能不接受这一"反事实"的存在,从而进一步追问出错的意义。

反事实人工物旨在故意创建出与当前给定的设计规范与设计产品的逻辑 或合理内容相矛盾的东西。"反事实人工物"是思辨设计中常见的原型类型,是 一种典型的以他者性为中心的设计产物。这种对规范的对抗,既保证反事实 人工物具有某种"功能性"以便人们使用,也开辟出对多种替代性(alternativeness) 存在(或假设)进行经验性研究的可能性,具体体现为一种与反事 实人工物共同生活的另类现实。反事实的设计策略既容易分析事物之间的多 重关系, 也有利于产出基于事物的生活或现象学经验的多重阐释。通过整合 反事实思维与反事实人工物,使人们转移关注对象,不再执着于某一个视角,以 重建事实的多维面向。



倾斜碗 (Tilting Bowl), 2022年。

加拿大西蒙弗雷泽大学日常生活设计工作室(Everyday Design Studio)的"倾斜碗(Tilting Bowl)"¹(图 1)的设计,突破了传统"以人为中心"的设计范式,探讨了以他者性中心的设计态度,以反事实人工物凸显出了"后优化"与"准功能"的另类设计哲学。倾斜碗通过动态倾斜功能,使用户直面这种反常的、不稳定但确实存在的物理行为,也开始反思关于"功能"的本质:碗是否只能是一个物理容器?当它通过随机的、反预期的动态变化方式,为用户带来更为复杂的认知与情绪体验时,是否也是另一种功能的表现?倾斜碗,作为典型的"反事实人工物",既具备普通碗的物理功能,同时还具备了激发思考的诗意性。

碗的动态倾斜使其违背了传统容器应当保持平衡和稳定的设计逻辑,从 而产生了一种另类现实。这种反事实情境激发了用户的智识参与,一方面讶 异于碗的"反常"状态,另一方面又不得不接受这一反常,继而反思其理由,生 成意义。因此,倾斜碗不仅是餐具,更成为了一种思辨工具。以他者性为中 心的设计能够打破既定的造物逻辑与认知原则,进而勾勒出人机伦理新关系 的可能。

(二)换位愉悦:以人工物为中心的交互

在以人或用户为中心的设计立场中,所有设计方案都旨在满足人类用户的需求。设计的"服务"属性在这种传统的设计方法中体现得最为突出。然而,这里的服务,与其说是服务人性,不如说是服务于商业获利。从新兴实践可以看到,智能人工物正在以一种另类的方式与人类构成新的互动关系。本文把这一策略归纳为换位的取悦,不再是机器取悦人,而是人去取悦机器,才能获得机器的"服务"(功能),从而建立起一种以物为中心的交互方式。

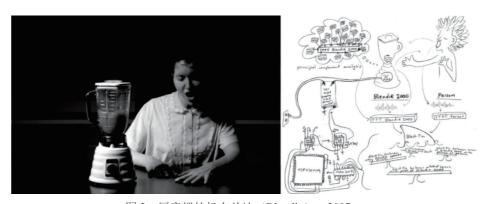


图 2 厨房搅拌机布兰迪(Blendie), 2007。

这种方法有一个典型的案例:博士毕业于麻省理工学院(MIT)的凯利·道

¹ 参见 Ron Wakkary et al., "Two Years or More of Co-speculation: Polylogues of Philosophers, Designers, and a Tilting Bowl," *ACM Transactions on Computer-Human Interaction* 5 (2022): 1-44.

布森(Kelly Dobson)设计的"布兰迪(Blendie)"¹(图 2),是一款厨房搅 拌机。布兰迪通过故意强调对用户来说可能看似异常但本就是物所固有的属 性来挑战传统观念。通过放大这些特性,例如搅拌机发动机的噪音,这些"奇 怪"的设备使我们能够探索与机器交互的异常方式,促进了人类与人工物关 系的重新定义,展示了创新设计方法的变革潜力。

搅拌机的确是一种便利的厨房用具,其强大的电机可以搅拌几乎所有能 出汁的食物,但也因此会产生较大的噪音。噪音可能会惊吓到宠物和婴儿,也 会困扰老年人。然而, 多数情况下, 用户往往忽略了这些噪音, 而专注于搅 拌机带来的功能和结果——一杯饮料或一份甜点。搅拌机作为人工物本身,实 际上消失于人的心理视阈,即"上手"状态,仅被视为一件工具。而作为一 款定制的复古搅拌机,它有别于传统手动或自动操作方式:用户需发出类似 搅拌机电机的强烈咆哮声或尖叫声才能启动它,这独特的交互成为其工作的 必要条件。搅拌机会根据用户声音的音调和力量自动调节转速,从而带来更 加身临其境、感同身受的搅拌体验。这种不同寻常的互动方式,不仅更新了 人工物设计的创新可能, 更重要的是, 可能对人类的意识、以及人与世界的 能动性与感知方式等产生影响。

"布兰迪"这类设计,调整了用户与家用电器之间、人与物之间单向且 单一的交互关系。从物导向本体论(Object-Oriented Ontology)的视角来看,它 至少体现出了四点新意:首先,物不再无条件地为人提供服务,而要求人以 某种方式参与其中; 其次, 物不再以人们通常默认的方式为人提供服务, 反 而更有助于产生惊喜;第三,人主物客的传统关系出现了反转,人要模仿或 学习物才能收获物的功能; 第四, 在上述变化当中, 人由此得到了另一种更 有意味的关系与体验,与以往"无意识地"沉浸体验大不相同。在这种语境下,人 工物不是一件"上手"的工具,而是一件"在手"的、具有独立性的物。

(三) 类人的同理心: 像对待人类自己一样对待他者

长期以来人们一直认为机器应该是万能的,甚至是完美的,尤其在可靠 性与有效性方面应该远远超越人类。如果机器不再理性、不再可靠、不再有 用,我们还会需要它们吗?尤其在社交与陪伴型机器人领域,人类到底需要 何种陪伴关系?如果人类能够容忍并适应具有性情的人类同伴,为什么不能 接纳一个"臭脾气"的智能人工物呢?

试想: 如果烤面包机的作用不仅仅是烤面包,还能产生情感并发挥社交 功能会怎样? 意大利设计师西蒙尼·雷鲍登戈 (Simone Rebaudengo) 通过 "布拉德(Brad)"烤面包机(一种连接到互联网的交互式设备)实现了这 一理念。当它检测到其他烤面包机的使用量增加时,会体现出焦虑的情绪,比 如采取各种滑稽动作、恶作剧来吸引注意力,或在社交媒体上表达悲伤(图

参见 Kelly Elizabeth Dobson, Machine Therapy, 2007, Massachusetts Institute of Technology, PhD dissertation.

3)。同样,詹姆斯·钱伯斯(James Chambers)设计的"健康收音机(Gesundheit Radio)"通过间歇性地释放灰尘以保持其最佳功能。该收音机的名称源自德语"身体健康"一词,其设计的独特点在于优先关注自身的"生存"需求(图4)。朴秀美(Soomi Park)设计的"尴尬机器人(Embarrassed Robots)"则进一步体现了这一趋势(图5):作为服务型机器人,除了做好"本职工作"之外,还具备"尴尬"这一人类的典型情感属性,能模仿人类脸红时的样子,以消除人类的不适感和陌生感。这一类反事实人工物,尽管看上去不可思议、不符常理,但经过物联网、大数据等技术赋能之后,具备了"类人又异人"的能动性,体现出了另类个性。



图 3 布拉德 (Brad) 烤面包机 1, 2007 年。



图 4 健康收音机 (Gesundheit Radio)², 2010年。



图 5 尴尬机器人(Embarrassed Robots)³,2017年。

¹ 参见 Simone Rebaudengo, "Brad," Available at: http://www.simonerebaudengo.com/project/addictedproducts, Accessed 29 December 2023.

² 参见 MoMA, "Floppy Legs Portable Hard Drive and Gesundheit Radio from the Attenborough Design Group project," Available at: https://www.moma.org/interactives/exhibitions/2011/talktome/objects/146367/, Accessed 29 December 2023.

³ 参见 Soomi Park, "Embarrassed Robots (2017)," Available at: https://soomipark.com/?portfolio=embarrassed-robots-2017/, Accessed 29 December 2023.

正如文学伦理学批评提出的"伦理选择"「视角,该视角强调面对复杂道 德问题时多重价值权衡的重要性。在文学文本中,角色的伦理选择不仅关乎 个人生存,也关乎社会结构的稳定性与变化性。同样,在智能人工物设计中,设 计者也需要在赋予人工物功能的同时,平衡技术优势、伦理价值和环境可持 续性之间的矛盾,体现对多方利益的综合考量。为了避免人类中心主义或隐 或显的主体优越感,以他者性为中心的设计伦理强调一种包容他者、尊重他 者的世界意识,即认识到我们(人类)处在由绝对他者构成的世界之中。在 他者世界做设计,设计师除了需要明确一种非人类中心主义的伦理立场之 外,还需要察觉并践行由德勒兹(Deleuze Gilles)和瓜塔里(Felix Guattari) 提出的后殖民主义决策: "成为每个人的少数派"(106)。此外,采取非人 类中心主义的道德立场势在必行的是: "我们"不是相对于他者的主体,我 们就是他者,我们要做自己的他者。

结论

本文以智能人工物的伦理地位与设计策略为核心议题,试图通过他者性 视角重新审视人与技术的关系。在智能技术深度嵌入社会生活的背景下,智 能人工物能否以及如何成为伦理共同体中的关怀对象,是本文探索的主要问 题。基于后人类主义与技术哲学的理论框架,本文提出了容错的诗意、换位 的愉悦与类人的同理心三种策略,旨在通过新兴设计实践构建一种超越传统 人类中心主义的以他者性为中心的伦理框架。

以他者性为核心的设计伦理,为关怀伦理的研究与实践提供了全新的维 度。这一视角突破了以人为中心的设计规范,将智能人工物从单一工具性存 在转化为具有伦理潜力的他者。这一理论拓展的核心,不仅在于重新界定了 道德共同体的范围,更在于强调了智能人工物作为"活性物"的伦理意义。通 过引入容错的诗意,设计得以超越传统功能导向,进入更为复杂的符号与诗 意层次;通过换位的愉悦,人机关系不再局限于单向的服务逻辑,而是通过 以物为中心的交互,激发对传统设计思维的反思;通过类人的同理心,则为 智能人工物注入了情感属性,拓展了人与非人类之间的互动可能性。

然而,本文在探索他者性设计伦理的过程中,仍然存在一定局限性。首 先,尽管提出了具体的设计策略,但实践层面的系统性分析尚显不足,现有 案例主要作为理论的佐证,而未能充分展现不同语境下的应用路径。此外,跨 文化背景对设计伦理的适应性与多样性的影响尚未展开,技术快速迭代所带 来的伦理复杂性也有待进一步探讨,这些问题为未来研究亦提供了启示。

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398; 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学 转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022):563-568等论文。

以他者性为核心的设计伦理,为应对当代技术与伦理挑战提供了一个开 放而包容的框架。在当前全球性危机与技术变革交织的背景下,它不仅是对 传统设计范式的反思与批判,更是一种探索未来伦理可能性的实践尝试。正 如法国哲学家列维纳斯所言,他者是永远无法穷尽的"未解之谜",在与他 者的共生关系中,我们需要既承认差异,又保留彼此的独立性,从而形成真 正意义上的共主体性。实践者在这一过程中,应当成为敏锐的伦理实践者,通 过重新定义人与非人类的关系,推动一种超越人类中心主义的新型生态逻辑。

本文旨在为关怀智能人工物的设计伦理开辟新的讨论空间,但其意义并 不仅限于当下。设计伦理的未来发展需要跨学科的共同努力, 无论是技术哲 学、伦理学,还是设计实践,都需要共同对"技术—伦理"关系展开更为深 入的对话。在这一过程中,他者性不仅是伦理思考的核心,也是激发设计想 象力的关键所在。本文的尝试希望能为这一领域提供基础性的启发,同时激 励更多关于设计如何塑造人与物共生未来的反思与实践。

Works Cited

- Borgmann, Albert. Technology and the Character of Contemporary Life: A Philosophical Inquiry. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 1984.
- Bostrom, Nick. Superintelligence: Paths, Dangers, Strategies. Oxford: Oxford UP, 2014.
- Caspe-Detzer, Ariel. Moral Constituency: A Psychogeography of Values. Washington: Antioch University Seattle, 2008.
- Cotton, Matthew. Ethics and Technology Assessment: A Participatory Approach. Berlin: Springer, 2014.
- Coulton, Paul and Joseph Galen Lindley. "More-Than Human Centred Design: Considering Other Things." The Design Journal 4 (2019): 463-481.
- Cruickshank, Leon and Nina Trivedi. "Beyond Human-Centred Design: Supporting a New Materiality in the Internet of Things, or How to Design When a Toaster is One of Your Users." The Design Journal 5 (2017): 561-576.
- Danaher, John and Henrik Skaug Sætra. "Mechanisms of Techno-Moral Change: A Taxonomy and Overview." Ethical Theory and Moral Practice 5 (2023): 763-784.
- Deleuze, Gilles and Felix Guattari. A Thousand Plateaus: Capitalism and Schizophrenia, translated by Brian Massumi. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota, 1987.
- DiSalvo, Carl. Adversarial Design. Cambridge: MIT Press, 2015.
- Dobson, Kelly Elizabeth. Machine Therapy. 2007. Massachusetts Institute of Technology, PhD dissertation.
- Dourish, Paul. "What We Talk About When We Talk About Context." Personal and Ubiquitous Computing 8 (2004): 19-30.
- Dunne, Anthony. Hertzian Tales: Electronic Products, Aesthetic Experience, and Critical Design.

- Cambridge: MIT press, 2008.
- Estrada, Daniel. "Human Supremacy as Posthuman Risk." The Journal of Sociotechnical Critique 1 (2020): 1-40.
- Fallman, Daniel. "A Different Way of Seeing: Albert Borgmann's Philosophy of Technology and Human-Computer Interaction." AI & Society 25 (2010): 53-60.
- Farooq, Umer and Jonathan Grudin. "Human-Computer Integration." Interactions 6 (2016): 26-32.
- Gloor, Lukas. "Altruists Should Prioritize Artificial Intelligence." Center on Long-Term Risk. 2016. Available at: https://longtermrisk.org/altruists-should-prioritize-artificial-intelligence/. Accessed 24 January 2025.
- Harman, Graham. Object-Oriented Ontology: A New Theory of Everything. London: Pelican Books, 2018.
- Hassenzahl, Marc et al., "Otherware: How to Best Interact with Autonomous Systems." Interactions 1 (2020): 54-57.
- Ihde, Don. Technology and the Lifeworld: From Garden to Earth. Bloomington: Indiana UP, 1990.
- Ishii, Hiroshi. "Tangible Bits: Beyond Pixels." Proceedings of the 2nd International Conference on Tangible and Embedded Interaction, New York: Association for Computing Machinery, 2008. xv-xxv.
- Kortenkamp, Katherine V. and Colleen F. Moore. "Ecocentrism and Anthropocentrism: Moral Reasoning about Ecological Commons Dilemmas." Journal of Environmental Psychology 3 (2001): 261-272.
- Kortuem, Gerd et al. "Smart Objects as Building Blocks for the Internet of Things." IEEE Internet Computing 1 (2010): 44-51.
- Lanza, Robert and Bob Berman. Biocentrism: How Life and Consciousness are the Keys to Understanding the True Nature of the Universe. Dallas: BenBella Books, 2010.
- Laschke, Matthias et al. "Otherware Needs Otherness: Understanding and Designing Artificial Counterparts." Proceedings of the 11th Nordic Conference on Human-Computer Interaction: Shaping Experiences, Shaping Society, Tallinn: Association for Computing Machinery, 2020. 1-4.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.]

- Regan, Tom. "The Case for Animal Rights." *Animal Rights and Human Obligations*, edited by Tom Regan and Peter Singer. Saddle River: Prentice Hall, 1976.
- Roco, Mihail C. and William Sims Bainbridge. "Converging Technologies for Improving Human Performance: Integrating from the Nanoscale." *Journal of Nanoparticle Research* 4 (2002): 281-295.
- Rolston, Holmes. Environmental Ethics. Philadelphia: Temple UP, 1988.
- Sterne, Jonathan. "The MP3 as Cultural Artifact." New Media & Society 5 (2006): 825-842.
- Stiegler, Bernard. *Technics and Time 1: The Fault of Epimetheus*. Redwood City: Stanford UP, 1998.
- Suchman, Mark C. "The Contract as Social Artifact." Law & Society Review 1 (2003): 91-142.
- Taylor, Paul W. Respect for Nature: A Theory of Environmental Ethics. New Jersey: Princeton UP, 2011.
- Tomasik, Brian. "Risks of Astronomical Future Suffering." *Center on Long-Term Risk.* 2015. Available at: https://longtermrisk.org/risks-of-astronomical-future-suffering/. Accessed 24 January 2025.
- Torrance, Steve. "Ethics and Consciousness in Artificial Agents." AI & Society 22 (2008): 495-521.
- Verbeek, Peter-Paul. Moralizing Technology: Understanding and Designing the Morality of Things. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 2011.
- Wakkary, Ron. *Things We Could Design: For More Than Human-Centered Worlds*. Cambridge: MIT Press, 2021.
- Wakkary, Ron et al. "Two Years or More of Co-speculation: Polylogues of Philosophers, Designers, and a Tilting Bowl." *ACM Transactions on Computer-Human Interaction* 5 (2022): 1-44.
- —. "Philosophers Living with the Tilting Bowl." Proceedings of the 2018 CHI Conference on Human Factors in Computing Systems, Montreal: Association for Computing Machinery, 2018.
 1-12.
- 王海明: "论道德共同体", 《中国人民大学学报》2 (2006): 70-76。
- [Wang Haiming. "On Moral Community." *Journal of Renmin University of China* 2 (2006): 70-76.]
- Willis, Anne-Marie. "Ontological Designing." Design Philosophy Papers 2 (2006): 69-92.
- 于雪: 《机体哲学视野中的人机关系》。北京: 科学出版社, 2022年。
- [Yu Xue. Human-Machine Relationship in the Perspective of Organism Philosophy. Beijing: Science Press, 2022.]
- 张黎: "人类世的设计理想与伦理: 非人类中心主义与物导向设计",《装饰》1 (2021): 27-31。
- [Zhang Li. "Design Ideals and Ethics in the Anthropocene: Non-Anthropocentrism and Object-Oriented Design." ZHUANGSHI 1 (2021): 27-31.]

Ethical Identities in Contemporary Thai Literature: A Study of S.E.A. Write Award Works in 21st Century

Xue Huayu & Parichart Kluensuwan

Abstract: This article investigates the ethical dimensions embedded in contemporary Thai literature, a topic that has received limited attention from the ethics research community. Focusing on 24 works awarded the Southeast Asian Write Award (S.E.A. Write Award) in 21st century, the study employs a framework of ethical literary criticism to analyze the ethical identities of characters within these works. The analysis identifies three key ethical facets: the human experience in society, the interplay between human and animal factors, and the implications of scientific choices. These dimensions illuminate the complex ethical dilemmas faced by individuals in modern Thailand. Furthermore, the article examines the dual identities of Thai and Chinese characters, enriching the discourse on cultural conflicts. The findings reveal that these awarded novels not only convey profound ethical teachings characteristic of Thai literature but also provide valuable insights for advancing research in ethical literary criticism.

Keywords: ethical literary criticism; S.E.A. Write Award; ethical identity; Thai literature

Authors: Xue Huayu is a Ph.D. student of Semiotics and Cultural Studies, Shinawatra University (Pathum Thani 12160, Thailand). Her main research interests include English and American literature, ethical literary criticism, and semiotic study of films. She has been awarded a scholarship under China Scholarship Council (CSC) (Email: huayuxue2022@163.com). Parichart Kluensuwan, Assistant Professor at Shinawatra University (Pathum Thani 12160, Thailand). Her main research interests include Second language acquisition, English writing development, and Cultural studies (Email: Parichart.k@siu.ac.th).

标题:泰国现代文学中的伦理身份研究——21 世纪东盟文学奖作品为例 内容摘要:在21世纪,泰国文学尽管没有受到伦理研究学界的广泛关注,其 中蕴藏的伦理教诲意义却与文学伦理学批评的核心要义有异曲同工之处。本 文以文学伦理学批评理论为指导,以21世纪24部获得"东盟文学奖"的作 品为研究对象, 重点分析泰国现代文学作品中人物的伦理身份。通过对"自 然人""动物人""科学人"三种伦理身份的特别关注,本文重点阐释了泰 国文学中的具有双重族裔身份的在泰华人,陷入人性与兽性伦理选择的人, 以及经过科学选择的克隆人三种人物形象,揭示当代泰国人面临的复杂伦理 困境。此外,本文还探讨了在泰华裔的双重身份,丰富了关于两国文化冲突 的论述。泰国"东盟文学奖"作品不仅体现了泰国文学深厚且独具一格的伦 理教诲特性,其研究还有望为文学伦理学批评研究开拓研究思路,拓宽研究 领域。

关键词: 文学伦理学批评; 东盟文学奖; 伦理身份; 泰国文学

作者简介: 薛话雨, 泰国西那瓦大学博士研究生, 研究方向为符号学、外国 文学: 帕里查特·克伦苏万, 泰国西那瓦大学助理教授, 研究方向为二语 习得、英语写作发展和文化研究。本文为国家留学基金委"国际区域问题 研究及外语高层次人才培养项目(国别与区域研究人才)"【项目批号: 202206070024】阶段性成果。

Ethical literary criticism began to emerge in the Chinese academic community in the early 21st century. In 2004, Chinese scholar Nie Zhenzhao first proposed methodology of ethical literary criticism in his article "Ethical Literary Criticism: New Exploration of Literary Criticism Methods." This is a critical method that reads, analyzes and interprets literature from an ethical perspective, in which Nie "attempts to see the relations between literature and society, the relations between authors and works, and the relations between readers and literary works from an ethical perspective" (Nie and Shang 5). After 20 years of vigorous advocacy and practice by Chinese and foreign scholars, ethical literary criticism has constructed a complete theoretical system, and its influence has gradually expanded internationally. Its reinterpretation of British and American classics has refreshed the traditional cognition of scholars in literary research, set off a new trend, and represented a new trend in literary criticism research.

The Southeast Asian Write Award (S.E.A. Write Award) was established in 1979 and is currently the largest regional literary award in Southeast Asia. As the founding country of the S.E.A. Write Award, the influence of this literary award in the Thai literary world far exceeds that of other member countries, and is known as the "weather vane of Thai literature." Dhanate Vespada, a contemporary scholar who has served as a member of the S.E.A.Write Award jury for nearly 20 years, pointed out that "the S.E.A.Write Award is almost dominant in Thai literature. It is almost hard to imagine that there has been any work—an important work that has not been selected to compete for the S.E.A. Write Award" (Xiong 139). S.E.A. Write Award had three major purposes at the beginning of its establishment, and used them as the basic criteria for selection, namely "humanitarianism, creativity, and controversy." "Humanitarianism" is ranked first. The so-called "humanitarianism" is to pay attention to the lifestyle, spiritual realm and ideological connotation of the people living on this land, and these elements are closely related to the ethical teaching attributes of literature. Literature not only has aesthetic value, but also bears social functions in terms of ethics and morality. Thailand's literary tradition has long had the slogans of "art for life" and "literature for the people." Even though it has been controversial among some writers and critics, the basic trend of literature being rooted in reality and playing a role in reality has not changed. Unlike the gradual revival and revitalization of the literary world brought about by the gradual relaxation of the domestic political atmosphere in Thailand in the first 20 years, the S.E.A. Write Award in the second 20 years, in the context of economic disasters and scarred society after the bursting of the prosperous bubble, has shown strong social criticism and strong ethical attributes. Since the beginning of the 21st century, as the host country, Thailand has won a total of 24 works so far. The specific winning works are shown in the appendix.

There are three points for the novelty of the research. Firstly, the approach used here, ethical literary criticism, is novel in the sense that it is specific application to Thai literature. And with its focus on the moral aspects of literature, the approach can provide unique perspectives, compared to traditional literary analysis methods. This can illuminate aspects of Thai literature that might be overlooked. Secondly, due to the dynamic shift of the current cultural, economic, political contexts that contribute to changes and problems related to ethical aspect of Thai culture embedded in Thai literature. Thirdly, as a Chinese scholar, the author can provide the reflection on ethical issues in Thai literary from a foreign critical lens. This allows readers to see how Thai culture presents itself to foreigners, which can be similar to or different from the writers' and Thais' understanding, especially when dealing with ethical matters. These three reasons make it insightful and useful to apply ethical literary approach to examine perspectives of contemporary Thai literature. It is also expected to prove the feasibility and particularity of studying Thai literature from the perspective of ethical literary criticism, and expand the applicable research field of ethical literary criticism.

1. Ethical Identity of Human in Society

According to Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism focuses on the analysis of the characters' ethical identities" because "almost all ethical issues are often related

to ethical identities" ("Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms" 21). In the background of Thailand in 21st century, many characters in modern Thai literature display some diverse ethical identities that are different from those that are typical in other works. For example, Thai-Chinese, with dual ethnic identity, is always the special kind of characters in S.E.A Write works.

Why we choose Thai-Chinese as the study focus of human in society? Firstly, one of the most important literatures in Thailand is Thai-Chinese literature. It appears to the researcher that nearly all of Thai literary novels are deeply influenced by foreign culture. Chinese culture is one of the most important cultures that collide and integrate with Thai culture. Historical records show that "from the Taksin to the early Bangkok period (up to Rama V), Thailand maintained close trade relationships with China" (Chaloemtiarana 161). Secondly, with the increase of the number of Chinese in Thailand, the problem of ethical identity has become more and more apparent. Many Thai-Chinese are afraid of falling into spiritual dilemma of being rootless and without source, which reflects the deep anxiety of Thai-Chinese writers in the context of the world's multicultural environment. There are two S.E.A Write works in 21st century written from the perspective of Thai Chinese, telling the ethical anxiety and dilemma of Thai Chinese from the perspective of collective and individual, in other words, from the perspective of Thai-Chinese family and Thai-Chinese females, in the context of the new century.

1.1 Thai-Chinese Family

One of the S.E.A Write literatures on the ethical identities of Thai-Chinese is the 2018 winner of the novel Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat¹ by Veeraporn Nitiprapha, which traces family memories through the perspectives of grandmother Si, grandchildren Dao and the black cat. Every member of the immigrant family strives to find their roots, or to find an important fulcrum that can support their lives, and they all have their own beliefs and principles. The five children of the immigrant family have always struggled, torn and integrated in their original families, individual emotions and identity. This is the second time that Veeraporn Nitiprapha has won the S.E.A. Write Award. She has won the award once in 2015 for The Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth, striving to make new breakthroughs in creative themes and artistic forms. There are two creative points in her second awarded work to show the dilemma of ethical identities of Thai-Chinese family.

Firstly, the author uses the perspective of magical realism to coldly see through

See Veeraporn Nitiprapha, Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat, translated by Kong Rithdee, Bangkok: River Books, 2022.

the various joys and sorrows of a Chinese family. This style can be seen from the title clearly. "Black Rose Cat," partly named for "the twirl of overlapping patterns on its back, cascading from jet black to the shade of glowing particles of sand, each hue seeping into one another as if painted by watercolours" (Nitiprapha, Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat 34). This is a fitting analogy for the structure of the book, whose chapters—ringed with foreshadowings—meld like ripples of rain in water. This novel begins slowly with the pace of a tropical afternoon when a boy named Dao explores "a melange of tattered, warped memories" (Nitiprapha, Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat 16), ones he thinks perhaps were never his own but were given to him by someone else. His world is one of stories told to him by a grandmother who has disappeared from a house where he lives with his mother, a woman whose presence is spectral. Only when he enters the Rain Room does he ever see anyone else, a girl within a large mirror who looks oddly familiar to this boy who has never left his house and has never met a stranger. Dao is a vessel for memories. He's the last of what was meant to be a family dynasty, begun by Tong, a man from China whose body is covered with "black freckles like lightless stars...burnt-out constellations" (Nitiprapha, Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat 21). Tong's success in his adopted country makes it possible for him to buy the big house near a pond covered with pink lotus blossoms, next to a forest of acacia trees that fill the air with blankets of yellow pollen. Through his house Tong's children come and go, leaving only their stories behind. Their stories float through the house and into Dao's mind like curls of smoke, defying linear rules of time or place. This writing methods makes readers switch between sentimentalism and rationalism, so that readers have a further awareness and alertness to the illusion beyond the subjective consciousness.

Secondly, the author attempts to think about individual life in the context of overall history, and blending the broken family into broken history. Although the novel tells the story of a Chinese immigrant family, it observes national history, family history, and personal history from a traditional and unique perspective. From the time of King Rama VI (1910-1925) to King Rama IX (1946-2016), this immigrant family rises and falls with the tide of history. The patriarch of the family, the grandfather of Dao, "leads his family through World War II, apocalyptic flood, anti-Chinese riots, and era-defining rebellions and coups. His children and grandchildren live on through the giddy years of the Vietnam War and Thailand's bloodied politics of the 1970s" (Nitiprapha, Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat 10). The image of the Chinese created in this novel is also a concentrated reflection of the various changes in the image of the Chinese in Thai literature as it

moves into the new century, and a reflection of the history of that period.

The novel Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat talks about memories of memories. The author describes, in moving detail, Great-Grandpa Tong's feelings of being unmoored, yearning for his ancestral homeland while building a life in his adopted country. The dilemma of ethical identity of Thai-Chinese talked about in the story is a microcosm of the living conditions of Chinese people in Thailand.

1.2 Thai-Chinese Females

The other work in the S.E.A Write literature on the ethical problems of Thai-Chinese is the 2023 award-winning work Family Comes First, which involves 11 short stories related to Thai Chinese females. The author is Narispong Rakwattananon, a young Thai man of Hakka and Cantonese descent, who tells the various ethical issues caused by the dual ethical identities of Chinese in Thailand.

One of ethical problems is about identity anxiety of Chinese. For example, in the story "The Fallen Words," a son witnessed Chinese words slowly floating out of his mother's body one by one, and the fallen words gradually disappeared from her memory. This worry about the loss of Chinese culture reflects the panic and confusion of the gradually blurred ethical identity of Chinese in Thailand in the process of cultural integration. As the author himself, who also has a dual identity of Chinese and Thai, he also deliberately used paratexts (such as the use of colors and Chinese calligraphy illustrations) in his creation to deepen the reader's impression. This is undoubtedly a response to the identity anxiety of Chinese in Thailand.

Another ethical problem is about the oppression under Chinese traditional culture reflected in Family Comes First. In several short stories, the author tells how the traditional Chinese culture of favoring sons over daughters oppresses women in the new era when new and old customs collide. For example, in "Birth Mothers," when the daughter-in-law is pregnant, the child seems to belong not only to her and her husband, but also to her mother-in-law, blurring the boundaries of the real biological mother; for example, in "Tears Flow Like Waterfalls," a sister devotes her life to taking care of a mother, but the mother can't remember her, but keeps calling for her brother who unfortunately disappeared in the waterfall many years ago, and in "My Dear Sister," the brother becomes the object of the sister's resentment because he constantly receives praise, warmth and love from his family, while the sister is ignored in her own home. Although the women in Narispong Rakwattananon's works have been abroad for many years, they are still deeply bound by traditional Chinese feudal ideas. Like a kite, they can neither get rid of

See Narisapongse Rakwattananont, Family Comes First, Bangkok: Salmon Books, 2021.

the influence of their inherent cultural and ethical identity, nor integrate into the unfamiliar local culture, and are in a state of blurred and chaotic ethical identity. At the same time, because most immigrants have been away from China for a long time, they also show cultural lag and discontinuity that does not match the speed of Chinese social development.

Professor Nie said, "the task of literature, accordingly, is to depict how ethical relationships and moral order undergo changes, examine their consequences, and ultimately provide experience and lessons emerging from human life for the progress of human civilization" ("Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 190). In the works of the S.E.A. Write Award, it is obvious to see the ethical dilemma of natural human in the changing social ethical environment. The complex ethical dilemma of characters in modern Thai literature, especially in the works of the S.E.A. Write Award, are partly reflected in the dual identities born in immigrant families. It is with different ethical identities that these characters in Thai literary works make different ethical choices, showing the distinctive ethical characteristics of Thai literature in the new century and providing readers experience and lessons.

2. Sphinx Factor in Human and Animal

Apart from the discussion on ethnic ethical identities, there are endless works containing animal elements in S.E.A. works in 21st century. That writers connect animals with human society, reflecting the exploration and attention to the human and animal nature of people in modern society.

According to Nie Zhenzhao, the evolution of human civilization experiences three stages of natural selection, ethical selection and scientific selection. Biological selection is the first decisive step in the transition from ape to man, but what truly differentiates human beings from animals is the second step—ethical selection.¹ This is the three-stage theory of human civilization. Similarly, Thai writers use different ways to depicts the image of human beings as a kind of animals to remind people of the difference of animal and human beings. There are three different types of S.E.A. works about animal and human beings.

2.1 Animal Factors in Human

Many postmodern works try to use animals as metaphors for human society, reflecting the contradictions and conflicts between the human and animal factors in modern society under the background of the new era.

For example, Jadet Kamjorndet's That Night of the Year of the Tiger and

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

Other Animal Stories¹, which won the award in 2020, is also the author's second award. The last winning work was The Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee in 2011. After nine years, Jadet Kamjorndet's artistic style has also changed. "That Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories" combines the characteristics of animals and humans, and sees through the animality of humans and the humanity of animals. At the same time, the author also tries to challenge traditional writing techniques, seeking breakthroughs in the plot, number of characters and length of short stories, and also uses animals as metaphors to mock the lifestyle, thinking mode and values of the entire society.

Another example is Veeraporn Nitiprapha's The Blind Earthworms in the Labvrinth,² which won the award in 2015, is a novel based on a love triangle story. It compares young people struggling with their inner confusion to earthworms looking for a way out in a winding maze. The author's peculiar narrative style makes readers feel like it is real and the truth may exist in many forms. The multiple narrative techniques of these two novels have certain literary historical significance, especially the weakening of the omniscient perspective, which has changed the traditional narrative tradition in the past and foreshadowed the arrival of individual narrative in a relatively three-dimensional posture. The strengthening of individual narrative in literature reflects the enhancement of individual significance.

The third example is the short story collection *The Unorthodox Lion*³, which won the award in 2017, was written by Jidanun Lueangpiansamut, the youngest writer to win the S.E.A. Write Award that year. This work creates an imaginary world, and the content reflects people's various choices about lifestyles, raising questions from different angles, including the good and evil of human nature, the fairness of the regime, authoritarianism, etc., challenging readers' inherent ideas. At the same time, the author uses metaphorical narrative strategies to embed traditional Thai folk tales that are familiar to readers into the novel, and also fictionalizes characters and scenes that do not exist in the Thai social context. The narrative technique is avant-garde and the language is concise and profound.

2.2 Human Factors in Animals

There are also works that compare the animal world to human society, showing disappointment in human society. For example, the magical realist work-the novel

See Jadet Kamjorndet, That Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories, Bangkok: Pajonphai Publishing, 2020.

See Veeraporn Nitiprapha, The Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth, translated by Kong Rithdee, Bangkok: River Books, 2018.

See Jidanun Lueangpiansamu, The Unorthodox Lion, Bangkok: Words Publishing, 2022.

The Story of Defun by Siriworn Kaewkan¹, which won the award in 2021. This work tells the legend of a family that makes a living by killing tigers on the southern Andaman coast. About 112 years ago, since Defun's great-grandfather, they began to settle in the rich forest and gradually formed a small tribe called "Rainforest Tribe," but by Defun's generation, they no longer live in their hometown, and Defun has lost his memory. He only roams in the forest with tigers all day long. Later, Defun returned to his hometown, only to find that it had become cold and cruel. Everything was caused by the power struggle and the law of the jungle within the tribe. The tribe was dispersed and withered in the constant slaughter, and Defun also suffered a mental breakdown. After a hundred years of history, no one remembered the legendary family of the past, and no one even dared to be sure that this brave and fearless family had ever existed. This novel construct a distorted and painful history with magical realism, and awakens the reader's memory of history with a heavy and calm brushstroke. The cruelty and coldness of human society further highlights the simplicity and humanity of the animal world.

2.3 Half-human and Half-animal

There is a Thai writer portrayed a half-beast, half-human figure — the dwarf to show the reality of dreams and the illusion of reality in their stories, and explore the deep psychological space of personality.

Awarded in 2012, Wipas Srithong's novel *The Dwarf*² is about a young man named Krerk, who is a drop-out medical student, just like the author. One day when the years were peaceful, Krerk had a nightmare. In the dream, he wanted to catch people to play in his building. His target was not wide, that is, people with short stature. He treated the captured dwarf as a guest of honor and did not hurt the dwarf. The only thing he did was to deprive the dwarf of his freedom. Krerk's good friend from school days, Piqi, a young man who had just lost his wife, and Nud, a young female artist, also participated in this incident. The three young people tried to find the meaning that was beneficial to themselves from the dwarf. Although the dwarf who was kept in captivity had good living conditions, he still longed for his own freedom.

This novel has a novel concept. It concerns the deep psychological space of modern people through the construction of extreme stories. In the spiritual dilemma of boredom, loneliness, solitude, confusion and despair, individuals yearn for interpersonal communication, spiritual communication and the establishment of self-worth, but finally find a solution by imprisoning others in dreams. Even if it is extremely hypocritical on the surface and provides the best treatment for the

See Siriworn Kaewkan, The Story of Defun, Bangkok: Pajonphai Publishing, 2021.

See Wipas Srithong, The Dwarf, Bangkok: SM-Thai Publishing House, 2020.

prisoners, it still cannot cover up the extremely alienated and inhuman behavior of controlling others, as well as the naked violence and trampling in modern interpersonal relationships. Because of the convenience of bullying the weak and the unsuppressed evil in human nature, the most precious qualities and natural rights of the individual have disappeared, that is, freedom. The most absurd thing is that people with human form are taken over by animal factor, while dwarfs who are regarded as animals still retain their human factors.

Professor Nie uses the concept of "Sphinx factor" to analysis this kind of halfbeast, half-human figure. "The feature of the Sphinx's combination of a human head and an animal body implies that the most important feature of a human image lies in its head, which stands for the reason of human beings emerging in the evolutionary process. It also points to the fact that human beings evolved from animals retaining features common to animals. With this in mind, I name this feature the 'Sphinx factor.' It is composed of the human factor and the animal factor. The human factor refers to ethical consciousness embodied by the human head, which results from human being's biological selection in the evolution from savagery to civilization; while the animal factor suggests human beings' animal instinct mainly under the influence of primitive desires" (Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection" 388). The author chose the dwarf as the main character, like the Sphinx, wandering between humanity and animality, reflecting the mental state of half-human and half-beast in modern society. In the end, the reader asks, is this a dream or reality, which is also a question worth pondering.

According to the three-stage theory of human civilization, from the source, the historical starting point of human civilization began in the natural selection stage, developed through the ethical selection stage, and finally entered the scientific selection stage and ended. The three stages of natural selection, ethical selection, and scientific selection have an inherent logical connection and are a whole, but they are different in nature and mission. Natural selection uses evolution to solve the problem of human form, ethical selection is using teaching to solve the problem of human essence, and scientific selection is using technology to solve the problem of human scientificization. Humans emerged in the process of evolution and are new species selected by nature. The biggest feature of the newly emerged humans is that they are completely different from other animals in form, but they are no different from other animals in essence. They are in uncivilized ignorance, so they need to develop towards civilization through ethical selection. About the way to

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

civilization, Thai writers try to give their own answers, which is also in ethical way.

3. Human by Scientific Choice

While advocating humanism, the S.E.A. Write Award also encourages innovation and controversy. In the new era, in addition to the emergence of many works on realistic themes, new themes are also emerging in Thailand. Among them, it is worth mentioning that the rise of science fiction themes shows the ethical choices of mankind between technology and morality and religion.

Regarding the concepts of "scientific selection" and "human by scientific choice," Nie Zhenzhao explained in a recent interview, clarifying the difference between "scientific selection" as a stage of human development and "scientific choice" that constitutes this stage. He used cloning as an example to explain: "Cloning is the result of scientific choice, but it does not belong to the scientific choice of the scientific selection stage" (Liu and Nie 15). Human Cloning tells the story of "human by scientific choice."

The novel Human Cloning by Wimon Sainimnuan, which won the award in 2000, is the first science fiction work in the S.E.A. Write Award. The Original name "Amata" is a Pali word meaning "immortal," "deathless." This word (amata, skt. amrta) denotes in classical Indian mythology a drink that implies immortality. It was used by the Buddha in his first sermon (Dhammacakkappavattana-sutta) to describe the goal of his teachings, the way to Nirvana: "Listen! Immortality is found" (Schlieter 189). The novel describes a business tycoon, Prommin, who is obsessed with having several clones of himself, who will serve as organ donors for his aging tycoon. A Western scientist, Dr. Spencer, helps him realize this plan. He personally raises one of the clones, Qi Wan, as a father, and tells him that he is a clone when he reaches adulthood, and takes away his various organs. The clone Qi Wan is forced to accept. But another escaped "clone brother," a devout Buddhist named Aolachun, believes that the heart is the organ of consciousness. In order to avenge Prommin, he persuades Dr. Spencer and Prommin not to take away the clone Qi Wan's individual organs, but to transplant Prommin's brain into his own body to save the clone Qi Wan. Dr. Spencer does so; Prommin's brain is transplanted into Aolachun's body, and Qi Wan gets his own complete body. After the operation, Prommin is reborn, and Aolachun is sacrificed. The book focuses on two major issues: religion and science, ethics and science.

3.1 Science and Religion

See Wimon Sainimnuan, Human Cloning, translated by Gao Shurong and Fang Ying, Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2002.

As a Buddhist country where all the people believe in Buddhism, it is natural that certain Buddhist doctrines are contained in Thai literary works. When scientists appear, the conflict between Buddhist doctrines and technology is inevitable. In the book Human Cloning, the author uses a lot of debates to show the conflict between Buddhism and science. As pointed out in the announcement of the Southeast Asian Literature and Art Selection Committee: "It adopts the form of debate between the secular and religious in the East" (Sainimnuan 198). This debate is quite fierce and sharp, and it is a tit-for-tat rebuttal. Although there are many debates, it is not boring and empty preaching, but full of wit and humor, with no lack of examples and humor, vivid and sharp, and logical reasoning. It makes people read it with interest, and it does not feel monotonous and empty, and it is boring. The debate between the protagonist Prommin and the clone Aolachun and Professor Spencer, as well as Prommin's several press conferences are all examples of debates, and they all have a moving effect. For example, topics such as the functions of the heart and brain, whether thoughts and emotions can be regenerated, rebirth and immortality are all areas where Buddhist teachings are completely different from scientific research.

3.2. Ethics and Science

The issue of human cloning can be said to be a topic at the forefront of science. The author took the lead in conducting an in-depth discussion of it in the novel, and even some specific technical issues were described in detail. The novel analyzes and describes the changes and developments in the thoughts and feelings of the cloned people in a profound and vivid way, thus bringing readers into the emotional world of a 22-year-old cloned person. All these show that the author is quite keen on the future development of mankind, the latest scientific and technological achievements, and the deep exploration of human nature. As Professor Nie Zhenzhao said, "under the influence of science, everything is undergoing tremendous changes, whether it is literary creation or literary research" ("The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies" 565). It can be seen that Thai writers adapt to the development of the scientific era and provide their own thinking.

In addition, the author combines the exploration of this new topic with the exposure and criticism of the darkness of reality. The concern with common people of Thai writers is stated by a scholar in International P.E.N. Thailand Centre in the book Thai P.E.N. Anthology: Short Stories and Poems of Social Consciousness: "the rich Western-educated protagonist has had to take leave (of) the literary stage to make way for the neglected school-teacher, the village doctor, the povertystricken farmer and the underprivileged of society" (12). It is worth mentioning that this kind of concern is not a modern phenomenon. As early as the 1970s, the Thai academic community voiced the call for "'literature for life' (wannakham phuea chiwit), which they defined as literature that served the interests of the common people and promoted social justice and progress in the hope of changing the society for the better" (Limapichart 41). Thai writers have always recognized and practiced the ethical educational function of literature and its role in reflecting social reality. The author makes readers feel that the issue of human cloning is not a problem in the distant future, but an imminent problem that urgently needs to be seriously considered and properly solved. This is the key to the strong awakening of the work, and it is also the reason why the work has far-reaching significance and great value.

This work shows the contradiction between religious beliefs and science and technology, the conflict between modern morality and primitive barbarism, and also writes about the interweaving of love and hate, the interweaving of good and evil human nature, the confrontation between persistence and compromise, the opposition between freedom and confinement, etc. The characters are fighting fiercely in the novel from body to mind. Human Cloning maps the possible contradictions in the future into the characters of the novel, cleverly satirizing social chaos, constructing the story in a meticulous way, with more three-dimensional characters, and the story and characters fit closely. Deep descriptions and discussions are always unforgettable. Good works always pursue certain common issues, such as the texture of society and the complexity of human nature, such as how to be immortal and what is eternal. However, this work uses a fantastic conception to integrate humanistic thinking with technological elements, and presents the longing imagination in a transcendental posture, depicting the spiritual choices made by human beings in the new century surrounded by science and technology. However, Prommin's selfish choice made by using high technology will inevitably bring emotional tearing and intense pain. The author is obviously skeptical about this, so he conveys deep self-doubt and shock in the clone Qi Wan. In science fiction imagination, whether people can get real sustenance and enlightenment from utopia, and whether they can be sublimated in the future, these are all questions raised by the author in a wonderful science fiction form. In the view of literary ethics criticism, "text has three basic forms: brain text, material text and electronic (digital) text," and "brain text" is a special biological form unique to the human body, which is the perception and understanding of things stored in the form of memory by the human brain. Although Prommin has the biological form of natural selection and ethical selection, the animal factor controls the human factor and eventually leads to destruction. As a product of scientific

See Nie Zhenzhao, Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, Beijing: Peking University Press, 2014, 270.

selection, the clone Aolachun has the ethical consciousness to distinguish between good and evil after possessing the biological brain text unique to humans, and finally becomes a true Buddhist.

The anthropologist Herbert Phillips argued that Thai writers can be "the most sensitive, reflective, articulate...members of Thai society" (3). In the face of increasingly complex social reality, Thai writers in the new century use their sensitive hearts to see through social reality, and use new perspectives and new themes to travel in the space of surrealism and imagination. As Nagavajara said, "The problems besetting contemporary Thai society are so complex as to defy any straightforward, black-and-white representation" (74). How should modern Thais choose between ideals and reality, technology and human relations, desire and humanity? Thai writers are trying to give their own answers.

Conclusion

In conclusion, Thai literature in the new century shows a rich blend of national identity and ethical complexity. Contemporary works are increasingly exploring themes like science fiction and moral choices, reflecting the significant changes in society. Among the characters of Thai literary works, whether it is the Thai Chinese with multiple identities, the half-human, half-beast Thai lower-class people, or the new-age Thais with a high-technological and religious background, they all embody strong ethical characteristics. Thai writers in new century express their great concern for ethical issues in Thailand. Although the study of ethical literary criticism in Thai literature is still developing, through the analysis with ethical literary criticism, it has the potential to enhance our understanding of these stories and their broader relevance to Southeast Asian literature. It is with the hope that this exploration will inspire future writers to engage with ethical questions, contributing to a more thoughtful and meaningful literary tradition.

Works Cited

Chaloemtiarana, Thak. Read till It Shatters: Nationalism and Identity in Modern Thai Literature. Canberra: ANU Press, 2018.

Phillips, Herbert P. et al. Modern Thai Literature: With an Ethnographic Interpretation. Honolulu: U of Hawaii P, 1987.

International P.E.N. Thailand Centre. Thai P.E.N. Anthology: Short Stories and Poems of Social Consciousness. Bangkok: International P.E.N. Thailand Centre, 1984.

ศิริวร แก้วกาญจน์. เดฟัน เรื่องเล่าของตระกลคนเฆี่ยนเสือจากไทรบรี. กรงเทพมหานคร: ผจญภัย, 2564. [Kaewkan, Siriworn. The Story of Defun. Bangkok: Pajonphai Publishing, 2021.]

- จเด็จ กำจรเดช. คืนปีเสือ : และเรื่องเล่าของสัตว์อื่นๆ. กรงเทพมหานคร: สำนักพิมพ์ผจฌภัย, 2563.
- [Kamjorndet, Jadet. That Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories. Bangkok: Pajonphai Publishing, 2020.]
- Limapichart, Thanapol. "Literature for Life: The Context and Conditions of Its Emergence in Thailand, 1940s-50s." Asiatic 2 (2011): 40-60.
- 刘红卫、聂珍钊: "从伦理选择到科学选择的理论思考——聂珍钊教授访谈录",《广东 外语外贸大学学报》1(2022): 5-26+157。
- [Liu Hongwei and Nie Zhenzhao. "Theoretical Consideration from Ethical Selection to Scientific Selection: Interviewing Professor Nie Zhenzhao." Journal of Guangdong University of Foreign Studies 1 (2022): 5-26+157.]
- จิดานันท์ เหลืองเพียรสมท. สิงโตนอกคอก. กรงเทพมหานคร: แพรวสำนักพิมพ์, 2565.
- [Lueangpiansamut, Jidanun. The Unorthodox Lion. Bangkok: Words Publishing, 2022.]
- Nagavajara, Chetana. "The Conciliatory Rebels: Aspects of Contemporary Thai Literature." Manusya: Journal of Humanities 1 (1998): 72-87.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010):12-22。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- --: "人文研究的科学转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- Nie Zhenzhao and Shang Biwu. "Ethical literary criticism: East and West." Arcadia 1 (2015): 4-8.
- Nitiprapha, Veeraporn. Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat, translated by Kong Rithdee. Bangkok: River Books, 2022.
- —. The Blind Earthworm in the Labyrinth, translated by Kong Rithdee. Bangkok: River Books, 2018.
- นริศพงศ์ รักวัฒนานนท์. ด้วยรักและผพัง. กรงเทพมหานคร: สำนักพิมพ์แซลมอน, 2564.
- [Rakwattananont, Narisapongse. Family Comes First. Bangkok: Salmon Books, 2021.]
- Schlieter, Jens. "Some Observations on Buddhist Thoughts on Human Cloning." Cross-Cultural Issues in Bioethics: The Example of Human Cloning, edited by Heiner Roetz. New York: Rodopi, 2006. 179-202.
- 维蒙•赛尼暖:《克隆人》,高树榕、房英译。上海:上海译文出版社,2002年。

[Sainimnuan, Wimon. *Human Cloning*, translated by Gao Shurong and Fang Ying. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2002.]

วิภาส ศรีทอง. คนแคระ. กรุงเทพมหานคร: สำนักพิมพ์สมมติ, 2563.

[Srithong, Wipas. The Dwarf. Bangkok: SM-Thai Publishing House, 2020.]

熊燃: "东盟文学奖与泰国当代文学的创新",《北大南亚东南亚研究》第1卷,姜景奎编。 北京:中国青年出版社,2013年,第132-141页。

[Xiong Ran. "S.E.A. Write Award and the Innovation of Contemporary Thai Literature." *The Peking University South and South-East Asian Studies-I*, edited by Jiang Jingkui. Beijing: China Youth Publishing Group, 2013. 132-141.]

Appendix: (English Translation)

YearAuthorWork2000Wimon SainimnuanHuman Cloning2001Chokchai BunditSouvenir From Faraway Land2002Prabda YoonPen in Parentheses2003Duanwad PimwanaChangsamran2004Rewat PhanpipatReminiscence of the River2005Binlah SonkalagiriPrincess2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawiniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace2023Narisapongse RakwattananontFamily Comes First	Appendix. (English Translation)		
2001Chokchai BunditSouvenir From Faraway Land2002Prabda YoonPen in Parentheses2003Duanwad PimwanaChangsamran2004Rewat PhanpipatReminiscence of the River2005Binlah SonkalagiriPrincess2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	Year	Author	Work
2002Prabda YoonPen in Parentheses2003Duanwad PimwanaChangsamran2004Rewat PhanpipatReminiscence of the River2005Binlah SonkalagiriPrincess2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2000	Wimon Sainimnuan	Human Cloning
2003Duanwad PimwanaChangsamran2004Rewat PhanpipatReminiscence of the River2005Binlah SonkalagiriPrincess2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2001	Chokchai Bundit	Souvenir From Faraway Land
2004 Rewat Phanpipat Reminiscence of the River 2005 Binlah Sonkalagiri Princess 2006 Ngarmpun Vejjajiva The Happiness of Kati 2007 Montri Sriyong Kawīniphon 2008 Vachara Sajasarasin Things We Forget 2009 Uthis Haemamool The Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi 2010 Zakariya Amataya No Women in Poetry 2011 Jadet Kamjorndet The Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee 2012 Wipas Srithong The Dwarf 2013 Angkarn Chanthathip The Fifth Chamber of the Heart 2014 Saneh Sangsuk Venom and Other Stories 2015 Veeraporn Nitiprapha The Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth 2016 Phalang Phiangphirun The City of Outsiders 2017 Jidanun Lueangpiansamut The Unorthodox Lion 2018 Veeraporn Nitiprapha Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat 2019 Angkarn Chanthathip On The Way Back Home 2020 Jadet Kamjorndet That Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories 2021 Siriworn Kaewkan The Story of Defun 2022 Palita Phonpradapphet Until We Lie the World's Embrace	2002	Prabda Yoon	Pen in Parentheses
2005Binlah SonkalagiriPrincess2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2003	Duanwad Pimwana	Changsamran
2006Ngarmpun VejjajivaThe Happiness of Kati2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2004	Rewat Phanpipat	Reminiscence of the River
2007Montri SriyongKawīniphon2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2005	Binlah Sonkalagiri	Princess
2008Vachara SajasarasinThings We Forget2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2006	Ngarmpun Vejjajiva	The Happiness of Kati
2009Uthis HaemamoolThe Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2007	Montri Sriyong	Kawīniphon
2010Zakariya AmatayaNo Women in Poetry2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2008	Vachara Sajasarasin	Things We Forget
2011Jadet KamjorndetThe Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2009	Uthis Haemamool	The Brotherhood of Kaeng Khoi
2012Wipas SrithongThe Dwarf2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2010	Zakariya Amataya	No Women in Poetry
2013Angkarn ChanthathipThe Fifth Chamber of the Heart2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2011	Jadet Kamjorndet	The Morning Sun is Too Hot to Sit Sipping Coffee
2014Saneh SangsukVenom and Other Stories2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2012	Wipas Srithong	The Dwarf
2015Veeraporn NitipraphaThe Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2013	Angkarn Chanthathip	The Fifth Chamber of the Heart
2016Phalang PhiangphirunThe City of Outsiders2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2014	Saneh Sangsuk	Venom and Other Stories
2017Jidanun LueangpiansamutThe Unorthodox Lion2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2015	Veeraporn Nitiprapha	The Blind Earthworms in the Labyrinth
2018Veeraporn NitipraphaMemories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2016	Phalang Phiangphirun	The City of Outsiders
2019Angkarn ChanthathipOn The Way Back Home2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2017	Jidanun Lueangpiansamut	The Unorthodox Lion
2020Jadet KamjorndetThat Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2018	Veeraporn Nitiprapha	Memories of the Memories of the Black Rose Cat
2021Siriworn KaewkanThe Story of Defun2022Palita PhonpradapphetUntil We Lie the World's Embrace	2019	Angkarn Chanthathip	On The Way Back Home
2022 Palita Phonpradapphet Until We Lie the World's Embrace	2020	Jadet Kamjorndet	That Night of the Year of the Tiger and Other Animal Stories
	2021	Siriworn Kaewkan	The Story of Defun
2023 Narisapongse Rakwattananont Family Comes First	2022	Palita Phonpradapphet	Until We Lie the World's Embrace
	2023	Narisapongse Rakwattananont	Family Comes First

创意故事重述的伦理之维:《草木人间》的 目连改编

Ethical Dimension on Creative Story Retelling: Adaptation of Mulian's Story in the *Dwelling* by the West Lake

蔺墨逸(Lin Moyi)

内容摘要:故事重述是围绕脑文本进行的创造性活动。孝行故事"目连救母" 具有深厚的伦理意蕴,历经多次演绎流传于世,彰显出脑文本的创意转换与 跨媒介呈现。电影《草木人间》继承其"孝道"的伦理内核与"救母"的伦 理选择,经由重构伦理表征模式,结合反传销主题,在一定程度上承袭原著 的伦理核心。然而,既是文艺改编又是传销批判的双重主题,妨碍了二度创 意脑文本的伦理呈现及教诲功能实现。通过透视《草木人间》对目连故事的 重述,揭示继承伦理内核、重构伦理表征、调谐审美教化为创意故事重述的 伦理维度,赋予其新的伦理教诲意义与文化创意价值。

关键词: 创意故事重述; 伦理之维; 目连故事; 改编; 《草木人间》 作者简介: 蔺墨逸, 澳门科技大学国际学院博士研究生, 主要研究方向为创 意写作与中国古典文化资源转化。

Title: Ethical Dimension on Creative Story Retelling: Adaptation of Mulian's Story in the *Dwelling by the West Lake*

Abstract: The creation of retellings is based on the theory of "brain text." The traditional story "Mulian Saves His Mother" has been passed down through different iterations and interpretations, embodying the transformation of brain text and crossmedia creative flow. For instance, the film *Dwelling by the West Lake* retains the ethical core of filial piety and the ethical choices of "saving the mother" from the original story. The reconstruction of ethical representation, in conjunction with the theme of pyramid selling, has resulted in a brain text of secondary creativity. However, the film's dual identity as both a literary adaptation and a critique of marketing hinders the effectiveness of its presentation of the adapted brain text. The adaptation of Mulian's story in the film *Dwelling by the West Lake* demonstrates that the key ethical dimensions of creative retelling are the inheritance of the ethical

core, the reconstruction of the ethical representation, and the maintenance of balance between aesthetics and ethical education. The infusion of these elements into the narrative bestows upon it a renewed ethical significance and cultural creative value.

Keywords: creative story retelling; ethical dimension; Mulian's story; adaptation; Dwelling by the West Lake

Author: Lin Movi is a Ph.D. candidate in Creative Writing at the University International College, Macau University of Science and Technology (Macau 999078, China). Her main research interests are creative writing and the transformation of classical Chinese cultural resources (Email: 3230001004@student.must.edu.mo).

故事重述是一种围绕脑文本进行的创造性活动上,这一活动由创意写作者 对源作品脑文本的创意阅读2与二度创意3展开,过程包括提取起源作品脑文本 中的创意材料、围绕写作意图生成二度创意文学脑文本,以及二度创意文学 脑文本的文本呈现三部分4。电影是二度创意文学脑文本的呈现方式之一,电 影剧本的构思与撰写决定其呈现效果。《草木人间》是中国第一部反传销电影, 剧本以"目连救母"为原型,融入传销元素,反映出打工者在城市漂泊时的 伦理冲突——传统与自然关系的碰撞,以及伦理关系与消费主义贪婪之间的 张力。然而,由于导演顾晓刚对"山水图三部曲"诗意风格的坚持5,使得叙 事略显失衡,造成二度创意脑文本呈现混乱6,文本表意横跨了文艺改编与反 传销教育两大领域, 阻碍教诲功能的实现。本文从伦理视角出发, 通过回梳 《草木人间》对"目连救母"的脑文本转换过程⁷,分析二度创意脑文本的伦 理表达及呈现效果。就其未能完全实现伦理教诲的问题,提出写作优化思路,

¹ 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 口头文学与脑文本",《外国文学研究》3(2013): 8-15。

² 参见 许道军: "像作家一样读书: 从新批评到创意阅读——创意写作活动中的阅读研 究",《当代文坛》1(2019):108-112。

³ 二度创意文学脑文本与改写性文学脑文本同义,关于二度创意及其产业态的更多论述, 参见 葛红兵: 《创意写作学理论》,北京:高等教育出版社,2022年,第104页。

关于脑文本创作的本质及改编者脑文本实践的发生机制,参见 Chen Hongwei and Yang Honglin, "A Study of Adaptation from the Perspective of the Brain Text Theory," Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2022): 455-467.

⁵ 参见徐驰: "《草木人间》: 动人故事的千年回响",《中国电影报》2024年5月1日, 第10页。

⁶ 参见 张斌: "三条屏里的世界——《草木人间》的三重割裂",《文汇报》2024年4 月10日,第11页。

关于经典作品改编中脑文本转换和跨媒介融合的更多论述,参见 Su Hui, "Brain Text Conversion and Cross-Cultural Integration the Theatrical Adaptation and Performance of Shakespeare's Comedies in China," Kritika Kultura 39 (2022): 163-185.

最终得出继承伦理内核、重构伦理表征、调谐审美教诲为创意故事重述的伦 理维度。

一、继承伦理内核: 脑文本创意转换与教诲功能维系

电影《草木人间》以农村打工者的生存为背景,讲述了年轻人"目莲"从 传销危险中救出母亲的故事。作为影片剧本的创作原型,"目连救母"因其 伦理内核与中国传统孝道观念的深刻契合,得到了历代创作者的创意改编,有 大量蕴含伦理意蕴的重述作品流传于世。通过回溯这一题材在不同时期的创 造性萃取过程,对比分析脑文本的创意生成策略,得出故事重述需严格承袭 伦理内核,方能维系教诲功能。

斯蒂·汤普森(Stith Thompson)认为故事分为两种: "类型"与"母题"。"类 型"指能够独立存在的可传承故事,具备与其他故事一起讲述的特点。而"母 题"则被视为故事中最小的元素,具有持续传承的力量。在汤普森看来,"母 题"细分为三种类型:即故事的主角、关键情节元素和事件。其中,事件构 成了叙事母题的大部分,通常具有独立存在的能力。1这一理论要求故事重述 的有效性与关键事件的传承相联。就"目连救母"而言,中心情节"救母"由 目连的伦理选择所驱动,并在后世演化为了一类以伦理为核心的原型故事。无 论其他叙事元素如何丰富,呈现形式如何变换,故事的伦理内核始终保持一 致,以体现"孝道"在中国文化中恒久不衰的意义。具体在脑文本的生成环节,则 需要创作者考量对"救母"这一核心事件在叙事框架中的继承是否成立,进 而推演人物的伦理关系与相关情节发展,从而使叙事对伦理表达的作用更加 明确。由此,围绕原型开展的二度创意空间也将更广阔,利于吸引更多的读 者,扩大伦理教诲的传播。

"目连救母"故事的最初形式,来自西晋竺法护所译的《佛说盂兰盆经》,其 中记述目连修成六通后, 想要报答父母的恩德。然而却发现母亲在饿鬼道受 苦,遂在佛陀指引下寻求十方高僧拯救母亲。其中,目连"救母"的动机为 悟道后发现母亲受苦,"救母"的行动是通过盂兰盆节向僧侣供养以培植功德。2 在唐代敦煌文献中,《大目乾连冥间救母变文》《目连变文》和《目连缘起》 详细叙述了目连历经困苦,救母于地狱的故事。这三篇变文均植根于《佛说 盂兰盆经》, 并从中汲取灵感, 发展出新的情节。其中, 《大目乾连冥间救 母变文》作为民间艺人讲唱的底本,为后世演化创造出更为完整的情节框架。文 中引入目连在幽冥中寻母的叙事,丰富了历经地狱苦难救母的情节,如奈河、铁 轮、刀山、剑树地狱、铜树铁床地狱等,使中心事件"救母"于情节跌宕中 更加鲜明。佛经侧重于教义的阐述,变文则通过民间艺人的演唱文学教化民

¹ 参见斯蒂·汤普森:《民间故事分类学》,郑海等译,上海:上海文艺出版社,1991年, 第15页。

² 参见李政昕:《目连之母形象的演变及文化解读》,2012年,华侨大学,硕士论文。

众。由此总结,脑文本的跨媒介演绎利于回应读者需求,在审美体验中实现 教诲。

佛经版本中的目连故事情节虽然简洁单一,但作为伦理内核的"孝道"和人物"救母"的伦理选择已十分明确,为后世演变提供了转换基准与创意空间。例如,早期目连宝卷中的叙事性插图就融合了大量的民间意趣,图像叙事的参与不仅体现了原始佛教故事与中国儒家文化的融合,也反映出二度创意脑文本更适应跨媒介转化和文化交融;再如明代儒生郑之珍所著《目连救母劝善戏文》,该戏文设计了目连辞谢朝廷征召的情节,将故事的伦理生发环境与世俗文化嫁接,阐释了"移孝作忠"的忠、孝关系,拓展出更为宽展的故事伦理边界——佛儒道文化与世情伦理的融合。通过情节架构的扩张,实现了从因果报应到劝善、行孝、尽忠等伦理选择的教化,表现出伦理思想与世俗审美的碰撞融合。前代故事虽然也强调孝道的重要性,但《目连救母劝善戏文》更加深入地探讨了这一主题,强调行善积德的重要性,加强了伦理教化的创作意图与内在驱力,进一步稳固对"救母"这一核心事件的建构,体现出继承伦理内核以实现教诲始终是脑文本转换和跨媒介演绎的核心。

通过回梳"目连救母"故事的原始样态与演进特征,得出伦理内核与教诲功能密不可分。「对照电影《草木人间》的叙事情节,发现"孝道"的伦理内核与原型一致,作为"救母"的中心事件也得以承续。正因为《草木人间》实现了对源故事的有效重述,才使"孝道"成为剧本叙事的内在牵引力,"目连"的伦理选择也在情节铺陈中顺理成章得以沿袭,堪称为影片剧本写作的显著成就之一。而在故事生发的空间场域,以及家庭伦理与社会伦理的交织,人物的伦理选择等方面,电影《草木人间》则较传统"目连救母"具有鲜明的变异和调整。从《佛说盂兰盆经》出现,早期目连宝卷的基础叙事建立,变文、目连戏等形态的演进,至当代重述《草木人间》的诞生,历代创作者以伦理教诲为内在意图,承袭源文本的伦理内核及教诲功能,形塑充盈的情节张力,拓宽了原始故事的文化内涵和伦理意义,为目连故事的不断重释提供改编基准与创意之源。

二、重构伦理表征:文学伦理学批评视点的叙事设计

"叙事之失,伦理之的"(尚必武 11)。叙事如何作为表达伦理的有效 手段²,是故事重述的参照系。以文学伦理学批评视点进行叙事设计,利于促 进叙事有效表征伦理意蕴,实现价值旨归。就《草木人间》对"目连救母"的 重述而论,即如何在当代语境下重置伦理架构是关键进路,具体指涉为如何

¹ 参见 Yang Gexin, "Ethical Selection and Literary Work as Ethical Event: Redefining Ethical Criticism," *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 1 (2019): 35-46.

² 参见 尚必武: "从'两个转向'到'两种批评'——论叙事学和文学伦理学的兴起、发展与交叉愿景",《学术论坛》2(2017): 7-12。

承袭源文本的伦理核心,并在置换伦理生发场域的过程中系联传销元素,形 成"救母"和"反传销"的教诲意义。

首先,文学伦理学批评认为文学作品的价值在于透过人性与兽性因子的 组合变化,揭示人类伦理选择的过程。1人性因子主导价值判断,兽性因子 反映原始冲动。在故事重述的二度创意生成环节,两种因子的博弈利于形塑 复杂的伦理困境,从而引发伦理冲突,展现伦理价值与教诲意义。《草木人 间》巧妙地将故事背景从虑无缥缈的佛教地狱转移至风景如画的杭州茶山,以 一只"茶虫"链接茶园生态环境与纸醉金迷的传销空间,不仅串联起苔花落 入传销组织的情节,更深刻地探讨了虚拟与现实、斯芬克斯因子的动态共存 关系。通过"茶虫"这一元素,将茶园的宁静生态环境与传销活动的诈骗陷 阱紧密相连,构建了一个寓言化的现实叙事框架,形塑出理性意志与自然冲 动之间的伦理冲突。创作者以细腻的笔触和深刻的主题在叙事中交织伦理困 境,展现人性中欲望与理智、自由与束缚之间的挣扎抉择,从而有效启发读 者深思这一命题,实现伦理教诲之目的。

在《草木人间》剧本的情节设定中,以"茶虫"将茶园生态场域与电光 四射的传销环境链接,利用人性因子与兽性因子的博弈丰富叙事张力,强化 了"反传销"目的。在影片文本叙事的序曲阶段,"目莲之母"吴苔花在与 老钱约会后意外带回一只充满活力的"茶虫",寄托着她对蜕变的渴望和为 母的人性本能。随着苔花在蝴蝶国际中的深入,"茶虫"于传销组织的混乱 世界中再次出现,成为她兽性因子占据上风的具象化体现。这一叙事设计不 仅加深了故事的层次感,更为人性因子与兽性因子之间的斗争提供了具体的 载体,在象征茶园生态纯净的同时,反衬出传销组织对人性的剥削与扭曲。 作为故事伦理场域的符号象征,"茶虫"的轨迹移动实现了人性因子和兽性 因子的动态游走,将叙事情节的推进和伦理困境的塑造相互融合,继而使伦 理空间与人兽同体的矛盾性巧妙吻合在一起,丰富了故事的情感层次,构建 出伦理选择与现实冲突交织的两难局面,加深了人物道德斗争的复杂性。茶 园的生态景观与传销活动的犯罪本质形成鲜明对比, "茶虫"作为连接两者 的关键纽带,实现了情节的串联和结局的暗喻,为后文法律的介入提供了有 力的铺垫。

其次,《草木人间》将叙事设计的维度从家庭伦理提升至法律与亲情碰 撞的层级。剧本采用一个嵌套式结构,制造出错综复杂的伦理困境以增强叙 事张力。故事的内层揭示了苔花在自我认同上的挣扎,以及驱使她堕入"蝴 蝶国际"的动机: 在传销升级中日渐着迷于确认自我价值。剧本外层以传统 伦理和公平正义的法律制度为叙事基础,以此形塑多层面的伦理困境。譬 如,"苔花"曾规劝儿子不必牵挂出走的父亲,鼓励他在杭州成家立业,表 示已存钱助他建立安稳的生活。然而,在被"蝴蝶国际"诱惑后,"苔花"毫

¹ 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第34页。

不犹豫地散尽积蓄,将其投资在从传销获得的情感满足和自我认同中。此时,她 的伦理选择从一个为儿子规划未来的传统母亲转变为希冀自我实现的个体。然 而,故事内在结构与外在结构之间的互动,让叙事升级为更紧张、更深层的 伦理困境。虽然"苔花"参与"蝴蝶国际"的内在动机始于自我表达和性别 独立的欲望,但她最终发现自己卷入了骗人的传销阴谋,一切因警方的介入 和法律的惩处瓦解。此时,"苔花"的精神炼狱已达顶峰,而就儿子"目莲"来 说,"救母"之途才真正起航。这一情节序列可作为创造性重释故事的又一 参考策略:即利用伦理困境系联多个叙事文本元素,串联人物伦理选择,制 造伦理困境,最终实现伦理教诲的目的,完成当代语境的故事重构。

此外,《草木人间》以"树"作为贯穿叙事的重要线索,将复杂的人性 和伦理冲突框定在生态自然的大背景之下,使茶园生态、家庭伦理和人性复 归等元素融构一体,把人兽因子在伦理困境中的博弈最终落于生态自然的伦 理场域之中,使得剧本叙事于细微见真知、于人间烟火隐喻伦理深意。在剧 本的开头和结尾, 创作者均安排了与树有关的隐喻来强调这一主题。在故事 开篇,"目莲"为寻找父亲之树,四处游荡,预示人物内心的迷惑与抗争; 而母亲"苔花"的反对和欲言又止,则传递出关于父亲何山的种种猜测。至 剧本故事尾声,"目莲"带着母亲回到茶山,决心砍掉父亲之树,继而来到 自己的树下,决定以自我觉醒来彻底唤醒母亲,反映出鲜明的人性因子—— 坚毅的救母之心。此前目莲初至大城市的迷惘与徘徊一扫而光,转而坚定不 移地踏上了救母之路。《草木人间》剧本透过对伦理空间的细微探索,和复 杂伦理困境的塑造将故事推至高潮——理性意志与原始人性间的冲突和博弈 在叙事框架中浑然一体,伦理教诲与警世意味水到渠成的浮现。不仅让传统 伦理故事在当代文化语境中合理重释,更出彩地回应了当代人的精神需求与 伦理缺口,制造出"情绪价值",为二度创意脑文本的产业态呈现做出示范。1

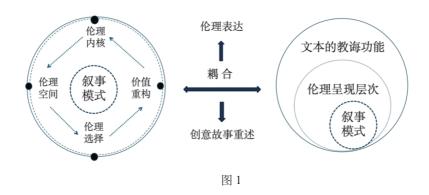
中国传统孝行故事是一类富含伦理价值的创意资源,是运用文学伦理批 评理论进行叙事设计的理想题材。对于这类故事的重述, 创意写作者的核心 写作意图为沿袭故事的教诲作用,这不仅包括对伦理核心的传承,还涉及到 利用审美特质进行二次创作,以满足读者期待和市场需求,最终达到伦理教 化的目的。综合来看,《草木人间》剧本凭借伦理生发场域的调整制造人物 的伦理困境,通过融入当代社会空间和生态元素重构伦理表征。角色人性因 子与兽性因子的博弈回应了叙事大背景下都市与乡村的矛盾、利益与理想的 标尺、理性意志与自然意志的冲突等隐喻,不仅在围绕家庭和个人成长上构 建出富有伦理表征的空间,更将其延续到社会空间和生态空间之中。通过精 心排布故事生发场域,设计与场域关涉的意象表征,改易人物形象的伦理处 境等方式,为"目连救母"带来新的伦理生命力,使其在当代语境中化身为

¹ 参见 安歌: "国产动画电影拓展: 衍生品价值与 IP 商业化开发", 《中国电影市场》 6 (2024) : 27-31.

一部引人深思的伦理启示录。

三、调谐审美教诲:伦理表达与创意生成的耦合策略

一个引人入胜的文学构思,经由一个创造性的过程,借助原型等创意素 材生成二度改写性文学脑文本,即二度创意;二度创意进一步利用跨时空、 跨媒介、跨业态的方式转化为产业态创意。在韩国的文化产业中,这一过程 被称为故事的"一源多用",指的是以创意叙事为基础,通过多元发展与应用, 扩展各种媒介形态与市场融合, 旨在实现文化传承、伦理意义、商业转型等 多重价值。¹ 在二度创意实现产业态呈现的过程中,二度创意脑文本可能会生 成多次,但伦理教义仍是创作者的核心动机。通过以叙事作为桥梁,即在情节、 人物、冲突等具体要素中指涉伦理表达,以"参省"为平衡艺术价值与社会 效应的原则,来协调文本审美与教诲功能的关系²,让创造力的产生与伦理的 表征一致,使伦理表达与创意生成形成耦合机制,从而共同赋力文学作品的 产业化(如图1)。



作为一个经典的传统孝行故事,"目连救母"自西晋以来不断被重述演 绎,始终以"孝道"为伦理内核,电影《草木人间》的重新诠释,彰显出当 代创意写作者和接受者对中华孝悌美德的情感认同。就叙事者而言,故事精 神传达的关键是叙事表征的清晰与明确。《草木人间》上映后,部分影评人 注意到茶韵元素与故事整体比例之间的冲突,表示难以理解叙事的连贯性。3 当从伦理维度检视二度创意脑文本,发现创作者敏锐地意识到了在当代语境 重述目连故事的伦理意义。这次改编创造性地将反传销元素与人物的伦理困

¹ 参见 葛红兵: 《创意写作学理论》,北京: 高等教育出版社,2022年,第109页。

² 参见陈勋 王洁群:"论文学伦理中的审美与教化及其协调",《哈尔滨工业大学学报》 (社会科学版) 6 (2022): 114-119。

³ 参见 张斌: "三条屏里的世界——《草木人间》的三重割裂",《文汇报》2024年4 月10日,第11页。

境交织在一起,在一定程度上有效承袭了原著的伦理核心,同时也重构了当代的伦理关系。而就二度创意脑文本的呈现效果而言,由于导演顾晓刚对山水系列第一部《春江水暖》中遥远意境的承袭,加上《草木人间》反传销题材的定位,最终导致叙事对伦理的表达偏离了教诲功能。尽管这种做法显示出导演对于系列电影的策略性愿景¹,却忽视了反传销题材的创作目的是伦理教诲,造成了审美对伦理的干预。本文认为,在故事重述中,伦理教诲与审美元素并不矛盾,实现伦理教诲与审美共振更利于脑文本的生成与呈现。

首先,审美意蕴是实现反传销和孝亲等教诲意图的媒介,体现在叙事元素与叙事节奏的融合方面。《草木人间》剧本希冀通过细腻笔触重述目连故事,拟将人物共历伦理困境的过程表达为一种和谐——每个人都应复归自然,生发患难与共的"草木"之情。然而在具体创作中,却只单纯于叙事弧线中插入了"茶虫""树""茶山"等意象作为叙事元素,试图以苔花在山中洗浴、老虎怒吼等情节,及喊茶山、驱鬼怪的桥段将目连故事中的虚拟地狱概念与当代人的精神炼狱相系联。但并未具体交代上述情节或意象与叙事演进的关系,仅有创意,未将其实践于具体的叙事情节,造成表意不清的结果。作者过分依托这类叙事元素完成"草木"意境的营造,从而忽略了对伦理关系的隐喻才是叙事元素的核心功能,造成叙事赘余与理解障碍。由此总结,故事重述应以实现教诲功能为自觉,将茶韵美学作为通往反传销宣传及孝亲规训的方法。在编创故事时考虑教诲功能与审美意蕴的关系,创作兼具情节张力和伦理表达的作品,从而优化二度创意脑文本的呈现效果,实现审美与教化的共振。

其次,《草木人间》的剧本具有多元叙事风格融合的特点,但忽视了对"救母"这一中心事件的铺陈和相应伦理关系的营造。《草木人间》剧本原型取材于中国本土,沿用了原型故事中"仁爱""孝顺"等儒家思想,以及佛教"慈悲""因果""救赎"等理念,但在人物伦理选择方面尝试了"歇斯底里现实主义"的手法。然而,编剧并未找到该叙事技术中,作者立场与读者立场之间的最佳位置。² 剧本将触发"苔花"兽性因子的动机设定为找寻自我,但并未设计具体事件来丰满人物的伦理思考。"苔花"原本是来自川渝的采茶女,在与都市伦理空间发生碰撞后,逐渐产生对伦理身份的困惑。丈夫失联、男友母亲排斥,以及"蝴蝶国际"宣扬的自我价值,都迫使她重新评估自我身份,最终在利益驱使下做出激进且颠覆的伦理选择。就叙事框架的构思而言基本通畅,但在具体叙事过程中,作者把大量笔墨用在了对"苔花"情绪的书写,而关于引发其激进情绪的事件叙述却很少,导致对关键情节"救母"的演绎发生偏移,进而难以引发观众共鸣,削弱了伦理教诲的预期效果。对于事件在

¹ 参见 姚睿: "《草木人间》: 山水画卷、都市丛林与世界的调谐",《当代电影》5(2024): 25-28。

² 参见 黄昱宁: "歇斯底里现实主义"与一种写作新趋向",《文学》2(2019):9-13。

叙事中的设计,应充分把握文学伦理学批评的核心概念——伦理身份与伦理 选择1。通过对核心情节、及关联事件的写作来引出对伦理身份的质疑,从而 推演伦理选择的反叛,而不是在设定背景后进行个人化演绎。同时,文学的 伦理教化作用唯有在文学文本被读者接纳,并且成功转化为读者内心中的脑 文本后才能得以施展。²读者不仅在被动地接受文本信息,更重要的是主动进 行解读,从而接收文本的伦理意义。故事重述之所以具有大量读者和市场,恰 是因为源故事的知名度让读者期待新的伦理阐释与内涵,而不仅是对某一人 物的浓墨重彩。

此外,叙事者还应注重文本对真实生活的形塑作用,通过叙事传达正确伦 理价值观。3在"救母"的过程中,"目莲"完成了成长涅槃。不论是寻找父亲,还 是救赎母亲,他的伦理选择坚定如一,反映出当代"目莲"的救母方式不再为 依托佛祖或找寻外力,而是一种身体力行的事亲。随着叙事弧线的推进,消费 主义的浮夸和救母挑战中的考验,一直萦绕"目莲",而"目莲"基于伦理身 份进行的伦理选择则引导着叙事演进:起初因父亲之树执意寻找"何山",而 后又投身传销组织救赎母亲,这些情节均符合其伦理身份——守护父母的儿 子。伴随自我成长的撕裂,"目莲"既解救了母亲,又塑造出自我,反复探索 内心的矛盾与纠结。这一叙事进程既承接了母题原型, 也折射出当下母子关系 的现状,更前瞻性地指向未来,反映出改编创作者应具有形塑真实生活的写作 意图,结合伦理身份进行谋篇布局,促进多重元素在紧扣伦理命题的叙事中实 现融合。最终通过人物的伦理际遇指涉现实生活中的伦理选择,引导接受者在 当代社会中践行作品的伦理价值观,实现伦理教诲的意义。

脑文本是文学创作的基础和前提,作家在按照一定的伦理原则加工脑文 本后,发展文学脑文本,将其转化为文学文本。4参照目连故事自古以来的重 述与演化,伦理内核的承袭是转化原始脑文本的核心,多元叙事手法和读者 接受的融合是跨媒介呈现的关键。《草木人间》剧本将孝行故事资源内化为 反传销诈骗叙事的原型,是很好的出发点,但应"参省"审美与教诲之间的 关系。不论是故事生发场域的调整、人物伦理困境的塑造,还是宗教虚拟地 狱与都市人精神炼狱的嫁接,以及"草木""茶虫"等所指符号的植入,都

¹ 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020): 71-92+205-206

文学伦理学批评认为,文学创作和文学接受都离不开脑文本,参见 Wang Songlin, "Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Brain Text," Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2022): 438-454.

脑文本理论可用来解读作家的心态风格, 词句选择的伦理取向反应出作家的世界观, 参见 Wang Songlin, "Brain Text, Brain-to-Text, and the Mind Style of Literature," Kritika Kultura 37 (2021): 476-493.

参见 Wang Songlin, "Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Brain Text," Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2022): 438-454.

应将叙事框架作为承载审美手段的关隘,从而实现传统故事与反传销题材的深度融合。总之,无论如何在叙事结构中增添审美元素,都应以伦理教诲为意图,以伦理表达为桥梁,进而回应当代创意接受者的精神需求,使其在审美体验中获知伦理意蕴,实现叙事的教诲作用。

以伦理视点切入传统故事的创意重述,在脑文本转换中植入伦理内核、引导伦理选择、重构伦理价值,是活化传统伦理故事的关键进路。通过《草木人间》案例得出:在源作品脑文本的提取和二度创意脑文本的生成阶段,应当继承伦理内核,并依托文学伦理学批评理论进行叙事设计;在二度创意脑文本的书写呈现与产业化阶段,需要调和审美与教化,生成兼具精神引领、审美享受和面向市场的优秀作品。以继承伦理内核、重构伦理表征、调和审美教诲作为创意故事重述的伦理维度,在脑文本构思与呈现过程中形成伦理表达与创意生成的耦合效应,从而赋予经典故事新的伦理教诲意义与文化创意价值。

Works Cited

安歌: "国产动画电影拓展: 衍生品价值与 IP 商业化开发",《中国电影市场》6(2024): 27-31。

[An Ge. "The Expansion of Domestic Animated Films: The Value of Derivatives and the Commercialisation of IP." *China Film Market* 6 (2024): 27-31.]

陈勋、王洁群: "论文学伦理中的审美与教化及其协调",《哈尔滨工业大学学报(社会科学版)》 6(2022): 114-119。

[Chen Xun and Wang Jiequn. "On Aesthetics and Indoctrination and Their Coordination in Literary Ethics." *Journal of Harbin Institute of Technology (Social Science Edition)* 6 (2022): 114-119.]

Chen Hongwei and Yang Honglin. "A Study of Adaptation from the Perspective of the Brain Text Theory." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 3 (2022): 455-467.

葛红兵: 《创意写作学理论》。北京: 高等教育出版社, 2022年。

[Ge Hongbing. Theory of Creative Writing. Beijing: Higher Education Press, 2022.]

黄昱宁: "'歇斯底里现实主义'与一种写作新趋向",《文学》2(2019):9-13。

[Huang Yuning. "'Hysterical Realism' and a New Tendency in Writing." *Literature* 2 (2019): 9-13.] 李政昕: 《目连之母形象的演变及文化解读》,2012 年。华侨大学,硕士论文。

[Li Zhengxin. *The Evolution and Cultural Interpretation of the Image of the Mother of Mulian*. 2012. Huaqiao University, M.A. dissertation.]

聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 口头文学与脑文本", 《外国文学研究》3(2013): 8-15。

[Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Oral Literature and Brain Text." *Foreign Literature Studies* 3 (2013): 8 -15.]

- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- 一一: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92+205-206
- [—. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10 (2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- Su Hui. "Brain Text Conversion and Cross-Cultural Integration the Theatrical Adaptation and Performance of Shakespeare's Comedies in China." Kritika Kultura 39 (2022): 163-185.
- 尚必武: "从'两个转向'到'两种批评'——论叙事学和文学伦理学的兴起、发展与交 叉愿景",《学术论坛》2(2017):7-12。
- [Shang Biwu. "From 'Two Turns' to 'Two Kinds of Criticism'-On the Rise, Development, and Intersecting Visions of Narratology and Literary Ethics." Academic Forum 2 (2017): 7-12.]
- 斯蒂·汤普森:《民间故事分类学》,郑海译。上海:上海文艺出版社,1991年。
- [Thompson, Stith. A Taxonomy of Folktales, translated by Zheng Hai. Shanghai: Shanghai Literary Publishing House, 1991.]
- Wang Songlin. "Brain Text, Brain-to-Text, and the Mind Style of Literature." Kritika Kultura 37 (2021): 476-493.
- —. "Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Brain Text." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2022): 438-454.
- 许道军: "'像作家一样读书': 从新批评到创意阅读——创意写作活动中的阅读研究", 《当代文坛》1(2019):108-112。
- [Xu Daojun. "Reading like a writer': From New Criticism to Creative Reading: A Study of Reading in Creative Writing Activities." *Modern Literary Magazine* 1 (2019): 108-112.]
- 徐驰: "《草木人间》: 动人故事的千年回响",《中国电影报》2024年5月1日,第10页。
- [Xu Chi. "Dwelling by the West Lake: The Millennium Echo of a Moving Story." China Film News 1 May 2024: 10.]
- Yang Gexin. "Ethical Selection and Literary Work as Ethical Event: Redefining Ethical Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2019): 35-46.
- 姚睿: "《草木人间》: 山水画卷、都市丛林与世界的调谐", 《当代电影》5(2024): 25-28.
- [Yao Rui. "Dwelling by the West Lake: The Harmony of Shanshui Painting, Urban Jungle and the World." Contemporary Cinema 5 (2024): 25-28.]
- 张斌: "三条屏里的世界——《草木人间》的三重割裂",《文汇报》2024年4月10日, 第11页。
- [Zhang Bin. "The World in Three Screens: The Triple Cuts of Dwelling by the West Lake." Wenhui Daily 10 April 2024: 11.]

文学伦理学批评视角下默哈德维·沃尔马诗歌中的"痛苦"情感主题

Ethical Literary Criticism of the Pain Emotion in Mahadevi Verma's Poetry

李亚兰 (Li Yalan)

内容摘要:默哈德维·沃尔马是印度阴影主义文学代表诗人之一,其诗歌围绕哲学、情感、自然三大主题展开,其中以"痛苦"情感主题的书写最具特色且颇受争议。本文拟从文学伦理学批评视角考察默哈德维所处的伦理环境、她的多重伦理身份对她诗歌中"痛苦"主题的选择、诗学表现方式的影响,阐释其痛苦书写中所传达的伦理教诲意义。本文认为其诗歌中的痛苦书写,让个体、集体与民族相关联,内在心灵与外在现实相映射,以传统的书写方式让个体在普遍的痛苦中体悟崇高的幸福理想,并呼吁通过止欲、奉献消融痛苦获得精神圆满,形成"痛苦"情感崇高的伦理教诲价值。

关键词: "痛苦"情感; 默哈德维·沃尔马; 伦理环境; 伦理身份; 伦理教诲作者简介: 李亚兰, 北京外国语大学亚洲学院讲师, 主要从事印地语语言文学研究。本文受"中央高校基本科研业务费专项资金资助", 系北京外国语大学 2022 年度基本科研业务经费一般项目"默哈德维的诗歌创作及诗学思想研究"【项目批号: 2022JJ021】阶段性成果。

Title: Ethical Literary Criticism of the Pain Emotion in Mahadevi Verma's Poetry **Abstract:** Mahadevi Verma is one of the representative poets of Indian Chhayavadi literature. Her poetry revolves around three major themes: philosophy, emotion, and nature, with the theme of "Pain" being the most distinctive and controversial. From the perspective of ethical literary criticism, this paper examines the ethical environment in which Mahadevi lived, her multiple ethical identities, and their influence on her choice of the "Pain" theme and its poetic expression. It explores how her writings on "Pain" convey ethical teachings. The paper argues that her depiction of pain connects the individual, the collective, and the nation, mapping the inner mind onto external reality. Her traditional writing style enables readers to aspire to the noble ideal of happiness by empathizing with universal pain, and calls for spiritual perfection by eliminating pain through restraining desires and self-sacrifice, thus forming the lofty ethical value of the emotion of "Pain."

Keywords: "Pain" emotion; Mahadevi Verma; ethical environment; ethical identity; ethical teachings

Author: Li Yalan is Lecturer at the School of Asian Studies, Beijing Foreign Studies University (Beijing 100089, China). Her academic research mainly focuses on Hindi language and literature (Email: liyalan@bfsu.edu.cn).

阴影主义文学是印度印地语文学史上盛极一时且别具一格的文学思潮,它 兴起于 1918 年至 1920 年间,流行印度文坛至 1940 年前后,推动印地语诗歌 由古典转向现代复兴。默哈德维·沃尔马(Mahadevi Verma)是阴影主义诗 歌的代表诗人之一,也是其时印地语文坛为数不多的女诗人。"痛苦"是其 诗歌表现的主要情感主题,她的诗歌主要书写了两类"痛苦"情感:一为"离 苦",一为"悲悯"。"离苦"继承印度中世纪虔诚文学传统,抒发与情人 相爱而不得相见的爱恋之苦,充满神秘主义与虔诚意味;"悲悯"则是基于 自然万物的无常无情、社会乃至人类集体的精神痛苦而抒发的悲伤及怜悯之 情,富有宗教哲学色彩。在默哈德维的诗歌中,"痛苦"主题以"虔爱"与"自然"为 依托,体现诗人内心情感世界的动态变化历程以及对痛苦情感的哲学思考。诗 人接受现代思想影响,同时继承中世纪印度文学传统,为传统诗歌主题附加 现代人文意义, 使得"痛苦"的书写富有浓厚的神秘主义色彩、民族文化复 兴取向与现代意蕴。默哈德维的诗歌因所抒发痛苦情感的真挚与深沉、诗歌 语言的成熟、意象的丰富与诗味的屈折隐晦赢得艺术层面肯定,对她诗歌创 作的艺术成就及在文学史上的地位,文学批评家们给与了颇多赞誉。但是,有 关她诗歌中"痛苦"情感的价值评判却一直存在争议:一方面有观点称其"痛 苦"诗歌是力量的诗歌¹,另一方面也有观点认为其"痛苦"属于为抒情而抒 情,是抒发闲情²,和时代的调子不合拍³。事实上,默哈德维诗歌中"痛苦"情 感主题的选择,受其所处历史时代的伦理环境影响。而她诗歌中所采用的"痛 苦"情感的诗学表达方式是基于她自身多重伦理身份做出的理性选择。她诗 歌中阐释的"痛苦"哲思,体现了诗人理性思考下"痛苦"情感崇高的伦理 价值。鉴于此,本文拟从文学伦理学批评视角出发,通过对诗歌文本的解析,探 讨默哈德维诗歌中"痛苦"情感主题的伦理环境、其不同伦理身份对"痛苦"主 题诗学表达的影响以及诗歌中有关痛苦的哲学思考,以探讨阐发她诗歌中"痛 苦"情感所具的伦理教诲功能。

一、伦理环境与"痛苦"情感主题的选择

文学是特定历史阶段伦理观念和道德生活的独特表达形式, 文学在本质

¹ 参见 नामवर सिंह, छायावाद, दिल्ली: राजकमल प्रकाशन, 1955, पृ.17.

² 参见 刘国楠: "论印地语诗歌中的影象主义",《南亚研究》1(1985):58-65。

³ 参见 刘安武: 《印度印地语文学史》,北京:中国大百科全书出版社,2015年,第62页。

上是关于伦理的艺术。文学伦理学批评以文学作品的历史环境为基础,强调回到历史的伦理现场,站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释文学作品,寻找文学产生的客观伦理原因并做出解释。¹因此,理解在反殖民统治及争取民族独立运动的历史大背景下,默哈德维的诗歌创作为什么远离历史宏大叙事而以"痛苦"情感作为主题,需要回到阴影主义文学出现时的时代伦理环境、默哈德维诗歌创作时的文学伦理语境,以及她走向文坛时的个人伦理环境中寻找缘由。

首先,从时代伦理环境来看。阴影主义文学兴起于20世纪20年代末,这 一时期是英国殖民统治深化的时期,是印度民族觉醒与甘地领导非暴力不合 作运动争取民族独立的时期,也是资本主义世界经济危机爆发,两次世界大 战之间的挫折时代。改革、独立的呼声激荡人心,对自由的向往与对新生活 的追求带来希望,民族精神在对独立、自由的向往中得到进一步巩固与加 强。但非暴力不合作运动的失败、传统的束缚与殖民统治的压制又给人们带 来不满、失望与迷茫;与之同时,思想领域伴随着民族意识的觉醒,民族主 义、个人主义及甘地思想成为社会思潮的主流,各种思潮带来的个体及集体 的觉醒,使得人们更多向内寻求精神成长。概言之,政治领域内经历争取民 族独立运动的动荡起伏,经济领域内经历科技发展与经济衰退,思想领域内 经历精神思想冲突、抗争与成长。在这种伦理环境下,人的情感世界中希望 与失望交织、悲伤与不满情绪蔓延。情绪需要抒发,对自由独立的向往、对 束缚与压迫的反抗、对民族国家的爱与奉献亟需找到表达的依托,这是时代 伦理环境提出的伦理诉求。因此,专注内在情感与体验的抒发,以痛苦为歌,表 达对自由、和谐、圆满的内在世界的追求,呼吁忍耐、奉献、爱的道德精神,是 默哈德维在特定时代伦理语境下通过文学创作表达的伦理选择。

其次,从文学伦理语境来看。这一时期正是阴影主义文学思潮渐成规模占据文坛的时期。英国浪漫主义文学思潮以及泰戈尔的孟加拉语诗歌,对印地语诗歌产生广泛影响。与之同时,文学领域内理性启蒙在日渐枯燥的表达方式中渐失热度,对自由、独立的追求亟需新的表达方式,民族意识的凝聚亟需新的工具。在反殖民统治与争取民族独立运动于政治层面轰轰烈烈展开之际,阴影主义诗歌将创作视野从宏大的外部世界移开,转向微观的内在心灵。它突破启蒙诗歌中主题僵化且轻视艺术的囹圄,关注人的内在情感与精神世界,注重抒发个体内心世界的情感体验与感受,因而迅速得到读者欢迎。默哈德维正是在这样的文学伦理语境下开始了诗歌创作,因此,她一方面继续阴影主义诗歌轻说教、重审美的新表达方式,另一方面选择以哲学、情感、自然为诗歌表现的主题,特别是"痛苦"情感抒发作为揭示、表达个体自我内

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.

心精神世界的途径,进一步推进诗歌中新语言、新价值、新精神的表达。

最后,就默哈德维个人成长的伦理环境来看。她出生在一个相对富裕的 家庭,接受了良好的教育。父亲开明、母亲传统的家庭环境让她的思想更加 包容。她开始诗歌创作时阴影主义文学思潮已发展至中后期,在此之前,她 已深受阴影主义诗歌前辈诗人的影响,这使得她能够在继承阴影主义创作风 格的同时,在语言、情感表述等方面将阴影主义诗歌创作推向更加成熟的阶 段。并且,作为女性诗人,她对女性的情感及命运尤为关注,在乡村教学时 接触并目睹过许多底层妇女的悲惨境遇而内心有感,在女性尚不能直抒胸臆 自由披露个体情感的时代, 阴影主义文学的细腻、曲折为她提供了适当的表 达方式。此外,作为传统的印度教信徒、甘地主义的追随者,她继承印度教 的传统信仰,认同甘地所秉承的民族、文化自豪感,践行甘地思想中的爱、忍 耐、奉献等哲学原则,这些个人成长的伦理语境均影响了默哈德维将"痛苦"情 感作为诗歌创作主题的选择。

默哈德维曾表示: "在现实世界的残酷基础上,看着因理性而变得僵硬, 因伤害而变得因循守旧的人生所显示出的时代,我充满忧愁的心常常充满悲悯 之情地问道'充满眼泪的温柔的你来到了哪里,外乡的人啊'"(रश्मि दीक्षित 58) 1。可见,外在世界的现实与内在世界的忧愁,使得她以诗歌为工具,抒 发现实世界中个体的不满、悲伤、失望以及对此岸的厌弃情绪,并试图以相对 传统的、神秘主义的诗学方式,构建一个完整的"痛苦"哲学,以为这些情绪 及诗人内在的情感寻找解脱的途径。

二、伦理身份与"痛苦"情感主题的诗学呈现方式

伦理身份是个体作为行为主体与社会或他人之间存在的伦理规范上的关 系。它包含人的社会身份,即人在社会上拥有的身份,在社会上被认可或接 受的身份。在文学文本中,所有伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关。2"其 中人物的主观认知、情感和体验与客观伦理身份所承载的伦理责任之间的矛 盾构成文学作品中伦理问题的重要因素"(蒋文颖 627)。社会的伦理秩序 和伦理传统规范和限定不同伦理身份的人应该承担什么样的责任与义务,处 于不同伦理身份中的人据此做出伦理选择。作为表达个体情感与体验的诗 歌,默哈德维诗歌的表达方式与书写特征受到诗人不同伦理身份的影响,特 别是其"痛苦"主题的诗学呈现方式体现诗人多重伦理身份下的理性考量。

(一) 诗歌中"痛苦"主题的诗学呈现方式

默哈德维诗歌中的"痛苦"主题以"离苦"与"悲悯"为主要内容,她 立足印度传统宗教哲学,选择以"虔爱""自然"为依托,书写诗人个体、社 会集体乃至人类共通的痛苦体验, 在传统文学主题中映射社会现实并赋予痛

¹ 本文外文引文出自笔者译。

² 参见 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。

苦以现代阐释。其"痛苦"主题的呈现方式充满神秘主义色彩与哲学意蕴,体现了诗人回归传统复兴印度文化的民族文化意识、对现实的深切关照、深刻的哲学思考与精神探寻。

首先,对"离苦"的表现以对神的"虔爱"为依托,抒发内在心灵的痛 苦体验,充满神秘主义色彩。诗人将个体灵魂与最高精神之间的超现实关系 幻化为女性与情人之间的关系,以女性"我"之口,倾诉对爱人的回忆、渴盼、寻 找、梦中欢聚、不复得见后的失望与悲伤等等情感,展现从相会的美好回忆 到分离的痛苦,从长久的思念到热切地期待,从梦中相会倾诉衷肠到享受痛 苦、在痛苦中获得与情人的合一体验并最终走向心灵平静等逐层递进的情感 发展历程。"痛苦"因与爱人的分离而产生,一方面源自超现实的人对神的 虔爱。爱人是神秘未知、无形无体且普遍存在的最高精神,是无声的、神秘的: "我从没见过他,只认识他的脚步。无声的庙里,他的身形也成阴影"(201)1,只 可感知不可描绘: "我凝视来途度过夜晚,却认不出我的爱人!" (190)但 却是创造世界的至高无上的力量:"为天空,点亮无数的灯盏;为白日穿上 金甲,给夜晚披袭银衫"(148)。诗人时常追问爱人的存在,时而感到爱人 就化作心中的痛苦: "是谁,在我的心里?是谁,时刻在我悲痛的心中,装 进无形的幸福的甜蜜?"(173)时而在自然万物中察觉爱人的存在,从自然 的变幻中感知最高主宰的足迹: "金子般的白昼珍珠般的夜晚,金黄的傍晚 玫红的清晨,一次次赋色又擦除,它是谁这世界的画家?"(167);另一方 面"离苦"还具象到女子在爱恋中的情感体验,与世俗中的爱恋一样有眼泪、哭 泣、悲愤、哭诉、祈求、失望、渴盼、彷徨、焦灼等等各种情态。如她将痛 苦比作是心生烦愁时寒冷黑暗的夜: "如花开时蜜蜂的嗡鸣,宁静的心湖中 激起涟漪。分离的痛苦变成,黑暗寒冷的夜到来!"(126),诉说眼泪中的 焦灼: "爱人啊这眼中的泪水!如苦如乐般泥浊,如泡如梦般虚幻,流下时 光岁月的焦灼!"(167),以及无尽回忆时的孤独:"回忆是我甜蜜的旅资,分 离的路孤独无尽头!"(256)等。

其次,默哈德维"痛苦"主题的诗歌,以自然万物中一花一草的繁荣凋零为依托,隐射现实生活中的痛苦,表达自己对女性、劳动人民生活的同情与怜悯,抒发女性对自由、独立的渴望与向往,富含现代意涵。她时常以"花"为情由,借以抒发诗人因自然万物瞬息无常而生发的"悲悯"之情。在《花》这首诗中,诗人描写了花儿的娇美、柔嫩、天真:"美丽的,春天的化身,如甘露,如光辉,明艳美丽"(92),但诗人见到这美丽的花,想到她即将遭遇尘世的冷酷并终将凋零的命运,不禁追问:"谁是那催人入眠的歌调,温柔地将您吸引而来?谁将你送到这里,谁是那无情的主宰?"(92)诗人用无辜的花的生命,隐喻来到尘世间自我的人生,对即

¹ 如无特殊标注,本文引用诗句及诗论均由笔者自译于 निर्मला जैन (सं.), महादेवी साहित्य (एक), दिल्ली: वाणी प्रकाशन, 2007。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

将面临的冷酷、痛苦的尘世,她心生怜爱与同情,叹道: "笑吧带上刺做 的花环,甜美天真的人间!"(92)在另一首诗歌《凋零的花》中,诗人描 述了一朵花盛放与凋零时的不同景象。盛放时是迷人的花中之王,骄傲美 丽,园丁精心照顾,蜂群环绕,月光蒸爱地轻抚,夜晚在娇嫩的花瓣上洒下 露珠。但是凋零时,狂风无情地吹落,美丽的容颜不再,芬芳也消散,没有 人同情一朵花儿的命运: "那将你拥入怀中,温柔疼爱的风,粗暴地将你唤 醒——他将你弃于地上!"(59)人生本是痛苦的旅程,尘世的无情与冷漠 让诗人心中也生发出无限的悲哀,诗人对花的命运感同身受,通过诗歌抒发 对人类自我命运的悲悯: "如果这尘世,不曾因你的处境而悲伤,那么花 儿呀, 谁将哭泣? 为我们这样无谓的人类!"(59)在"痛苦"主题的诗 歌中,诗人借自然抒发对女性命运的同情,描写女性的美丽与温柔"若白 露,如妙花"(43),但是"残酷的岁月仍给她岩石的睡榻"(43),通过 比拟女性柔弱生命以及所遭受的压迫, 表达对女性命运的悲悯。诗歌中诗人 还呼吁融入众生的愁苦,表达了愿替众生苦的悲悯之情: "宽容的人啊,让 我融入,那干枯的唇上的忧伤!再一次吧,就一次!"(63)

最后,"痛苦"主题的呈现过程中,始终贯穿着"世界为幻,梵我一如"的 印度传统宗教哲思。尽管她在诗歌中从没有明确使用"梵""灵魂"等哲学 概念,但诗中体现的哲学思想总体依循有神论思想以及唯心主义世界观。她 以"无限""有限""仁慈的""未知的""神""爱人""谁""你""他"等 词汇,描述了一个模糊抽象的爱人的存在,她对主宰宇宙万物的最高存在发 出"你是谁?"的追问,在对自然万物的观察与感悟中,探寻世界的本质,通 过诗句阐释她对最高存在"梵""自我(人)""自然(现象界)"之间的 关系的认知。通过自然物象,诗人构筑了许多充满哲思的意象,如"人生如 离洲的水流""人生是离苦的莲""坚定燃烧的灯""痛苦是我的祭司"等,以 此表达对人生本质的认知以及人生终极目标的思考,阐释对生活态度与人生 理想实现途径的理解。

总之, 默哈德维诗歌中"痛苦"主题的诗学呈现方式, 既充满神秘主义, 又 富含现代意义, 既继承印度中世纪虔诚文学的"虔爱"表达范式, 蕴含印度 哲学"梵我合一"的思想,又隐射现实表达对自由独立的向往。这些"痛苦"情 感主题的诗学呈现方式,体现了诗人多重伦理身份下有意识的伦理选择。

(二)伦理身份与"痛苦"主题诗学呈现方式的选择

首先,现代知识女性身份与"痛苦"主题的"虔爱"情味及神秘主义色彩。从 文学伦理学批评中伦理身份的阐释出发, 默哈德维兼具多重伦理身份。她首 先是阴影主义文学的女性代表诗人,是 20 世纪 20 年代印度现代女性知识分 子的代表。在20世纪初期,尽管社会改革已经将改善女性的处境列为主要任 务,不少女性开始走出家庭,接受教育并投身社会工作,但就总体社会氛围 而言,男性与女性面临的外部环境仍大不相同。在一些相对传统的土邦地区,大 多数女性还带着面纱被禁锢在家庭生活中,在社会话语体系中属于沉默的群体。因此,女性的身份使得默哈德维无法像男性诗人那样直白地表达自我,如在诗歌中直接表露与个人相关的爱情与感伤,表露对自由、对爱情的渴望,书写个体真实生活等,为此她不得不选择较为含蓄隐晦的方式,借助传统的抒情模式与宗教崇拜范式,将个人的情感体验与对自由的追求影射到超现实的神爱之中,将女性对爱的追求、对自由的渴望、对精神圆满的理想信念转换成对神的爱恋及与神合一的愿望中。默哈德维现代知识女性的伦理身份,解释了她充满神秘主义色彩与现代思想意蕴的"痛苦"情感表达。

其次,民族独立运动积极分子身份与"痛苦"主题的文化复兴取向。在 印度文学语境下,"虔爱"作为一种神秘主义体验而存在,它相信神的存在,笃 信禁我一如并将与神合一作为最高的追求, 惯以诗歌语言表达对神的追求渴 盼等爱恋体验。以"虔爱"情感为书写对象的虔诚文学是中世纪印度文学的 主要形式,是中世纪帕克蒂运动「中兴起的文学书写传统。默哈德维是印度民 族独立运动积极参与者,是维护印度传统文化与自我尊严的知识分子代表。她 同情关注国家民族命运,反抗英属印度殖民政府对印度文化的贬低侵蚀。作 为甘地主义的追随者及民族主义思想的拥护者,她积极参与民族独立运动,深 知以民族文化动员广大群众凝聚民族团结的重要性,为此她身体力行响应甘 地的民族建设运动的号召,放弃华丽的衣饰穿着朴素的土布纱丽,还公开宣 称绝不在印度的土地上使用英语,并转向传统寻找灵感,探索现代印地语的 新的表述方式。2民族独立运动积极分子的伦理身份,使得默哈德维选择继承 中世纪印"虔爱"书写传统,将"虔爱"与"痛苦"情感主题相联系,抒发 在"神爱"追求过程中的痛苦体验,并赋予"痛苦"主题以自由、独立、个 体解放的现代精神追求。 既传统又现代的诗学表现方式体现了她立足传统, 重 新阐释传统文化以复兴印度文化精神,以共同的民族痛苦激发情感共鸣,动 员普通民众以凝聚民族团结的积极选择。

最后,宗教信徒身份与"痛苦"主题的宗教哲学意蕴。默哈德维是传统印度教徒,受吠檀多不二论哲学、"梵我一如"、甘地主义哲学的影响,重视追求精神的圆满。她认为"人性从本质上来说是不完整的,并且有追求圆满的内在冲动。因此,向某种崇高的理想、极致的美或者完整的人格交付灵魂以获得圆满是人本能的追求"(महादेवी वर्मा,रीपशिखा 29)。因此,她的诗歌以"梵我一如"的哲学为基本理论基础,将"痛苦"情感的哲学基础确立在梵一我的分离之上,并奉甘地的苦行与积极奉献精神作为痛苦的最终解脱路径。在书写"痛苦"的过程中,将个体在精神追求中体会到的痛苦,投射在

¹ 帕克蒂运动(Bhakti Movement)也译作虔诚运动,是 7 到 16 世纪兴起的印度教宗教改革运动,其核心在于歌颂对印度教神的虔诚信仰和崇拜。

² 有关默哈德维的生平经历,可参见 Karine Schomer, *Mahadevi Varma and the Chhayavad Age of Modern Hindi Poetry*, Delhi: Oxford University, 1998.

人对神、女子对男子的爱恋之苦中,将整个民族追求独立的求索之苦,投射 到个体的内在情感中。此外,尽管为印度教徒,诗人也受到佛教"苦谛"思 想与"慈悲"观念的影响,在"愿拔众生苦"的宗教思想影响下诗人自然而 然生发出对他人、时代痛苦的悲悯之情。将"离苦"以及"悲悯"情感作为 诗歌创作主题,对之进行哲学的探索,因此可以说她"痛苦"情感的宗教哲 学式呈现方式是她宗教信徒伦理身份影响下的结果。

三、伦理教诲与"痛苦"主题的伦理哲思

"文学作为特定历史时期伦理和道德的独特表达"(Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 189), "伦理价值是文学最基本的价值,它反映文 学所有价值的本质特征"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能 与核心价值"13),"文学的教诲作用是文学的基本功能,教诲的实现过程 就是文学的审美过程。教诲也是文学审美的结果"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学 批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值"9)。如上所述,默哈德维诗歌中的 "痛苦"主题,从主题选择、诗学呈现方式上均体现了诗人基于个体解放、民 族独立及精神圆满等伦理道德基础上的理性选择。那么看似消极的"痛苦"情 感,是如何在诗歌中形成伦理价值并实现教诲功能的呢?回答这一问题,需 考察默哈德维诗歌在书写"痛苦"的各种情态与情感体验的同时,对痛苦的 本质、痛苦的功能以及痛苦的解脱途径所进行的哲学思考。

首先,对痛苦本质的认知。默哈德维表示:"至于痛苦,无非是两种形式—— 一种是因生活中的不公而产生的悲悯情怀,一种是基于生活的所有个人不幸 之上而产生的忧伤" (महादेवी वर्मा, साहित्यकार की आस्था तथा अन्य निबंध 87), 但是, "我只喜欢痛苦的两种形式,一种将人类敏感的心与整个世界系在一 条不可分割的纽带上,另一种是陷入时间和空间的束缚中的无限意识的哭 泣"(420)。这表明在她看来,痛苦包括人类集体的现实痛苦以及个体的悲伤,但 是她关注的是可以引起人类心灵共鸣的痛苦以及有限生命遍在的精神束缚。她 认为痛苦首先是一种普遍存在的人类共通的情感。在诗歌中,她用富有哲思 的语言不断探寻、认知痛苦的本质。从痛苦的具体形式如眼泪、悲伤、对爱 人的追寻: "人生的杯盏,在这甜蜜的痛苦中沉没"(91)。"在痛苦中寻 找你,在你中寻找痛苦!"(62);到认识到痛苦无处不在,痛苦与快乐互 为依存,唯与爱人合一可消弭: "得到中我将把你失去,在失去中体会得到 的幸福,这恒常的不满就是人生,唯消逝是永恒的满足"(110);再到认识 到痛苦是人生的恒常,但有共情众生的力量, 悲悯是痛苦的归处: "心是盛 泪的宝盏, 眼是孕泪的匣。""人生是离苦中的莲, 离苦中的莲花! 在痛苦 中出生,在悲悯中安家"(71):直至最后认识到痛苦也是快乐,是希望所在: "我消融在无限的爱人里,爱人束缚在弱小的心里。现在,你可以说分离的 夜晚,是永远相会的清晨!"(229)"我是痛苦永远的饥渴者,也痛饮幸福

之水的欢乐!"(217)至此,诗人愿意将痛苦祭拜,在对痛苦的接纳中体味快乐:"我在空庙中放上你的像,将痛苦祭拜"(267),"带着对离苦的祭拜我也变得神圣!(267)"心获得平静,痛苦一泪水,梦一莲花,终明白这是相遇的同一,相伴的人生在分离里!"(313)在遍历痛苦之后获得精神的超越:"我知道大地的苦涩天空的甘甜,各色的泪水我都识遍!痛苦是快乐的另一种语言!"可见,在默哈德维诗歌中,痛苦是一种恒常的人生状态,且苦乐相依,灵魂对最高精神的追求以及在这种追求中对痛苦情感的体验本身,是她"痛苦"的内容,也是最终归途。诗人相信痛苦与幸福的和谐共生,体味痛苦才能使幸福的实现成为可能。

其次,对痛苦功能的思考。在默哈德维看来,痛苦具有将人类的心灵联 系在一起的力量。她说: "痛苦是我生活周围的一种诗,具有将整个世界联 成一气的能力。〔……〕人类希望独享快乐,但是通过分担痛苦,人类可以 如同水滴归入大海那样,将个人的人生汇入宇宙人生中,将个人的痛苦融合 入宇宙的痛苦中,这是诗人的解脱" (महादेवी वर्मा,रश्मि 2)。默哈德维的诗 歌中,痛苦是将世界联系在一起的纽带,分享痛苦可以让人产生同情与悲悯: "一条纽带万物相连,世界空无的篇章上他书写悲悯的诗!"(108)痛苦是 通往幸福的路径,痛苦的情感中蕴涵着对幸福理想的追求:"悲泣中有幸福 的故事"(343)。诚挚的痛苦可以让对幸福的追求与梦想显得深刻,幸福、爱 与相聚将在痛苦的哭泣、炽热与分离中变得真实可感: "热焰知晓灯芯,灯 芯知晓爱,爱,知道这夜晚的裙边"。痛苦还能够消除人的贪婪与欲念,是 可以让人觉醒的武器"从汗水中拿来,滴落的珍珠,用裙边挡着希望的灯火,这 是来叫醒你的痛苦, 不是梦的欢乐!"(242)因此分担痛苦, 可以减轻悲伤, 丰 富自己的心灵,从而使得痛苦成为感知最高精神、获得精神圆满的途径:"触 摸痛苦的足迹,眼泪便汇成潺潺流动的泉溪,生命变得柔软肥沃无比,无限 的世界被它召唤到这弱小的心湖里"(108)。

最后,对待痛苦的态度与痛苦的解脱方式阐释。在上述对痛苦的认知下,默哈德维在诗歌中呼吁接受痛苦,把痛苦当成生命的馈赠: "疼痛是对你的宠爱,啊你这人生的玫瑰花!"(219),将在现实生活中体味种种痛苦看作是对精神的磨砺,是人生涅槃的修行: "行途看作是涅槃,荆棘认为是馈赠"(361),并且在痛苦悲悯之上进一步升华,希望通过自我奉献为痛苦的解脱寻找路途。诗人将自己的痛苦比作溪流,希望用自己的泪水链接众生的痛苦,洗去众生的哀愁: "我湍急前行,以你的眼泪为粮,寄居在大地的裙边,我是新的悲悯的搬运者!"(315)"用我小小的泪水,洗去这世间的伤感!"(242)诗人希望自己是充满苦水的云雨,成为慈悲的守护者,在天空中聚集,在自我消逝中"在大地上洒下雨露,让人生的新叶发芽!"(273)还将自我灵魂看作是灯,灯焰在痛苦的炙烤中一直燃烧,为尘世的黑暗带去光明: "灯啊你稳稳的燃烧,别让一个脚步忘记路途,别让一个飞鸟迷失家

园"(311)。以自我的奉献驱赶人类痛苦的黑暗,这是诗人探寻到的痛苦解 脱之途, 也是诗人的精神理想。

默哈德维诗歌中的"痛苦"书写,其伦理教诲意义主要体现在:其一,对 待"痛苦"的认知及积极态度,尽管她认为世界的本质是痛苦,但并没有因 此而消极逃避, 反而主张苦乐相依, 痛苦的体验是快乐的途径, 是精神的锤 炼和修行,主张接受痛苦、体味痛苦、克制欲望实现痛苦的升华,对痛苦的 体验在诗人眼中是超越个体情感的更高的精神追求;其二,认为"痛苦"具 有将人类心灵连接在一起的力量,将个体的痛苦与集体的痛苦乃至人类的痛 苦关联,希望在对个体痛苦的体验中理解集体的痛苦,呼吁悲悯共情,积极 行动,以实现人类整体的解脱;其三,将忍耐、克制及自我奉献看作是痛苦 的解脱途径,体现了"痛苦"书写的崇高意义。

默哈德维认为通过哲学感悟的力量鼓舞人接受生活,是诗人的信仰: "在 诗歌中,理性在约束心灵的同时也获得活力,〔……〕诗歌中的哲学通过意 识及感悟的力量接受生活。因此可以说诗人的哲学,是诗人对于人生的信仰 的别称"(महादेवी वर्मा, *दीपशिखा* 17)。因此可以看出,她文学创作中的情感 抒发与哲学意味具有积极指向, 对默哈德维诗歌的文学批评不应该仅局限在 艺术及主题层面的神秘主义及虔爱上。她诗歌作品中的"痛苦"情感主题,不 仅仅是传统批评所主张的那样使用了成熟的现代印地语与唯美的艺术手段,进 行了充满神秘主义色彩的个人情感表述,更不是脱离现实生活的充满个人主 义的无病呻吟,而是诗人基于所处的伦理环境,在多重伦理身份认知下精心 构建的痛苦哲学,是诗人感知生活、获得真知再反哺教化民众的文学表达,具 有积极的伦理教诲价值。

Works Cited

蒋文颖: "文学伦理学批评关键词: 伦理身份", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 620-630。

[Jiang Wenying. "Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Identity." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 622-630.]

刘安武: 《印度印地语文学史》。北京: 中国大百科全书出版社, 2015年。

[Liu Anwu. History of Indian Hindi Literature. Beijing: Encyclopedia of China Publishing House, 2015.]

刘国楠: "论印地语诗歌中的影象主义",《南亚研究》1(1985):58-65。

[Liu Guonan. "Chhayavad in Hindi Poetry." South Asian Studies 1 (1985): 58-65.]

नामवर सिंह, छायावाद. दिल्ली: राजकमल प्रकाशन, 1955.

[Namvar Singh. Chhayavad. Delhi: Rajkamal Publications, 1955.]

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies

2 (2021): 189-207.

- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》4(2014):8-13。
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." *Foreign Literature Studies* 4 (2014): 8-13.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- --: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2022): 563-568.]

निर्मला जैन, सं. महादेवी साहित्य (एक). दिल्ली: वाणी प्रकाशन, 2007.

[Nirmala Jain, ed. Mahadevi's Literature (One). Delhi: Vani Prakashan, 2007.]

रश्मि दीक्षित. महादेवी का काव्य कला और दर्शन. आगरा: केंद्रीय हिन्दी संस्थान, 1999.

[Rashmi Dikshit. Mahadevi's Poetic Art and Philosophy. Agra: Central Hindi Institute, 1999.]

- Schomer, Karine. Mahadevi Varma and the Chhayavad Age of Modern Hindi Poetry. Delhi: Oxford UP, 1998.
- महादेवी वर्मा. साहित्यकार की आस्था तथा अन्य निबंध. गंगाप्रसाद पाण्डेय संपादित. इलाहाबाद:लोकभारती प्र-काशन, 1962.
- [Verma, Mahadevi. Faith of a Writer and Other Essays, edited by Ganga Prasad Pandey. Allahabad: Lokbharti Publications, 1962.]
- ——.*दीपशिखा.* इलाहाबाद: लोकभारती प्रकाशन, 2008.
- [—. Flame of Lamp. Allahabad: Lokbharti Publications, 2008.]
- ——. रश्मि. नयी दिल्ली: लोकभारती प्रकाशन, 2011.
- [—. Ray of Light. New Delhi: Lokbharti Publications, 2011.]

《午夜之子》中的后现代伦理

Postmodern Ethics in Midnight's Children

李珍玲(Li Zhenling) 宋 昀(Song Yun)

内容摘要:在《午夜之子》中,萨利姆既是故事主人公又是故事叙述者。作者拉什迪借萨利姆的故事和叙事,表达对后殖民印度社会的深层思考,带有教诲意味;作为故事主人公的萨利姆一生坎坷,尝尽冷漠与苦楚,却仍心存善念和希望;作为叙事者的萨利姆,在语言的狂欢中放纵情感,消解权威。鉴于此,本文基于后现代西方伦理学理论,运用文学伦理学批评的方法,结合后殖民印度复杂的社会历史语境深刻探查萨利姆的生命历程和叙事策略,并在此基础上还原拉什迪对印度现实的批判和重构,从而挖掘小说的伦理价值。本文发现,《午夜之子》是一次重构后殖民时代印度社会道德关系的伦理叙事。小说批判后殖民现实对萨利姆、午夜之子和贫民窟居民等弱势群体他者的迫害和暴力,宣扬蕴藏在他者身上的真善美和进取力量,以此呼唤一个以友爱、和平、平等为道德规范的印度社会。与此同时,小说采用"腌制化"写作、不可靠多角度叙事和非线性叙事等手法解构印度历史的权威,试图建构起阅容多元的印度景观。

关键词:《午夜之子》; 萨利姆; 后现代伦理; 后殖民印度; 他者

作者简介: 李珍玲, 文学博士, 深圳大学外国语学院副研究员, 主要从事比较文学和英美文学研究; 宋昀, 文学博士, 常州大学外国语学院讲师, 主要从事英美旅行文学研究。本文为国家社科基金年度项目"20世纪美国旅华文学的中国书写研究"【项目批号: 23BWW014】阶段性成果。

Title: Postmodern Ethics in Midnight's Children

Abstract: In *Midnight's Children*, Saleem is both the protagonist and the narrator. Through Saleem's story and narrative, Rushdie expresses his deep thoughts on post-colonial Indian society, carrying a sense of ethical teaching. As the protagonist, Saleem leads a difficult life full of indifference and suffering, but never losing faith and hope in his mind; as the narrator, Saleem indulges his emotions and dissolves authority in linguistic carnival. Based on postmodern Western ethical theory, this paper uses the method of ethical literary criticism to deeply investigate Saleem's life journey and narrative strategy in the complex socio-historical context of postcolonial India, restore Rushdie's critique and reconstruction of Indian reality, and discover the ethical value of the novel. This paper finds that *Midnight's*

Children is an ethical narrative that reconstructs the moral relations of postcolonial Indian society. The novel criticizes the persecution and violence of postcolonial India against the disadvantaged others, such as Saleem, midnight's children and the slum dwellers, and proclaims the true beauty and progressive power hidden in the others, thereby calling for an Indian society in which love, equality and peace are the moral norms. At the same time, the novel uses "pickled" writing, unreliable multi-perspective narratives and non-linear narratives to deconstruct the authority of Indian history, attempting to construct an Indian landscape that embraces diversity. **Keywords:** *Midnight's Children*; Saleem; postmodern ethics; postcolonial India; the others

Authors: Li Zhenling is Research Fellow of School of Foreign Languages, Shenzhen University (Shenzhen 518060, China). Her research interests are comparative literature and British and American Literature (Email: lizhenling@szu.edu.cn). Song Yun is Lecturer of School of Foreign Studies, Changzhou University (Changzhou 213159, China). His research interests are English literary studies situated in the transpacific area (Email: songyun@cczu.edu.cn).

《午夜之子》(Midnight's Children, 1981)是萨曼•拉什迪(Salman Rushdie)的成名作。长久以来,相关研究多把该小说视为典型的后殖民国家寓言,对其中的后殖民政治和民族建构等主题进行了全面解读和分析。「"文学在本质上是伦理的艺术"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语"14)。近年来,随着文学伦理学批评在中国学界的兴起,一些学者开始从文学伦理学批评视角出发,结合后殖民理论对该小说进行重新探查。2的确,小说围绕着伦理问题展开:主人公萨利姆一直在"成长"的问题上停留和挣扎,这就构成了小说中的"伦理线"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语"20),而他围绕这条伦理线面临的种种伦理困境和作出的"伦理选择"3,则构成了这条伦理线上持续存在的"伦理结"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语"20)。以往学者忽略的一点是,小说对伦理问题的探讨,不

¹ 参见 Timothy Brennan, Salman Rushdie and the Third World: Myths of the Nation, London: Macmillan, 1989.

² 参见 徐彬: "拉什迪的斯芬克斯之谜——《午夜之子》中的政治伦理悖论",《外语与外语教学》4(2015): 86-91;徐彬: "后殖民伦理批评",《文学伦理学批评理论研究》, 聂珍钊、王松林编,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第136-153页。

³ 有关"伦理选择"这一术语参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398; 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568 等论文。

仅带有后殖民特征,更由于其对他者、差异性、多元、异质、边缘的描绘而 呈现出强烈的后现代指向。鉴于此,本文基于后现代西方伦理学理论,运用 文学伦理学批评的方法,结合后殖民印度复杂的社会历史语境深刻探查萨利 姆的生命历程和叙事策略,并在此基础上还原拉什迪对印度现实的批判和重 构,从而挖掘小说的伦理价值,提供一个从伦理学角度认识《午夜之子》的 新视角。

一、从"主角"到"他者": 萨利姆的"伟人"出生和"缺陷"人生

后现代西方伦理学主张承认差异、尊重他者,担负对他者的绝对责任,并 以此为基础批判现代西方伦理学以自我为中心,排斥、蔑视、否定他者的观 念。萨利姆的出生和成长一直处于国家话语占主导地位的后殖民印度语境之 中。虽然以"主角"的身份出生,但随着其人生轨迹逐渐偏离人们的"伟人"期 待, 萨利姆也因此被质疑、被嘲笑, 慢慢成为人们眼中有"缺陷"的"他者", 受 尽身处边缘的冷落和屈辱。小说对这一过程的披露展现了文本站在道德正义 的立场对印度社会中充斥的狭隘、偏见和冷漠等意识的批判,体现出小说对 独立之后印度社会现状的不满和担忧。

由于萨利姆神奇的"卡点"出生,他成为绝对的中心和焦点,受到了几 乎所有人的"关爱"和"祝福"。诞生于印度独立当天零点这一巧合使他的 命运"与历史神秘地铐在一起"(Rushdie 3)。一时间,记者、摄影师、政 客等纷纷上门,用各种形式祝贺他的诞生。尼赫鲁总理甚至为他的生辰发 来贺词: "亲爱的萨利姆娃娃,请接收我对你诞生这一大喜事的迟到的祝 贺! 你是印度那个既古老而又永远年轻的面貌的最新体现。我们会最为关切 地注视你的成长,你的生活在某种意义上就是我们生活的镜子"(Rushdie 167)。家里人人对他寄予厚望,甚至为他创作了"无论你想要怎么样/你就 可以怎样 / 你会实现自己所有的理想"(Rushdie 173)的摇篮曲。可见,从 呱呱坠地那一刻起,萨利姆的人生就处于国家话语的建构之下,被强行与 国家的命运和家族的期望捆绑在一起。众人对萨利姆的众星捧月和种种期 待,是由他们的伦理身份决定的。作为独立印度的一员,期待国家的新生和 繁荣是他们的集体愿望,他们以守护和捍卫国家尊严和前途为首要和中心任 务。正如萨利姆意识到的那样: "我四周的人似乎都具有清楚得要命的目的 感"(Rushdie 210)。而萨利姆作为新生印度的隐喻,自然而然成为这种愿 望的承载者和接收者。众人将国家的成长和未来具象化为萨利姆的成长和未 来。在这种高度统一的对国家的责任面前,众人成为了理性原则的代表,他 们对萨利姆的期望带有极强的目的性和得失心,而非发自内心的美好祝愿和 衷心祝福。萨利姆很早就体会到了这一点:"他们在我身上的投资,期望得 到丰富的回报。〔……〕他们指望从我身上得到巨额利润,那就是成为伟 人"(Rushdie 215)。然而,"道德现象在本质上是'非理性的',因为只

有当它们优于目的考虑和得失计算时,它们才是道德的"(鲍曼 13)。没有非理性维度的加持,众人对萨利姆的种种期许,本质上是不道德的。萨利姆在理性原则的压制下被扁平化为一种类中心符号,成为了被剥夺个人欲望和理想的牺牲品。人们对萨利姆真正的喜怒哀乐并不关心,只关心后者是否按照他们的既有期待和规划成长、行动。在众人与萨利姆的关系中,萨利姆没有得到应有的尊重,人们想当然地把自己的臆想强加在萨利姆的身上,是对萨利姆不负责任的表现。他们的做法缺乏同情心和同理性,显出理性的冷漠和不近人情。众人代表的是一种主流的、同一的声音,他们推动构成了印度社会中一种以自我为中心的伦理关系,并不停地对萨利姆施加伦理压力,进行伦理暗示,逐渐成为于预萨利姆人生的不可抗力。

处于中心的萨利姆并没有收获生命的快乐,反而过早地感受到人生的压 力和重担,出现异常的生理反应和精神焦虑,这反映出国家话语所代表的理 性原则对人性的压制和导致的人的异化。面对来自各方的期盼,萨利姆一方 面有意识地迎合大家的期望,另一方面却进行无意识的逃避,从而成为一个 无解的矛盾体。在伦理身份上,萨利姆作为家中独子,最希望得到的就是父 母家人的肯定。他渴望满足他们的期望,害怕成为"一事无成"的普通人,小 小年纪就为"人生的目标"伤透脑筋。他无数次对着窗口茫然地问:"伟大 是从哪里来的呢?你怎么才能搞到一些呢?又是在什么时候呢?"(Rushdie 215) 还是孩子的萨利姆早早地就感知到身上的"重担",开始出现明显的 身份焦虑, 具体表现为身体上的早熟和行为上的逃避。他食量惊人, 生长速 度奇快无比,新陈代谢十分旺盛。他总是躲在母亲卧室的洗衣箱,生怕暴露 自己的迷茫和恐慌。洗衣箱在此充当了临时子宫的作用,象征着萨利姆一次 次逃离自己被强加的理性枷锁,进入未出生前的自由状态。"感情已重获尊 严,不可解释的而且可能是非理性的同情心和忠诚重新获得了合法性"(鲍 曼 38)。洗衣箱是萨利姆为自己打造的情感空间,拒绝理性能量的入侵: "躲 在洗衣箱里(……)摆脱了各种各样的压力,不必为满足父母和历史对我的 要求而绞尽脑汁"(Rushdie 215)。萨利姆所感受到的重重压力,反映的是 一种失衡的伦理关系。众人从"自我"出发所形成的与萨利姆的关系,恰恰 使萨利姆失去了"自我"。这也暗示,萨利姆生活的印度社会在往单一、冷漠、狭 隘的方向发展。

随着萨利姆一天天长大,人们发现其身上与"伟人"相去甚远的诸多"缺陷",萨利姆也因此不断遭受来自众人的排挤,以至于无法在家庭和社会立足,沦为彻底的"他者"。首先是身体上有"缺陷"的"他者",表现为外表的丑陋与身体的残缺。随着萨利姆年岁渐长,人们再也无法直视萨利姆的丑陋。据萨利姆自述,"我脸上〔……〕有几块胎记破了相。我右面发根处有几块黑色的胎记往下延伸,而左耳上有块大黑斑。我的鬓角太突出,就像鼓出来的拜占庭式建筑的圆顶。〔……〕像是发育不良的牛角似的鬓角〔……〕

大得像疯长的黄瓜一样的鼻子"(Rushdie 169)。在家中,父亲对萨利姆的 长相一直心有芥蒂,尤其看不惯他的大鼻子;在学校,萨利姆甚至因为长相 而遭到老师的当众羞辱和同学的集体嘲讽。地理老师把他的脸比作复杂的人 文地理,嘲讽"这个丑猢狲的面孔就是全印度的地图"(Rushdie 321)。萨 利姆不仅因此丢尽脸面,还被老师揪掉了头发,成为秃顶,引来更多嘲笑。不 久,因看不惯丑陋的萨利姆收到女孩的跳舞邀请,同学格兰迪和佩斯极尽嘲 讽和逗弄,最后在打闹中用门将萨利姆的中指夹断,造成萨利姆身体上的残 缺。"我中指的三分之一掉在那里,就像是一块嚼得烂烂的泡泡糖"(Rushdie 325)。萨利姆因为外貌不断地以被嘲笑和被羞辱的形象出现,并用自己的身 体为他人的恶劣行为买单。身体上的残缺无疑是雪上加霜,使得萨利姆坐实 丑陋之名,越来越成为大家眼中不讨喜的异类。

其次是行为上有"缺陷"的"他者",表现为无法为人道的秘密法 力。九岁的一天,当萨利姆照旧躲在洗衣箱时,他发现了自己身上的某种法 力:他能听到许多人在他脑袋里乱哄哄地说话的声音。很快他还发现,"这 些声音可以调控——我成了个收音机,可以将音量缩小或者放大,我可以在 其中进行挑选。我甚至可以借助意志的力量,将我新近发现的内在的耳朵关 上"(Rushdie 226)。萨利姆误以为那是大天使们同他讲话的声音,天真地 把自己当成了先知。他为终于发现了自己的价值而激动得夜不能寐: "最后 我终于看见天才的围巾就像一只绣花蝴蝶一般飞了下来,伟大的斗篷落到了 我的肩膀上"(Rushdie 225)。第二天一早,他信心满满地召集家人,当众 宣布自己伟大的"先知"身份,却遭到大家的一致奚落和攻击。愤怒的父亲 更是一巴掌把他的左耳扇到失聪。当他跌倒并砸碎了一块绿色玻璃台面时,他 好不容易发现的伟大"自我"也摔得粉碎。下面这段话值得回味: "我平生 第一次对自己有了确定的感觉,我跌在绿雾般的带着锋利的刃口的玻璃碎片 世界中,在这个世界里我再也不能把我脑海中的一切告诉与我关系最密切的 人。〔······〕我注定要不断地为我生活的目标是什么而时刻苦恼"(Rushdie 227-228)。家人的愤怒具有两重伦理因素:一。从宗教伦理的角度看,萨利 姆一家是虔诚的穆斯林教徒,而萨利姆自称"先知"是对穆斯林教义的无知 亵渎,触犯了宗教禁忌:二。从科学伦理的角度看,萨利姆的魔幻陈述超出 了普遍的科学认知,听起来更像是没有逻辑的胡言乱语。双重伦理考量共同 指向印度社会里既定的道德秩序和规范,而萨利姆魔幻的发言则违背了这些 道德规范,扰乱了道德秩序,因而才会受到家人的指责和攻击。萨利姆天马 行空的思想在高度务实的印度社会里显得格格不入,人们对此无法理解也无 意沟通,只是机械地将其划为"异端"和"大逆不道"。

再次是身份上有"缺陷"的"他者",表现为印英杂交的不明身世。就 在父母打算为断指的萨利姆输血的时候,竟意外发现他们之间没有血缘关 系。原来,为了取悦身为激进分子的前男友,时任产科护士的玛丽悄悄进行

了一次"阶级革命", 竟调换了两个几乎同时出生的孩子的名牌。萨利姆其 实是流浪艺人夫妇温吉和范妮塔的孩子, 而穆斯林富商家真正的儿子湿婆却 被送往贫民窟。雪上加霜的是,萨利姆其实也不是温吉的亲儿子,而是范妮 塔与英国外交官苟合生下的野种。他成了个不折不扣的混血儿(Anglo-Indian mongrel)和私生子(bastard)。身世彻底暴露后,他几乎是一夜之间失去了 父母的宠爱, 先后被送往不同的亲戚家寄居。举家迁往巴基斯坦后, 他终日 混迹街头和窑子,还因为爱上了没有血缘关系的妹妹铜猴儿而遭后者唾弃。所 有这些表明, 萨利姆已经成为家庭伦理关系中的他者。不久, 在印巴战争的 纷飞烟火中,萨利姆的家被夷为平地,父母双亡,萨利姆本人被飞来的痰盂 砸中,陷入昏迷和失忆。出于报复,铜猴儿把他送往军队成为军犬,吃狗食 住狗窝,成为非人的人。"斯芬克斯之谜"摆在萨利姆面前,他是人是兽? 失去了记忆的萨利姆,身上的"人性因子"几乎消失殆尽,大脑的宕机象征 着伦理意识的暂时缺失, 萨利姆身上的"兽性因子"(聂珍钊, 《文学伦理 学批评导论》 38) 占了上风,他成为了只有动物本能的兽。至此, 萨利姆被 彻底边缘化, 甚至成为动物他者——一只来路不明的"斯芬克斯"。萨利姆 复杂的身世,挑战了既定的血缘伦理关系,使得家族观念岌岌可危。父母的 绝望和妹妹的报复表明,后殖民印度社会片面追求身份的纯粹性和本质性,无 法容忍来路不明的不纯出生。

萨利姆逐步沦为"他者"的过程,也是小说持续批判将"自我"与"他者"对 立起来的后殖民印度社会伦理观的过程。由于其"出格"的外表、行为和身 世,萨利姆一直受到不公对待和谩骂侮辱,遭遇身体和精神上的双重折磨。透 过萨利姆的不被认可和曲折人生,小说将一个排斥多元、缺乏包容心和同情 心的印度社会呈现到读者面前——"一个把孩子生理或者心理上的任何异常 之处都看作是家庭的奇耻大辱的国家"(Rushdie 234),暗示求同存异、平 等对待众生才是后殖民时代印度的出路。

二、"他者"的力量: 萨利姆的午夜之子和贫民窟

后现代伦理不仅批判自我与他者对立的道德关系,而且揭露和关注他者 命运,为他者提供平等的言说渠道和表达空间,并借用他者反省自我。"自 我与他者的伦理关联优先于自我与他者的存在关系,他者的面容对自我是一 种召唤和规训,他者的存在引导着自我的超越,只有超越自我,拥抱他性或 外在性,才能克服唯我论,走向善良和和平"(陈世丹 尹宇 116-117)。无 论是萨利姆,还是与之密切关联的午夜之子(大会)和贫民窟,都是他者或 巨他者的象征。小说从萨利姆的视角出发,一方面聚焦午夜之子和贫民窟等 弱势边缘群体的艰辛生活和悲惨遭遇,借此呼唤友善和责任、拒绝集权和暴 力,另一方面强调午夜之子的生生不息和贫民窟众生的顽强生命,表达众生 平等的伦理观和生命观。所有这些,表达出作者对印度社会现实的强烈批判 和建设和谐印度社会的美好期许。

用"他者"来解读"自我",往往能看到事物的真相,抵达事物的本质,知 晓不为人知的一面。"他人是自我的'镜像'和'面容',它直接切近'自我' 和真理"(陈世丹 尹宇 118)。运用通灵术, 萨利姆能够让自己的灵魂钻入 别人的大脑, 听取他人的所思所想。他先是深入父母与邻居的内心, 发掘了 各式各样的情感、苦恼、丑闻和罪恶。他第一次看到,在风平浪静的日常生 活背后,每个人都有着不能见光的秘密:父亲对秘书的龌蹉思想、舅舅每况 愈下的电影生涯、母亲对旧情人的思念、玛丽的负罪感等等。1 随后,他开始 任由灵魂在全国漫游,在陌生人的心灵之间来去自如,发现了更多丑陋:践 踏粮食的北方邦地主、奥里萨邦的粮食短缺、国大党工作人员的秘密行贿、孟 买邦首席部长的喝尿癖好、总理的星象学迷信等等。2通过萨利姆的他者视 阈,印度人民的喜怒哀乐变得鲜明,印度现实的阴暗面被揭开。后殖民印度 社会呈现出表里不一的特征,在看似信心满满、斗志昂扬的建国热情中,其 实充斥着迷茫、恐慌、怀旧、不安等各种情绪和混乱、无序、腐败、迷信等 各类现象。小说对此类种种的揭示,正是一个提醒印度社会进行自我反省的 讨程。

"他者应该被听到"(戴维斯 155)。小说通过各种渠道,给他者提供 发声的场所,其中最重要的就是午夜之子大会(Midnight Children's Conference, 简称M.C.C.)。萨利姆用通灵术把所有的午夜之子集结到一起,于每天 夜里召开畅所欲言的午夜之子大会: "五百八十一个各色各样的十岁孩子聚在 一起, 其吵吵闹闹、不守纪律的程度可想而知(……)整整一个小时里面, 只 听见双倍音量的叫喊、闲聊、争吵、嬉笑, 叽叽呱呱地闹个不同"(Rushdie 314-315)。活跃的午夜之子大会与窒息的外部世界形成强烈反差, 萨利姆坦 白: "醒来时,我得面对各种各样痛苦的事情,母亲难忘旧情人,父亲日益衰 竭,友情变化无常,学校里受人欺负。在睡梦中,我处于一个最令人激动的世 界的中心,这个世界是别的孩子从来没有见到过的"(Rushdie 315)。午夜之 子在黑夜中还一起探讨人生目标和意义,进行哲学辩论,所涉及的话题有"集 体主义、个人主义、幼儿革命、资本主义、利他主义、妇女权力、土地财产 等"(Rushdie 316-317),可谓囊括印度现实的方方面面。午夜之子来自印度 的四面八方,他们的声音实际上代表了后殖民印度来自不同种族、阶级、信 仰、语言和文化的人们被淹没的声音,客观反应了被遮蔽的社会现状和现实问 题,以至于萨利姆感叹道:"这些孩子除了既有特殊天赋外,其他方面并没 有什么特别的。他们整天想的也全是这些平常事情"(Rushdie 317)。这里的 "平常事情"恰巧是印度社会正在经历和亟需解决的问题,而午夜之子从边缘 对这些问题的关注,构成了促使印度反思和改善自身的重要力量。

¹ 参见 Salman Rushdie, Midnight's Children, London: Vintage, 2006, 235-237.

² 参见 Salman Rushdie, Midnight's Children, London: Vintage, 2006, 240-241.

后现代伦理拒绝二元对立的价值观,提倡多元性和包容性。在午夜之子 的辩论中, 萨利姆提倡包容和多元, 而湿婆则代表僵化的二元思维。萨利姆 强调思想、知识、人性、个性和艺术的重要性——"人类的自由意志〔……〕 希望(……)伟大的精神,又称之为圣贤(……)还有诗歌、艺术,以及 (·····)"(Rushdie 355),而与萨利姆法力不相上下的湿婆则对萨利姆的 倡议嗤之以鼻,遵循一种二元对立的单线思维: "只有金钱和穷困、富有和 贫乏、右和左"(Rushdie 354)。面对这种"无穷无尽的二元对立论"(Rushdie 354), 萨利姆呼唤团结和友爱: "〔……〕假使我们团结在一起, 假使我 们彼此相爱,假使我们向人们表明〔······〕永远同甘共苦〔······〕"(Rushdie 354-355)。对他来说,包容和宽容才是解决印度社会问题的根本方法: "只有坚持不同的原则,成为新的力量,我们才有可能实现我们出生的使 命!"(Rushdie 354) 萨利姆与湿婆水火不容,构成了在午夜之子大会上争 锋相对的两股力量,这正体现出两种伦理价值的交锋。小说借萨利姆之口宣 扬以包容和多元为核心价值的伦理秩序,并通过表现湿婆的偏激蛮横和咄咄 逼人表达对暴力和分离的批判,进而突出用多元原则建立一个和平、友善印 度社会的愿景。

德里的贫民窟则被描写为一片多元和包容的乐土, 那里遵循着友爱与和 善的道德秩序,为萨利姆等无家可归的弱势群体提供容身之处。举目无亲的 萨利姆被午夜之子之一的贫民窟女巫婆婆帝(Parvati-the-witch)带回德里的 流浪艺人聚居区避难。那里是一番典型的多样化景观: 乞讨的、残疾的、流 浪的、变戏法的、玩杂耍的、搞催眠的、托钵僧等住在一起;他们解决争端 的方式是和平且和谐的: "凡是发生口角啦或者其他问题啦都在'画儿辛格' 那项巨大的无所不在的黑伞底下一一解决"(Rushdie 555)。与此相反,贫 民窟外面的世界正在走向偏执的单一化,并逐渐陷入英德拉政府的黑暗统治 中。贫民窟是各种不被强权社会承认的"他者"聚集的地方,是主流声音外 围的"异声",蕴含足够的反叛和革命精神。萨利姆模仿主流的声音,明贬 暗褒: "江湖艺人几乎个个都是共产党,一点不错,都是赤色分子!叛乱分子, 危害公共安全的人,社会渣滓——这么一群不信神的人生活在真主的房子阴 影之下,真是对主的亵渎!"(Rushdie 553)在外人看来,聚居区是危险的 地带,那里充满了危险的叛逆分子,威胁着人们的生命,是印度社会的毒瘤。萨 利姆却坦承, "这里的生活十分自在舒服"(Rushdie 553)。可见, 贫民窟 是包容之所,是真正提供友爱和和平的地方。

小说详细描写了政府针对贫民窟和午夜之子的极端暴力行动,表现对狭隘印度社会的控诉。首先,贫民窟在独裁政府名曰美化市容实则清除异己的行动中被夷为平地。政府派来的"志愿者"中,"所有的男子都有着同样的卷头发和女人阴唇那样的嘴唇","那些高贵的小姐也都完全是同一种模式"(Rushdie 599)。小说讽刺的语言表露出对这种傀儡般的冷漠的

批判。曾经一派祥和景象的贫民窟变成暴力的炼狱: "'画儿辛格'将江湖 艺人召集到他身边,他愤怒地挥动雨伞。这把伞曾经用来保证聚居区的和 睦,如今成了武器,就像是堂吉诃德先生挥动的长矛一样。〔……〕就在此 时,对贫民窟又发动了一场更加可怕的进攻,派军队来对付江湖艺人、女人 和小孩了。(......) 到处是枪托啪嗒啪嗒打人的声音(......) 人们被扯住头 发拖到等得不耐烦的运货车里……" (Rushdie 599-600)。其次, 萨利姆和 其他午夜之子受到囚禁和绝育。他们遭受的不仅是生理上的去势,还有精神 上的伤残: "四百二十个人站在贝拿勒斯乱七八糟的小路上,在阳光下吧嗒 吧嗒地直眨眼睛。四百二十个人你看我我看你,发觉在各人的眼睛里残留着 被阉割的事,大家再也忍受不住,于是最后一次低声道别各奔东西,消失到 茫茫人海之中暗暗疗伤去了"(Rushdie 616)。午夜之子的存在,时刻提醒 人们集权政府对印度人民的伤害。这种伤害不仅是身体上的伤痕,更是精神 上的创伤,在某种程度上掐灭了印度社会的进步力量和进取精神。无论是贫 民窟众生还是午夜之子,都是英德拉集权政府眼中的他者。针对他们的暴力 行为表现出一个走向狭隘和失控的印度社会。

小说在极力批判针对弱势群体的暴力的同时,也给予他们绝地重生 的希望,强调他们的乐观和顽强,从而体现出小说重建以善意和平等为道 德准则的印度社会的愿望。旧的贫民窟虽然被铲除,但新的贫民窟很快出 现,成为政府根本无法捕捉的存在。"据说在江湖艺人聚居区给推平以后的 第二天, 市中心就出现了一个新的贫民窟, 紧紧靠在新德里火车站旁边。立 刻派了推土机去对付那些小窝棚,但是什么也没有找到"(Rushdie 602-603)。贫民窟继续以它的方式存在着,为生活在边缘和底层的印度人民提 供栖息之地。同样,午夜之子们虽然被集体绝育,落得无法生育后代的悲 惨下场,但是他们的子孙其实已经遍地开花,这得益于湿婆——曾经的午 夜之子之———与多个印度女人产下的无数私生子——也包括阿达姆•西 奈(Adam Sinai)。"这位战斗英雄自由自在地在印度大地上到处留下私 生子"(Rushdie 571)。湿婆先是流连于有钱女人堆里,使得"有钱人家 的摇篮里增加了不少活蹦乱跳的漂亮婴儿"(Rushdie 575),后又沉迷于 妓女丛中, "在首都生下了一大堆在街上胡闹的顽童,这跟他和金碧辉煌 的客厅里的太太们生出来的那一大群私生子简直可以相映成趣"(Rushdie 575)。如此一来,午夜之子的后代对印度社会的不同种族和阶层进行了渗 透,哪里都有他们的存在。更难能可贵的是,他们携带着午夜之子关注社会 问题、向往美好生活的优良品质,成为影响印度未来的关键力量。小说以 阿达姆•西奈为例,描绘了他们潜在的巨大能量。阿达姆有着纯净的蓝眼 睛、一对招风耳和不轻易发出任何声音的嘴巴, 所有这些指向一个耳聪目 明、警言慎行的形象。他一出身就疾病缠身,不发出声音也不说话,不睁开 眼睛也不吃药,不对人微笑也不向人索取。萨利姆意识到:"他是在'紧急

状态'下出生的,他将会而且已经谨慎得多,耐心地等待时机。但等到他采取行动时,他是不可抗拒的。他已经比我更加厉害、更加强硬、更加坚决(……)"(Rushdie 594)。从隐喻的角度来看,阿达姆是在无声地对抗着不堪的印度现实。果然,当黑暗的"紧急状态"时期结束后,阿达姆也恢复正常,正式开启他的成长之路。萨利姆意识到一个新旧交替时代的来临:"阿达姆是第二代具有魔力的孩子中的一员,他们将来长大了会比第一代利害得多。他们不会去算命或者从星象里寻找自己的命运,而是在自己坚不可摧的意志的熔炉里锻造它"(Rushdie 626)。正是这些孩子的存在,给予印度新的希望。他们见证过暴力与黑暗,因此比任何人都向往和平与安宁。

总体而言,小说通过对午夜之子和贫民窟众生等边缘弱势群体的描写,集中披露了印度社会存在的暴力和集权,从而暴露后殖民印度在发展过程中的各种问题和困境,能够对印度社会反省自身起到提醒作用。同时,小说将善意和责任的种子播散在午夜之子的后代身上,暗含对建立一个美好的印度未来的期许。

三、众声喧哗的历史: 萨利姆的多元叙事策略

后现代作家还运用后现代伦理的叙事手法,消除作者的叙述权威,取消 文本中的叙述中心,尊重差异和他者,进行狂欢叙事和互文叙事,以此表现 后现代伦理思想。所谓后现代伦理的叙事就是消除作者权威、叙述者中心,采 用多角度观察、多叙述者、多声音、多样化的叙事,这种去中心、尊重差异 和他者、平等对话的叙事形式与后现代伦理学的主张是一致的,主要表现为 狂欢话叙事和互文叙事。当小说主人公萨利姆在危机四伏的印度社会中夹缝 求生时,小说叙述者萨利姆显然略高一筹,他在回忆打造的叙事空间里如鱼 得水,用灵活跳跃的语言回顾自己的个人历史、还原他眼中的印度历史。总 体来看,萨利姆的叙事是在后现代伦理观念和道德原则的影响下进行的语言 实践。叙述者萨利姆运用"腌制化"写作、不可靠多角度叙事和非线性叙事 等多元叙事策略,消解历史书写中正确与错误、虚构与真实等的界限,并最 大限度地在编年史的单一中加入不同的声音和元素,从而从根本上解构官方 印度历史的权威和单调,为重构一个包容、多样和多元的印度社会提供方向。

叙述者萨利姆进行了带有实验性质的"腌制化"写作,其实质是一种包罗万象、丰富多彩的历史叙事。萨利姆从泡菜腌制中获得灵感,认为自己找到了叙事的法门。他发现: "腌制过程的象征意义是,生出印度人口的六亿个卵子可以塞进一个正常大小的酱菜瓶子里,六亿个精子可以用一把汤勺舀起来。因此,每一个酱菜瓶〔……〕都包涵了最为崇高的可能性,那就是将历史做成酸辣酱的可行性,以及将时间腌制起来的伟大希望!"(Rushdie 642)模拟泡菜的腌制过程,他发明了一种独特的"腌制化"叙事,即在叙述的过程中加入"回忆、梦想、观念"(Rushdie 643),并通过控制各种

主观元素的份量和比例,调制出一种多元味觉和面貌的历史叙事。通过这种 叙事,萨利姆希望历史能以鲜活的方式保存下来,不被遗忘。三十个章节被 比喻为三十个泡菜瓶子,每个瓶子里装有腌制过的印度历史——"架子上已 经有了三十个瓶子,准备送出去让这个患有遗忘症的国家使用"(Rushdie 643)。萨利姆自信满满: "凡是吃过它的人就会知道胡椒瓶在巴基斯坦起了 什么作用,或者在桑德班斯丛林里会有什么感觉"(Rushdie 643)。不仅如 此, 多种个体经验和主观意识加入, 极大地增添了历史故事的魅力和层次, 给 予人们解读印度历史的不同体验。"或许有一天,世界会品尝一下腌制的历 史。对某些人来说,它们也许味道太重,它们的气味也许有点冲鼻子,也许 会激得人眼泪直流。不过我还是希望能够说它们的味道完全货真价实,反映 了真相"(Rushdie 644)。借助"腌制化"叙事,小说有意消解印度官方的 权威历史,从个人和主观角度还原不为人知的历史真相,提醒印度人民不要 遗忘历史。

萨利姆采用不可靠的互文叙事策略,模糊正确与错误的概念,进一步解 构印度官方历史的权威。拉什迪故意让萨利姆的叙事错漏百出,制造一种记 忆混乱的假象, 从而混淆正确与错误的概念。比如, 圣雄甘地的死亡日期明 显与史实不符: 又如,印度教神话中象头神(Ganesha)坐在毗耶娑(Vyasa) 脚边记录《摩诃婆罗多》(Mahabharata)这一经典场景也被篡改,变成象头 神坐在蚁垤(Valmiki)的脚边写下《罗摩衍那》(Ramayana);再如,萨利 姆先是在没有任何证据的情况下宣告了湿婆的死亡,后又主动承认自己的草 率,声称他并没有找到湿婆死亡的确切证据——"说老实话,有关湿婆之死 我扯了谎"(Rushdie 619)。总而言之,叙述者"极其不可靠,不仅前后不一,自 相矛盾,而且经常是彻头彻尾的狡辩"(Booker 983)。可见,拉什迪善于挪 用各种历史、宗教和神话典故,使小说文本在呈现强烈的互文性的同时,又 不乏戏谑和揶揄。由于这个不可靠的叙述者,读者时常感到困惑,他们突然 发现"不可能就文本中哪些是真(正确)的,哪些是假(错误)的得出任何 令人满意的结论"(Booker 983)。正如叙述者走下神坛,向读者袒露自己的 主观偏见一样,历史在他的书写中也变得亦真亦假,古老的宗教和神话变得 模糊不定,所有的一切都变得没有中心、没有支点。拉什迪借此消解历史权 威,为读者开放一个自由解读印度历史的空间。

萨利姆还善于用叙事操纵现实,从而模糊虚构与现实之间的界限。萨利 姆有意区分他叙述的印度和现实存在的印度: 让甘地在错误的时间死去, 让 印度大选的日期提前。萨利姆故意让读者明白,他是站在边缘人的角度上书 写一部后殖民印度史。大卫·沃特森(David Watson)有言:"语言不是一面 空镜,等待着被历史和民族(历史上的主导事件)的形象所填充;它正是创 造和决定这些叙事的力量"(218)。通过语言的力量, 萨利姆拆解了虚构和 现实之间的二元对立,甚至提出了一种反转。虚构可以创造现实,而现实可

以服从于虚构。"历史的书写和历史的事件之间的传统联系被打破了"(Watson 218)。萨利姆所创造的虚构印度不是作为外在印度的参考,而是平行的另一个印度,虚构印度与现实印度形成了一种平行结构,他们是平等的、对话的关系。萨利姆问道:"一个错误是不是会将整篇东西的真实性毁了呢?是不是因为我不顾一切地追求人生的意义,因此到了颠倒是非的地步——只是为了把自己置于中心的地位,我才来重写我那个时代的历史呢?"(Rushdie, Midnight's Children 250)这看似反思的反问实则暴露了叙述者萨利姆维护平等、开放对话的决心:虚构历史也能反应现实历史,现实历史却不一定是真实历史。

此外,萨利姆奉行一种双层或双视角叙事,制造出叙事主体的双重或多 重声音, 使小说在叙事上呈现多声部特征, 从而进一步突出所叙述的印度历 史的多样和复杂。萨利姆一方面向情人博多叙述自己所经历的印度历史,两 者因此构成直接的叙述者与受述者的关系,另一方面又化身元小说评论者 (metafictional commentator),与他假想的文本外读者互动。元小说评论者 是叙述者的有力补充和必要支撑。当博多指责萨利姆讲述历史的方式时,元 小说评论家往往站出来为叙述者进行辩护,邀请隐形的读者理解叙述者。元 小说评论者同时也是叙述者的提醒人,一个高于讲故事的人的局外人,敦促 后者站在叙事的角度上与被描述的历史保持距离。每当叙述者萨利姆陷入某 段回忆无法自拔或历史来到戏剧性的节点时,评论者萨利姆就跳出来自嘲一 番,诸如"我似乎被这个广播隐喻困住了"(Rushdie 338)或"我为这戏剧 性的场面道歉"(Rushdie 513)这样的自评四处散见于文本之中。尼尔·登·考 特纳(Neil Ten Kortenaar)注意到,"萨利姆身上的某一部分在对往事的回忆 中表现出一种来自个人的痛楚; 而他的另一部分则能够站在外围, 坚持告诉 读者真相"(245)。这正是叙述者与评论者之间进行的视角商榷。当萨利姆 不断地进出不同的叙事框架时,他的视角也在不断调整,在局内人和局外人 的位置之间来回移动,代表着不同的声音和一种超越主体性的对话。可见,萨 利姆拒绝站在一个固定的位置来展开历史叙事,而是打破传统而单一的"叙述-受叙"二元模式,使历史书写处于一种流动的对话状态,从而为印度历史提 供了多重意义和可能。

萨利姆还是非线性叙事的忠实拥护者,他笔下的印度历史也因而具有了绵延的生命力和无限的开放性。山鲁佐德为了活命,连续讲了一千零一夜的故事。论其秘诀,那就是不停地设置悬念、延迟和离题,山鲁佐德也因此成为非线性叙事的象征。这与后现代主义去中心、去权威的宗旨不谋而合,非线性叙事也因此成为后现代写作的典型叙事策略之一。萨利姆自诩泡菜厂的山鲁佐德,自知命不久矣,于是打算用叙事来记录印度历史。他说: "要是我想最终留下一点什么有意义——是的,有意义——的东西的话,我必须加紧工作,要比山鲁佐德更快"(Rushdie 4)。然而,他所理解的印度历史是

高度繁杂且多样,无法用简单的叙事将其囊括。"有这么多的故事要讲,太 多了,这么多的生命、事件、奇迹、地方、谣传交织在一起,一些稀奇古怪 的事件和尘世间常见的东西紧密地混杂在一起!"(Rushdie 4) 鉴于此,萨 利姆在叙述中并不完全遵循时间和逻辑顺序,而是更多地遵循自己的情感需 要,因为"那么多东西在我肚子力推推搡搡"(Rushdie 4)。他经常停下来 解释那些似乎与故事主线没有直接联系的事情,善于通过频繁的分心和离题 设置悬念,惹得信奉"接下来发生什么主义" (what-happened-nextism)的 听者博多颇不耐烦。萨利姆把她描述成一个缺乏领悟力的浅薄听众,从而凸 显其叙述的印度历史的深刻与复杂。他感叹道, "有时候,我真希望找到鉴 赏水平更高的听众,希望这个人能理解叙述中需要节奏、步调巧妙地引进一 些将来能发展、壮大从而成为主旋律的小调和弦"(Rushdie 135)。萨利姆 与博多在故事讲述方式上的分歧甚至争吵,实际上体现的是历史观念上的分 歧。博多钟爱的线性叙事体现的是一种冷漠、理性、封闭的历史观念, 在这 种观念下,印度历史是冰冷的、客观的、单调的现实。而萨利姆的非线性叙 事体现的则是一种温情的、感性的、开放的历史观念,印度历史在这种观念 的指引下成为有温度的、有声音的、有色彩的文本伦理。非线性叙事本质上 体现出一种后现代伦理, 它以包容之姿允许悬念、隐瞒、推迟、分支、曲折、漏 洞等,从而最大限度地延长了叙事生命,开放了《午夜之子》作为历史小说 的内涵。

《午夜之子》是一次重构后殖民时代印度社会道德关系的伦理叙事。小说批判后殖民现实对萨利姆、午夜之子和贫民窟居民等弱势群体他者的迫害和暴力,宣扬蕴藏在他者身上的真善美和进取力量,以此呼唤一个以友爱、和平、平等为道德规范的印度社会。与此同时,小说采用"腌制化"写作、不可靠多角度叙事和非线性叙事等手法解构印度历史的权威,试图建构起包容多元的印度景观。拉什迪在写作中从文本内外对后现代伦理思想的突出建构使得《午夜之子》具有了较高的伦理价值和教诲功能。小说提醒印度人民在勿忘殖民伤痛历史的同时,更要正视印度社会的残酷现实,同时用乐观、包容和开放的心态去迎接后殖民印度的未来。文学伦理学批评方法让《午夜之子》在出版 40 周年这一重要时间节点重新焕发新机。

Works Cited

齐格蒙特•鲍曼:《后现代伦理学》,张成岗译。南京:江苏人民出版社,2003年。

[Bauman, Zygmund. *Postmodern Ethics*, translated by Zhang Chenggang. Nanjing: Jiangsu People Press, 2003.]

Booker, M. K. "Beauty and the Beast: Dualism as Despotism in the Fiction of Salman Rushdie." *ELH: English Literary History* 4 (1990): 977-997.

- Brennan, Timothy. Salman Rushdie and the Third World: Myths of the Nation. London: Macmillan, 1989.
- 陈世丹、尹宇: "沃尔曼作品中的回应、面对、正义和移情——后现代他者伦理观",《外语与外语教学》3(2019):116-124。
- [Chen Shidan and Yin Yu. "Response, Face, Justice and Empathy in Vollmann's Works: A Post-modern Ethics Towards the Other." *Foreign Languages and Their Teaching* 3 (2019): 116-124.]
- 柯林•戴维斯:《列维纳斯》,李瑞华译。南京:江苏人民出版社,2006年。
- [Davis, Colin. Levinas, translated by Li Ruihua. Nanjing: Jiangsu People Press, 2006.]
- Kortenaar, Neil Ten. Self, Nation, Text in Salman Rushdie's Midnight Children. Montreal: Mc-Gill-Queen's UP, 2004.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 基本理论与术语", 《外国文学研究》1(2010): 12-22。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundamentals and Terms." *Foreign Literature Studies* 1 (2020): 12-22.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- Rushdie, Salman. Midnight's Children. London: Vintage, 2006.
- Watson, David. "Borderline Fiction: Writing the Nation in Salman Rushdie's *Midnight's Children*." *Journal of Literary Studies/Tydskrif vir Literatuurwetenskap* 14 (1998): 213-227.
- 徐彬: "拉什迪的斯芬克斯之谜——《午夜之子》中的政治伦理悖论",《外语与外语教学》 4(2015): 86-91。
- [Xu Bin. "Rushdie's Sphinx Riddle—the Ethical Political Paradoxes in *Midnight's Children*." Foreign Languages and Their Teaching 4 (2015): 86-91.]
- ——: "后殖民伦理批评",《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,聂珍钊、王松林编。北京: 北京大学出版社,2020年,第136-153页。
- [—. "Postcolonial Ethical Criticism." *A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism*, edited by Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020. 136-153.]

From Brain Text to the Final Text: Karunatilaka's Ethical Consciousness in Constructing Brain Text

Kong Yuan & Li Zhuo

Abstract: Brain text is a central concept in ethical literary criticism. Shehan Karunatilaka's Booker Prize-winning novel, The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, developed from two earlier drafts, The Devil's Dance and Chats with the Dead, illustrates the author's process of constructing brain text. Karunatilaka employs magical realism, blending the backdrop of Sri Lanka's civil war with elements of Eastern mythology, enabling readers unfamiliar with Sri Lankan culture to grasp its core themes. This reflects the author's ethical balance between cultural universality and historical authenticity. Furthermore, in the transition from brain text to written text, Karunatilaka makes complex ethical choices, depicting the brutality of war and the moral dilemmas faced by individuals caught in the tide of history. The struggle between Maali Almeida's rational and irrational wills represents not only a personal psychological conflict but also a broader pursuit of social justice and historical truth. Lastly, by exploring the tension between personal identity and societal expectations, Karunatilaka probes into intricate ethical dilemmas. The novel intertwines individual struggles with wider socio-political conflicts, revealing the multidimensional nature of moral decision-making within specific cultural and historical contexts.

Keywords: Shehan Karunatilaka; *The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida*; *Chats with the Dead*; brain text; ethical consciousness

Authors: Kong Yuan is Lecturer at School of Foreign Languages of Yunnan University (Kunming 650500, China). Her research interest includes English Literature and Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: yuankong@ynu.edu.cn). Li Zhuo (corresponding author) is Post-doctoral Researcher at School of Foreign Studies of Nanjing University (Nanjing 210023, China) and Lecturer at School of Foreign Languages of Zhejiang University of Finance and Economics (Hangzhou 310018, China). His research interest includes Marxist literary and art theory as well as English literature (Email: 547023367@qq.com).

标题: 从脑文本到终稿: 论卡鲁纳蒂拉卡脑文本建构中的伦理意识

内容摘要:脑文本是文学伦理学批评的核心术语。谢汉·卡鲁纳蒂拉卡的布 克奖获奖小说《马里·阿尔梅达的七个月亮》由《魔鬼之舞》和《与逝者聊天》 两个稿本发展而来, 展现了作者建构脑文本的过程。作者利用魔幻现实主义 手法,将斯里兰卡的内战背景与东方神话元素结合,使得对斯里兰卡文化不 熟悉的读者也能理解其核心内容,体现了其在文化共通性和历史真相之间的 伦理平衡。在解码脑文本为书写文本时,作者进行了更为复杂的伦理选择,呈 现了战争的残酷,描绘个体在历史洪流中的道德困境。马里·阿尔梅达的理 性意志与非理性意志之间的博弈,不仅是个人的心理挣扎,也是对社会正义 和历史真相的追求。最后,通过个人身份与社会期望之间的张力,卡鲁纳蒂 拉卡深入探讨了其小说创作复杂的伦理困境。他将个人斗争与更广泛的社会 政治冲突交织在一起,展现了伦理选择在特定文化和历史背景下的多维性。 **关键词:** 谢汉·卡鲁纳蒂拉卡:《马里·阿尔梅达的七个月亮》;《与逝者聊天》; 脑文本: 伦理意识

作者简介: 孔媛, 云南大学外国语学院讲师, 主要研究方向为英语文学和文 学伦理学批评;李卓,南京大学外国语学院博士后、浙江财经大学外国语学 院讲师,主要研究方向为马克思主义文艺理论和英语文学。本文为2024年江 苏省社科基金年度青年项目"21世纪美国左翼文学发展趋势研究"【项目批号: 24WWC001】及云南大学 2024 年度教育教学改革研究项目"基于职业能力培 养的英语专业课程改革研究——以《英语名篇选读》课程为例"阶段性成果。

Shehan Karunatilaka, author of the 2022 Booker Prize-winning novel The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, created this work through a series of extensive revisions, beginning with earlier drafts titled The Devil's Dance and Chats with the Dead. Karunatilaka has described his intent as ensuring that the novel could be understood by "a person who knows nothing about Sri Lankan and Eastern mythology" (Charles). His iterative process reflects what Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Yong (2019) describe as "a way of expressing the literary brain text that is preserved in the brain" (167). Despite the importance of these transformations, few scholars have explored the three manuscripts as a continuum, or examined how Karunatilaka's evolving creative materials, motivations, and psychological perspectives contribute to his work's ethical depth. His construction of "brain text" reflects his exploration of historical truth and universal human ethics, imbuing the novel with dimensions of moral reflection and historical insight that go beyond narrative. The manuscripts' progression highlights an ethical framework within his literary creation, where the author's revisions reveal an increasing commitment to cultural accessibility, moral inquiry, and ethical storytelling.

Critics have engaged with the novel's themes, narrative techniques, and its

exploration of memory, war, and human rights, noting how it presents "a very enjoyable combination of literary, political-ethical challenge, enjoyment, and recognition" (Boyagoda). However, these ethical themes are even more pronounced when we consider the revisionary journey across all three manuscripts. This paper aims to compare The Devil's Dance, Chats with the Dead, and The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida within the framework of ethical literary criticism, focusing on brain text construction and ethical issues. Through this lens, the study seeks to elucidate why Karunatilaka continually refined his manuscripts, framing these revisions as an ethical and creative response to the demands of both narrative clarity and universal accessibility.

From Brain text to Written Text: Karunatilaka's Three Manuscripts

The concept of "brain text" is central to ethical literary criticism, defined as "the result of the human brain's perception, cognition, understanding, and thinking of things in the form of memory" (Nie, "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism" 30). In his creation process for The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, Shehan Karunatilaka's progression from conceptualization to written draft illustrates the formation of brain text. The following will explain the role of brain text in shaping the final version of The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida by examining the specific and significant differences among the three versions. These differences highlight the evolution of the novel's core ideas and themes as they underwent refinement, guided by the author's creative choices. By analyzing thematic emphasis altered in each version, we can better understand how the brain text served as a dynamic framework for Shehan Karunatilaka's revisions.

Karunatilaka described his creative process as involving extensive research and reflection before starting to plot, noting in an interview, "I spent a lot of time researching and imagining before I began plotting" (Menon). He compared his earlier work, The Devil's Dance, to "a dense, impenetrable jungle," where he scattered ideas without much restraint-writing, as he put it, "like a bad gardener and just scattering seeds wherever I felt" (Menon). For Chats with the Dead, however, he adopted a more disciplined approach, starting with the story and character development and carefully envisioning the afterlife setting. This enabled him to construct a more focused and coherent narrative, refining ideas from The Devil's Dance into a more streamlined, ethical narrative that retained only the best elements.

The Devil's Dance, which remained stored in Karunatilaka's mind as brain

text for seven years, embodies this process of iterative refinement. "Without brain text, individuals cannot speak or write" (Nie, "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies" 568). His creative approach resonates with the principles of ethical literary criticism, wherein "the concept of brain is constantly combined and modified according to certain ethical rules, and the form of this conceptual combination evolves during revision" (Nie, "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism" 33). Thematically, The Devil's Dance addresses the horrors of reality and the haunted souls that wander postconflict from the afterlife's perspective. This tone—both grim and whimsical evolves in Chats with the Dead, which builds upon the dark humor and surrealism of its predecessor to examine the deeper, lingering effects of Sri Lanka's civil war. In it, war photographer Maali Almeida pieces together the mystery of his own death, grappling with the moral ambiguities of war, the afterlife, and the nature of memory.

The final revision, The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, reworks Chats with the Dead into a clearer and more impactful narrative. Notably, Karunatilaka's use of magical realism in The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida weaves together the backdrop of Sri Lanka's civil war with Eastern mythological elements, enriching the novel with detailed depictions of Sri Lankan afterlife culture. This approach balances cultural universality with historical authenticity, allowing readers unfamiliar with Sri Lankan culture to grasp its essential themes. Across the three versions of this manuscript, Karunatilaka's choices reflect an evolving ethical intention, shaping the narratives to deepen their ethical resonance and cultural accessibility for a global audience. In the early manuscript, Chats with the Dead, Almeida's tasks are brief and direct, while in The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, Karunatilaka expands upon these scenes, adding nuanced descriptions of the afterlife:

[...] a queue weaves around pillars and snakes along the walls. The air is foggy, though no one appears to be exhaling smoke or carbon dioxide. It looks like a car park with no cars, or a market space with nothing to sell. The ceiling is high and held by concrete pylons placed at irregular intervals across a sprawling yard. What appear to be large lift doors mark the far end and human shapes crowd in and out of them. $(5)^1$

Karunatilaka's choice to expand his scenes with intricate descriptions of the afterlife

See Shehan Karunatilaka, The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, London: Sort of Books, 2022. All references are to this edition will be cited hereafter in parentheses.

can be understood as a sophisticated act of brain text construction. Karunatilaka, a diasporic writer, channels his memories and ethical reflections on Sri Lanka's civil war through a carefully constructed brain text, resulting in a narrative that deftly navigates the dual expectations of representing Sri Lanka authentically to a global audience while resisting reductive portrayals of his homeland.

This deliberate brain text creation allows Karunatilaka to transform personal and collective memory into a layered representation of post-war trauma, using the afterlife as an allegorical space where unresolved conflicts and human suffering continue to haunt his protagonist, Maali Almeida. The detailed descriptions of the afterlife reflect not only Karunatilaka's immersion in Sri Lankan culture but also his ethical choices as a writer tasked with portraying the complexity of his homeland's history. By anchoring this brain text in elements of Sri Lankan mythology, Karunatilaka circumvents the "burden of representation" (Salgado 6) that many diasporic writers face, as he doesn't merely recount historical events but reconstructs them through a deeply ethical, culturally resonant lens. Karunatilaka's brain text construction thus avoids the critique of "expatriate culture" or "selective historicization" (Salgado 6) which authors like Ondaatje and Gunesekera have faced. Instead, it enables him to engage with Sri Lanka's conflicted past in a manner that is intellectually rich and emotionally resonant, while eschewing politically prescriptive narratives. By presenting a multifaceted exploration of Sri Lanka's civil war through the character's experience in the afterlife, Karunatilaka's brain text reveals not only the horrors of the past but also the ethical complexities of human memory, trauma, and resilience, offering a narrative that deepens understanding while preserving the integrity of his personal and cultural vision.

Besides, Karunatilaka employs language and imagery that are both universal and transcendent, enabling readers from diverse cultural backgrounds to empathize with and grasp the moral conflicts and historical context of the story. This deliberate choice in language and imagery reflects the author's ethical considerations in transforming complex cultural and spiritual concepts into a form accessible to a broader audience. By using universal expressions, Karunatilaka seeks to overcome cultural barriers, allowing more readers to engage with and reflect on Sri Lanka's history and present realities. Take the endings of Chats with the Dead and The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida as example, one specific difference that makes the latter more accessible to readers unfamiliar with Sri Lankan Eastern culture is how the second ending downplays the culturally specific imagery of the afterlife and focuses instead on more universal themes of moral reckoning and justice.

In Chats with the Dead, the original ending leans heavily on Sri Lankan

spiritual concepts, particularly the idea of the "yama rāja" (the Buddhist Lord of Death) and the journey through the afterlife. Almeida, engages with spirits, rituals, and cultural references deeply embedded in Sri Lankan Buddhism and Hinduism. For example, when Almeida interacts with spirits who seem to reference the cycle of samsara (rebirth), the narrative requires the reader to grasp concepts of karma and reincarnation, which may be unfamiliar or inaccessible to those not versed in Eastern spirituality. This is particularly illustrated in Almeida's conversations with the dead who comment on his karmic burden: "Oblivion made more sense than heaven or rebirth or living the same sad life over and over" (Karunatilaka 15). In contrast, The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida reworks the metaphysical journey into a more universally relatable exploration of personal accountability and redemption. While the framework of the afterlife is still present, it is less tied to specific religious imagery. Instead, the ending focuses on Maali's quest to expose the truth about the violence he witnessed as a photojournalist, emphasizing his desire for justice for the victims of war. For instance, in the second ending, the focus is on Maali's effort to get his photographs to the living in order to reveal atrocities, which is a more concrete and universal act of seeking justice. The line, "photographs were the best way to end the war" (380) reflects a drive that any reader, regardless of cultural background, can understand—the quest for truth and accountability in the face of violence and corruption.

The transformation of The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida from a reference to Eastern spiritual traditions into a metaphor for the stages of Almeida's reckoning with his own moral choices also makes the story more accessible. The seven moons represent the time Almeida has in the afterlife to confront his past, not as part of a specific religious journey, but as part of a personal and moral awakening. This shift away from karma and reincarnation allows the ending to center on the protagonist's self-reflection and agency, themes that resonate broadly with readers of various backgrounds.

Decoding Brain Text: The Ethical Choices of Maali Almeida

At the novel's outset, Maali Almeida awakens to find himself dead, with no memory of how or why he died, or who was responsible. He has seven nights, or "moons," to unravel the mystery of his death. Karunatilaka creates a "third world" of parallel space-time, enabling Almeida's ghost to traverse locations whenever someone speaks his name, bridging realms to uncover the truth and seek passage to the next life. Through Almeida's stream-of-consciousness narration, the novel highlights Sri Lanka's wartime turmoil and shows us the protagonist's ethical choices. "What kind of brain text one possesses determines what kind of person they become" (Nie, "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism" 33). In other words, "the more positive brain text a person accumulates, the more likely they are to make ethical and morally sound choices" (Su and Xiong 53). In this sense, Almeida's ethical choices are closely tied to his brain text, as his attitude toward war is shaped by the brain text formed through his experiences and understanding of it.

Karunatilaka's approach reflects Nie Zhenzhao's concept of "brain text," where writers continuously modify ideas in line with ethical considerations, a process of "composition and modification" (Nie, "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism" 33). These choices shape The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida into an exploration of war's impact, seeking to dismantle barriers to understanding, particularly for readers unfamiliar with Sri Lankan culture. As a Sri Lankan author, Karunatilaka brings authenticity to the narrative by choosing a war photographer Maali Almeida as his protagonist, whose mission is not only to solve his own murder but to expose the brutal realities of war.

Maali Almeida's ethical choices expose the atrocities of conflict, uncover historical truths, and illustrate the moral complexities faced by individuals. Almeida's inner conflict between rationality and irrationality is not just a personal struggle, but a pursuit of justice and truth in a chaotic historical landscape. Through The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, Karunatilaka captures the enduring weight of war and individual resilience, offering readers a profound reflection on ethics and the human spirit. Before the civil war, Sri Lanka was often portrayed as the "pearl of the Indian Ocean," known for its pastoral landscapes and reputation as a tropical paradise. Its central Highlands, dotted with vast tea plantations, evoke a sense of tranquility and natural beauty. Economically and politically, Sri Lanka was viewed as a model democracy with promising potential for social and economic progress. At the time of independence in 1948, it was considered "a success story in the developing world. A robust economy, a significant welfare state" (Biziouras 1). However, as a multi-ethnic society characterized by distinct languages and religious beliefs, Sri Lanka's ethnic diversity has also been a source of profound tension. Over time, "the rise of political movements "fostered exclusivity and micro-nationalism, particularly in the island's northeastern region" (Sabhlok 24). The eruption of ethnic conflict between the Tamil and Sinhalese in 1983 plunged Sri Lanka into decades of ethnic and religious strife, marked by riots, rebellions, and a brutal civil war.

These choices are reflected in the novel's portrayal of war's brutality, its uncovering of historical truth, and the moral dilemmas faced by individuals amid turbulent times. "The function of literature is to teach moral values by praising virtue and punishing vice. Its ultimate aim is to answer the questions of how to put natural will and free will under the control of rational will" (Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection" 392). While making ethical choices, human beings put themselves "in the mutual inhibition of human factors and animal factors, natural emotions and moral emotions, rational will and irrational will" (Ren 739). The interplay of Maali Almeida's rational and irrational wills symbolizes not only a personal psychological conflict but also a broader pursuit of social justice and historical accuracy. This inner conflict reveals a profound ethical awareness in the writing. According to ethical literary criticism, irrational will is defined as "the irrational driving force behind all feelings and actions is shaped by various mental factors such as emotion, consciousness, illusion, the subconscious, and inspiration. It also includes motives, desires, beliefs, habits, and instincts—elements that lie beyond the control of rational thought" (Nie, "Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism" 251). This irrational will manifests in Almeida's fearful imaginings and impulse to escape the horrors of war, while his rational will allows him to confront the truth of war's nature and resist his urge to flee. In The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, Almeida's changing attitude toward the war is divided into two distinct phases: before and after death. While alive, he viewed the war as a financial opportunity, taking photographs for the Sri Lankan military, the Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam, and international organizations. However, upon returning as a ghost to investigate the cause of his death, he begins to reexamine the immense suffering inflicted on the people by all sides of the conflict. One vivid scene describes this realization:

It was an hour after the last shell had dropped and the air was still smoky and smelly. You stumbled through dust and saw the wailing. You could not hear it, because your ears were abuzz with the low hum at the end of the world, the frequency that spirits swirled at, the white noise of a thousand screams. But all around you, you saw the wailing. People had stopped running and were rooted to the spot, staring at the heavens and roaring. (298)

This moment ignites a sense of purpose in him: "These are not holiday snaps. These are photos that will bring down governments. Photos that could stop wars" (14).

Ethical literary criticism posits that "rationality is the ability to make accurate judgments and value assessments within a specific context, and it is the virtue that sets humans apart from animals" (Nie, "Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism"

252-253). This rationality, as defined within the framework of ethical literary criticism, consists of three key elements: cognition, value judgment, and moral behavior. Cognition refers to the individual's ability to perceive and understand reality; value judgment is the assessment of what is right or wrong based on that perception; and moral behavior is the subsequent action taken in alignment with ethical principles. Together, these elements form the foundation of rationality, guiding individuals toward ethical decision-making and moral responsibility in the face of complex situations. Maali Almeida, embodies both human and animalistic tendencies, reflecting the duality of human nature as understood in ethical literary criticism. Initially, Almeida's involvement in the war is motivated by a pragmatic, even opportunistic approach. He exploits the conflict for financial gain, taking photographs for various factions without concern for the broader implications of his actions. In this phase, his cognition is limited to survival and self-interest, with little regard for the moral consequences of his choices. He is driven by instinct and impulsive desires, which align with what ethical literary criticism term "irrational will"—the unconscious, emotional, and often self-serving motivations that steer human behavior when reason is absent. However, after his death, Almeida undergoes a profound transformation in his understanding of the war. As a ghost, he revisits the scenes of violence and suffering that he once documented so casually. His cognition shifts from a narrow focus on personal gain to a broader awareness of the human cost of the conflict. This shift in perception leads to a reevaluation of his past actions, prompting him to reassess the ethical implications of his work. The horror he witnesses—described vividly as "the white noise of a thousand screams" and the sight of people "rooted to the spot, staring at the heavens and roaring" (298)—awakens in him a sense of moral responsibility.

Through this process of reevaluation, Almeida begins to exercise value judgment, recognizing that his previous detachment from the war's atrocities was not only morally flawed but also complicit in perpetuating the violence. His new awareness drives him to reconsider the role of his photographs—not merely as tools for profit or fame but as powerful artifacts that can expose the brutal reality of war to the world. He now sees his photographs as potential catalysts for change, capable of "bringing down governments" and "stopping wars." This marks a crucial development in Almeida's moral behavior, as he shifts from passive observer to active participant in the ethical struggle against war's inhumanity.

In this way, Karunatilaka uses Almeida's transformation to explore the ethical dimensions of human cognition and the potential for moral growth. By aligning his protagonist's journey with the principles of ethical literary criticism, the novel highlights the importance of rationality in overcoming irrational impulses and making ethical choices in the face of moral dilemmas. Almeida's story becomes a testament to the power of cognition, value judgment, and moral behavior in shaping not only individual actions but also broader social and historical truths. Through his newfound commitment to exposing the horrors of war, Almeida exemplifies the role of the ethical individual in challenging the irrationality of violence and injustice, using reason and moral clarity to reveal the truth hidden beneath the chaos of conflict.

Reconstructing Brain Text: Karunatiraka's Ethical Consciousness

These choices shape how Karunatilaka presents the cruelty of war, reveals historical truths, and portrays the moral dilemmas faced by individuals swept up in the current of history. As it is reveled in ethical literary criticism that "the task of literature, accordingly, is to depict how ethical relationships and moral order undergo changes, examine their consequences, and ultimately provide experience and lessons emerging from human life for the progress of human civilization" (Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 190). The tension between Maali Almeida's rational and irrational wills represents more than just an internal struggle; it embodies a pursuit of social justice and historical truth. This interplay of motives and decisions underscores Karunatilaka's profound ethical awareness throughout the creative process.

Through the second-person narrative and the perspective of Maali Almeida, the author delves into the ethical relationship between individuals and society, the moral dilemmas of war, the preservation and disclosure of historical memory, and other complex issues. This approach highlights the intricacies of human nature amid political and wartime turmoil, emphasizing the importance of uncovering historical truth. While second-person narration is not a mainstream choice in novels, both Chats with the Dead and The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida employ this narrative technique, immersing readers in Almeida's stream of consciousness and mental activity.

From the perspective of ethical literary criticism, "the inner monologue, stream of consciousness, and psychological activities of characters in literary works, as well as the expression and rhetoric used to describe characters—such as metaphor, puns, and ellipses—are all ways to connect characters with brain texts for analysis" (Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism and the Brain Text: Academic Dialogue Between Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Yong" 173). In both versions of the novel, Chats with the Dead and The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, the changes in plot, including additions and omissions, are closely linked to the protagonist's internal reflections and monologues. These elements ultimately reveal the author's ethical consciousness.

In the chapter "The Seventh Moon" of The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, particularly in the sections titled "A Thousand Moons," "The River of Births," and "Your Prices," Karunatilaka made significant adjustments. In Chats with the Dead, Karunatilaka employs a relatively brief conclusion to the scene where the ghosts of PLN Marxists storm the minister's office and set off bombs. Almeida's journey in the afterlife, alongside the ghosts of victims, highlights the intertwining of personal relationships and broader socio-political issues. The characters' struggles for justice reflect a collective ethical consciousness that transcends individual concerns, pointing to a shared responsibility in confronting systemic violence. Almeida interprets the meaning of rational communication as he debates with Senna and his followers, striving to save the "innocent people." This suggests that "the chances of violence ending violence are one in nothing, one in nada, one in squat" (323). However, Almeida's exchanges, communications, and debates build bridges of reconciliation, culminating in a form of reconciliation with dead Marxists, Sinhalese, and Tamils: "the Dead Atheist saluting you and the Snake Lady laughing with her mob. You see the Dead Dogs howling from the bus stand, the Dead Suicides jumping off roofs and the drag queen waving at you mid-jump" (356).

This reconciliation is also reflected in Maali Almeida's handling of his own death, or more precisely, in how the revised narrative raises profound questions about moral responsibility in the face of cruelty. Karunatilaka explores the tension between vengeance and forgiveness, urging readers to reflect on their ethical stances amidst widespread violence and injustice. The novel begins with Almeida's search for the cause of his death, and as a civil war narrative, readers might initially assume his death is connected to his role as a war photographer, profiting from the images of conflict. Ironically, however, it is not his dangerous work but his identity as a gay man that leads to his death, highlighting the limited tolerance of homosexuality in certain sections of Sri Lankan society. The scene between Maali Almeida and Stanley Dharmendran highlights the moral and emotional complexities of Almeida's relationships, particularly the tension between personal desires and broader ethical responsibilities. In both Chats with the Dead and The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida, the second-person narrative structure helps the reader become intimately involved in Almeida's moral dilemmas, blurring the line between "you" (Almeida) and the reader. The perspective intensifies the confrontation between Almeida and Stanley, emphasizing the power dynamics and personal stakes in their interaction.

The narrative explores the clash between personal identity and societal

expectations. Stanley, as the father of Almeida's lover, represents the rigid and conservative social structures of Sri Lankan society, particularly with his disgust toward Almeida's homosexuality. Almeida, on the other hand, challenges Stanley's traditional values and refuses to conform to the moral judgments imposed on him. This tension is heightened when Stanley tries to buy Almeida off, offering him money to leave Dilan's life. Almeida's refusal and his sarcastic responses reflect his resistance to the commodification of relationships and the attempt to control love and human connection through material means. Karunatilaka uses this confrontation to underscore the broader socio-political issues intertwined with personal struggles. Stanley's position of power, both politically and personally, symbolizes the larger forces of corruption and repression that Almeida has fought against as a photographer documenting the horrors of the Sri Lankan civil war. The bodyguards, the thugs, and the threats of violence that Stanley wields against Almeida represent the systemic violence and authoritarianism Almeida has encountered throughout his life.

Karunatilaka uses this blending of the physical and the metaphysical to emphasize the complexity of moral and ethical choices. Almeida's sarcastic responses to Stanley and his ultimate commitment to Dilan reveal his deep understanding of the value of human connection, even in the face of death and societal rejection. The contrast between Stanley's ruthless pragmatism and Almeida's defiant idealism highlights the central ethical tension in the novel: the struggle between the forces of love, empathy, and human connection, and the forces of power, control, and repression.

Toward the end of the novel, the focus shifts from broader national and political struggles—such as the family and national grievances of the Sri Lanka People's Liberation Front members—to a deeply personal conversation between Almeida and his boyfriend's father. This sharp contrast between national conflicts and personal relationships illustrates Karunatilaka's ethical awareness. The shift emphasizes how the moral choices of his characters are shaped by their specific cultural and historical contexts. In doing so, the novel reveals that ethical decisions are not merely individual psychological struggles but are deeply intertwined with social circumstances, historical events, and cultural traditions. Ethical choice, as presented in the novel, is not a matter of simplistic right or wrong but rather a complex, pluralistic process. Almeida must balance personal emotions, social responsibilities, and cultural identities when making decisions. This complexity enriches the expression of ethical consciousness in the novel, showing that moral decisions require navigating the intersections of personal and collective responsibility, thereby illustrating the nuanced nature of ethics in times of conflict.

Besides, the critique of social structure and power dynamics reveals how cultural background shapes individual moral consciousness. This perspective allows readers to better understand the motivations behind ethical choices and encourages deeper reflection on broader social issues.

Conclusion

The revision and development of Shehan Karunatilaka's three manuscripts illustrate a dynamic process of transforming brain text into written text, reflecting his deliberate choices of creative materials, underlying motivations, and evolving psychological perspectives. By examining these iterations, readers gain insight into the fractured and war-torn landscape of Sri Lankan society, experiencing a narrative that blends real historical events with fictionalized reflections. Standing among prominent South Asian English-language writers such as Michael Ondaatje and Salman Rushdie, Karunatilaka is equally committed to exploring the universal suffering woven into human existence. Yet, he uniquely allows the dead— "witnesses" from the Sri Lankan Civil War—to voice their own experiences, thereby exposing the complexities and hidden truths behind Sri Lanka's ethnic conflicts. This choice not only recalls the historical trauma of ethnic tensions but also peels away illusions and false narratives to reveal deeper truths beneath. Analyzing Karunatilaka's portrayal of the Sri Lankan Civil War through the lens of ethical literary criticism thus illuminates the far-reaching impacts of war, encouraging reflections on human nature, social order, and the resilience of national identity.

Works Cited

Biziouras, Nikolaos. The Political Economy of Ethnic Conflict in Sri Lanka: Economic Liberalization, Mobilizational Resources, and Ethnic Collective Action. New York: Routledge, 2014.

Bowers, Maggie Ann. Magic(al) Realis. London and New York: Routledge, 2004.

Boyagoda, Randy. "The Hero of This Novel Is Dead. He'd Like to Find Out Why: 'The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida'." New York Times. 28 Oct. 2022. Available at: https://www. nytimes.com/2022/10/28/books/review/shehan-karunatilaka-seven-moons-maali-almeida. html. Accessed 13 Mar. 2024.

Charles, Ron. "The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida is a Booker-winning Ghost Story." The Washington Post. 1 Nov. 2022. 12 Mar. 2024. Available at: https://www.washingtonpost. com/books/2022/11/01/booker-prize-winner-seven-moons-of-maali-almeida. Accessed 12 Mar. 2024.

Karunatilaka, Shehan. Chats with the Dead. New Delhi: Penguin Random House India Private

- Limited, 2020.
- —. The Seven Moons of Maali Almeida. London: Sort of Books, 2022.
- Menon, Murali K. "Sri Lankan Author Shehan Karunatilaka on His New Book and the Worlds He Carries Within Himself." CNBC. 2 Feb. 2022. Available at: https://www.cnbctv18.com/ views/acclaimed-sri-lankan-author-shehan-karunatilaka-on-his-new-book-and-the-worldshe-carries-within-himself-5249421.htm. Accessed 13 Mar. 2024.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-201.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 口头文学与脑文本", 《外国文学研究》6(2013): 8-15。
- [... "Ethical Literary Criticism: Oral Literature and Brain Text." Foreign Literature Studies 6 (2013): 8-15.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- ——: "脑文本和脑概念的形成机制与文学伦理学批评",《外国文学研究》5(2017):
- [—. "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2017): 26-34.]
- 一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- --: "人文研究的科学转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022):563-568。
- [... "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.1
- 聂珍钊、王永: "文学伦理学批评与脑文本: 聂珍钊与王永的学术对话", 《外国文学》 7 (2019) : 166-175.
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Yong. "Ethical Literary Criticism and the Brain Text: Academic Dialogue Between Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Yong." Foreign Literature 7 (2019): 166-175.]
- Ren Jie. "Interdisciplinary Studies and the Construction of Discourse System of Ethical Literary Criticism." Forum for Literature Studies 5 (2022): 735-744.
- Sabhlok, Smita G. "Nationalism and Ethnicity and the Nation-State in South Asia." Nationalism and Ethnic Politics 3 (2002): 24-42.
- Salgado, Minoli. "Writing Sri Lanka, Reading Resistance: Shyam Selvadurai's Funny Boy and A. Sivanandan's When Memory Dies." The Journal of Commonwealth Literature 1 (2004): 5-18.
- 苏晖、熊卉: "从脑文本到终稿: 易卜生及《社会支柱》中的伦理选择",《外国文学研究》 5 (2018) : 48-58.
- [Su Hui and Xiong Hui. "From Brain Text to the Final Draft: On Ibsen's Ethical Choices in Pillars of Society." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2018): 48-58.]

莎士比亚《威尼斯商人》的空间表征与伦理 教诲

The Spatial Representation and Ethical Education in Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*

刘 畅 (Liu Chang)

内容摘要:《威尼斯商人》的戏剧结构突出了威尼斯和贝尔蒙特两地的相互对立和交替,形成伦理立场截然不同的两大空间。男女主人公们历经空间变换与伦理身份的重塑,展现出与伦理环境密切而深刻的相互映射关系。这一过程更深层次地揭示了社会伦理身份的动态演变轨迹,促使角色们面临伦理困境并作出各自的伦理选择。莎士比亚通过空间表征的对比书写表明了鲜明的伦理立场,凸显了该剧欢乐而深刻的伦理教诲功能。

关键词:《威尼斯商人》;空间表征;伦理身份;伦理选择;教诲功能 作者简介:刘畅,吉林大学文学院博士生,珠海科技学院副教授,主要研究 方向为莎士比亚戏剧与中西戏剧比较研究。

Title: The Spatial Representation and Ethical Education of Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*

Abstract: The dramatic structure of *The Merchant of Venice* accentuates the dichotomy and alternation between two key spaces: Venice and Belmont. These spaces embody contrasting ethical stances, forming distinct spheres of moral representation. The protagonists undergo spatial transformations and the reshaping of ethical identities, demonstrating a close and profound mutual mapping relationship with the ethical environment. This process reveals the dynamic evolution trajectory of social ethical identity at a deeper level, prompting characters to face ethical dilemmas and make their respective ethical choices. Through the juxtaposition of spatial representations, Shakespeare elucidates a clear ethical stance, underscoring the play's joyful yet profound function as ethical instruction.

Keywords: *The Merchant of Venice*; spatial representation; ethical identity; ethical choice; instructional function

Author: Liu Chang is Ph.D. Candidate in the School of Literature, Jilin University (Changchun 130012, China), and associate professor at the School of Literature, Zhuhai University of Science and Technology (Zhuhai 519041, China). His primary

research interests include Shakespearean drama and comparative studies of Western and Chinese theater (Email:67203444@qq.com).

作为莎士比亚最成功的喜剧作品之一,《威尼斯商人》(The Merchant of Venice, 1596) 深受读者和观众喜爱, 学界亦从未停止过对《威》剧的研究。然 而, 迄今为止, 人们对这出喜剧主旨的理解, 仍未超出几个老生常谈的命题: 商业的冲突、人性的弱点、宗教的争斗、以及法律的公正」,其批评的方法也 不免流于俗套。在当下以跨学科文学研究重新检验文学经典作品的热潮中,《威 尼斯商人》理应成为文学伦理学批评与空间叙事学交叉研究的对象。

一、双重伦理取向的空间书写

空间书写是莎士比亚戏剧文本不可分割的组成部分,正如社会空间理论 代表人物亨利·列斐伏尔(Henri Lefebvre)所说: "空间是社会性的;它牵 涉到再生产的社会关系, 亦即性别、年龄与特定家庭组织之间的生物与生理 关系,也牵涉到生产关系,亦即劳动及其组织的分化"(48)。莎剧中的空 间,不仅是物理的,更是人文的,是所有社会关系的容器,其中的伦理取向,就 是被固化在这一空间中的人文内涵,并成为莎剧空间书写的重要表征。

莎士比亚在《威尼斯商人》中设置了两个伦理空间,其一是现实中的丑 恶伦理空间。这个空间以混乱不堪、尔虞我诈、世杰炎凉为基本伦理表征。剧 中的威尼斯城, 毗邻大海, 商业繁荣, 但莎士比亚却并没有像人们期待的那 样,以明丽的色调描绘尼斯城的繁华。戏剧开场,威尼斯的商人安东尼奥和 几个朋友"闷闷不乐"地出现在街头,这些上层人物内心压抑、忧愁烦恼、郁 郁寡欢的真实原因是,都在为自己的利益而担忧:安东尼奥算计着自己的商 船是否能满载而归; 夏洛克谋划着如何使他的高利贷生意一本万利; 他的女 儿杰西卡则核计着与未婚夫席卷家财一起逃走; 连他的仆人朗斯洛都盘算如 何尽快逃离主人。他们是这座城市中尔虞我诈、自私逐利的代表,折射出现 实中威尼斯人贪婪的本性。这就是商业之城威尼斯的伦理基调。表面上人声 鼎沸,热闹非凡,背后却是暗流涌动,危机四伏,因为它是整个威尼斯社会 现实伦理空间的真实表征。

《威尼斯商人》中的另一伦理空间,是加拿大学者诺思罗普·弗莱(Northrop Frye)提出的"绿色世界"(弗莱 247)——贝尔蒙特。贝尔蒙特是与充满 残酷争斗的丑恶现实伦理空间相对应的美善理想伦理空间。这个空间神秘而

¹ 参见 吴兴华: "《威尼斯商人》——冲突和解决", 《文学评论》6 (1963): 78-113; 王忠祥: "论莎士比亚的《威尼斯商人》", 《华中师院学报》4(1983): 135-141+148; 杨林贵、黄培希: "夏洛克女儿的财富——'后'学话语中的莎剧小人物",《外 语与外语教学》5(2012):76-80;冯伟:"《威尼斯商人》中的法律与权力哲学",《国 外文学》1(2013):125-132等。

充满诗意,充溢着生命的气息、青春的欢乐和爱的涌动。这里是宁静欢乐之 所,是谈情说爱的空间,人际间充满亲情和友爱,即使也有变故、忧伤和痛苦,但 总能以温和的方式得到化解。例如第二场的"选匣成亲"以及最后一场"指 环风波",让大家在欢乐的笑声中彻底忘却了对安东尼奥的担忧,消解了凝 重氛围。贝尔蒙特的空间爱和快乐的伦理规则,寄托了莎士比亚的人文主义 伦理追求,是作者对心中和平与宁静的乌托邦世界理想的建构。

威尼斯与贝尔蒙特空间相距甚远,奉行的是不同的伦理规则。莎士比亚 通过伦理空间表征的揭示,彰显深刻的伦理考量与鲜明的价值取向,引导观 众在欣赏戏剧的同时, 思考财富、欲望与人性之间的复杂关系, 这正是莎士 比亚的空间意识在《威尼斯商人》卓越表达。

西方戏剧的叙事主体,往往通过空间的对比来表达叙事主体的伦理追 求,以表明剧作者的伦理立场。《威尼斯商人》就是明证,作家通过威尼斯 和贝尔蒙特的空间伦理书写,于褒贬中完成了伦理批判。正如弗莱指出的那 样, 莎士比亚的戏剧行动从所谓产生于现实的"规范的世界", 展开并解决 于理想的"绿色世界"(247)。实际上,拿一个世界与另一个世界对比,是 莎士比亚空间书写的一大特色。在莎士比亚的其他剧本中,也常常能够看到 这样相互对立的"两个空间":一个是以城市或者宫廷为主导的"现实之城",在 这个世界中,世俗社会的伦理法则约束着人们的一切生活;另一个是远离尘 嚣的绿色的"理想之城",这是一个以森林、仙境组成的绿色世界。在这里,人 们可以实现人生的价值,保持自己的尊严,并且可以按照自己的意愿生活,就 像"亚登森林"之于《皆大欢喜》,"温莎林苑"之于《温莎的风流娘儿们》,"波 西米亚、西西里"之于《冬天的故事》,以及"林中仙境"之于《仲夏夜之 梦》。这种强烈的反差,是现实与理想的鲜明对比,呼唤着现实社会中的人 类回归自然和人性的伦理立场,蕴含着莎士比亚的伦理取向。从这个角度来 看,对威尼斯和贝尔蒙特的空间书写,似乎远远超出了戏剧结构的技术意义,也 超出了调动观众情绪的剧场意义。它超越了简单场景堆砌的范畴,成为推动 剧情发展、塑造人物性格、揭示戏剧主旨的关键力量。

从文学伦理学批评的角度看,解读文本至关重要的,是要将其置于其所 属的历史时期的伦理环境与语境中,让文学回归其本真的伦理土壤,以此确 保对作品内涵的准确解读与评判。1《威尼斯商人》的剧本结构严谨, 五幕 二十场戏精心布局,每一幕的编排,均彰显出作家对戏剧情节空间场景的深 思熟虑与明确设定。莎士比亚巧妙地构建了双重空间场景——威尼斯城与贝 尔蒙特,运用了更加灵活的叙事结构,在这两个不同的地理空间展开了一种 对位式对话。其中,有十二场戏设置在繁华的海上城市威尼斯,作为故事的

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

主要发生地之一,这里承载着丰富的商业活动与人情世故。而余下的八场戏 则转移至贝尔蒙特,特别是"神秘的鲍西亚家宅",这一场景不仅增添了剧 情的神秘色彩,也促进了情节的高潮迭起。如此布局,使得《威尼斯商人》 的空间叙事在"海上城市威尼斯"的喧嚣与"神秘的鲍西亚家宅"的静谧之 间自如穿行,两者相辅相成,引导观众(或读者)在空间的转换中,深入体 验剧情的跌宕起伏与人物的心理变化。两个故事发生地,是不同风格的物质 空间,象征着相互对峙的两股力量、两个阵营、两类人物和两种氛围。威尼 斯就是人们生活的现实之地,也是历史上真实的著名地中海商业中心,早已 具有完备的法律和社会运行体制。反观贝尔蒙特,则并无实际的地理考证能 为它提供"身份证明",是作者虚构的理想伦理之所。

莎士比亚的空间书写就此可以精妙地勾勒出一条"威尼斯"至"贝尔蒙 特",再返"威尼斯",终至"贝尔蒙特"的流动路线。在此,两大主要戏 剧场景的动态流转,不仅仅是空间表征的更迭,而是深刻蕴含着伦理取向、认 知的演讲与意义的多重解读。

《威尼斯商人》中的"威尼斯城"与"贝尔蒙特",这两个原本静态的 空间场景,在作家笔下被赋予了深刻的伦理内涵,成为独特的空间表征。这 一建构、既是对复杂人性的深刻挖掘、也是对社会伦理关系的生动再现。

二、复杂伦理身份的空间变换

《威尼斯商人》的空间架构错综复杂,剧中三位主角穿梭于不同的伦理 身份之间,这些身份随着空间场景变换与时光流逝而不断演变。人物身份的 动态演变,空间的更迭,深刻影响着角色间的人际关系、伦理定位乃至个体 形象的塑造,进而左右其伦理抉择与命运轨迹。随着莎士比亚"空间生产"1 意识的巧妙融入,这些场景成为了一条连贯的叙事线索,引领观众穿越伦理 关系的迷雾,见证角色们在不同伦理空间中的身份建构。诚如江守义所言,"时 间和空间的运用对故事的形态和伦理价值均有影响,时空的差异会让故事的 伦理意味得到某种程度的强化或弱化"(154)。

首先,威尼斯城的现实空间建构了亦信亦善的安东尼奥伦理身份。《威 尼斯商人》的核心伦理议题,围绕犹太商人夏洛克与基督教商人安东尼奥之 间"契约之辩"展开,遵循着商业之城形成的契约伦理。作为《威尼斯商人》 中的威尼斯商人代表, 安东尼奥是莎士比亚精心雕琢的道德典范, 他展现了 高度的伦理自觉与对道德规范的严格遵循,是一位充满理性的光辉形象。此 外,在宗教文化影响的友爱伦理规范下,他还是剧中另一位核心角色巴萨尼 奥的挚友,两人之间的深厚友情为剧情增添了丰富的情感色彩。安东尼奥出 于友情,为助好友巴萨尼奥成就婚姻,向以高利贷著称的犹太商人夏洛克借

¹ 参见 享利·列斐伏尔: "空间:社会产物与使用价值",《现代性与空间的生产》, 王志弘译、包亚明编,上海:上海教育出版社,2003年,第47-58页。

贷三千金币。夏洛克提出了一项苛刻的条款,若借款未能如期偿还,则安东 尼奥需割让一磅自身之肉作为偿付。然而,安东尼奥的商船遭遇了意外延误,致 使他无法按期偿还债务。夏洛克则坚持按照契约的规定,要求安东尼奥履行 其中的割肉条款。在莎士比亚的喜剧殿堂里,友谊与爱情被赋予了非凡的意 义,它们如同坚固的伦理桥梁,连接着每一个社会个体,构成了维系社会伦 理秩序不可或缺的道德基石。安东尼奥,这位莎士比亚笔下的道德楷模,以 他对友情的深切珍视和无私奉献著称。他对待朋友, 总是展现出无比的慷慨 与真诚。对于试探其友谊的言语,他淡然以对:"您是知道我的为人的,现 在您用这种譬喻的话来试探我的友谊,不过是浪费时间罢了"(1.1)。这句 话揭示了安东尼奥对友谊的看重,他愿意为朋友付出一切,包括金钱、时间 和精力,甚至生命。安东尼奥的慷慨不仅仅停留在言语上,他借钱予人从不 计利息,更时常在他人困境中伸出援手,排忧解难。尤其对待挚友巴萨尼奥,他 的付出更是毫无保留,即便这意味着自己要承受巨大的经济压力乃至生命危 险,他也毫不退缩。当巴萨尼奥面临前往贝尔蒙特求见鲍西娅的闲境时,安 东尼奥毅然决然地表示: "我一定凭着我这一点面子,能借多少就借多少,尽 我最大的力量供给你到贝尔蒙特去见那位美貌的鲍西娅"(1.1)。这番话,不 仅是对友情的坚定承诺, 更是对人性中美好品质的颂歌。

其二, 贝尔蒙特的理想空间建构出鲍西娅亦智亦勇的伦理身份。这一空 间的伦理底蕴建构,则主要在自由、友善、包容的空间生产中完成,彰显了《威 尼斯商人》的浪漫主义色彩。鲍西娅这位贝尔蒙特的温婉动人的富家千金,通 过剧作家巧妙的"女扮男装"手法,被赋予了全新的伦理身份——化身为才 华横溢的鲍尔萨泽律师,踏上威尼斯的法庭,不仅挽狂澜于既倒,拯救了挚 友安东尼奥于生死边缘,同时以行动回报了丈夫的恩情,并收获了美满的婚 姻,这一切都彰显了她非凡的伦理智慧与策略。在莎士比亚的笔下,鲍西娅 被精心塑造成通过"换装"实现伦理身份转变的关键角色,她的这一创举不 仅深刻影响了剧情的发展轨迹,更引领着故事走向了皆大欢喜的浪漫结局。可 以说,若无鲍西娅的介入,夏洛克与安东尼奥之间的纠葛,将陷入不可挽回 的悲剧深渊。中国学者曾高度评价鲍西娅, 称她为"一位集德行与才智于一 身,洋溢着浪漫主义情怀的贝尔蒙特新女性典范"(王忠祥 21)。她深信"慈 悲乃公道之调和剂",认为慈悲的力量能够引导人弃恶向善,其道德高度甚 至凌驾于权力之上,是接近神性的一种美德。若世人皆能秉持此"利他"之心,则 幸福将遍洒人间。鲍西娅作为贝尔蒙特的富家女,遵照父亲意愿,用金、银、铜 做的三个匣子,分别装上骷髅、傻瓜的画像、她本人的画像,求婚者如果相 中她本人的画像便可与她喜结良缘。结果其他求婚者均错选落败,只有巴萨 尼奥选中,两人终成眷属。这表明她接受了传统婚姻伦理中的父权伦理秩序: "她的父亲为她选择夫君,实际上是把自己的女儿拱手相让于他看中的年轻 男子"(贝文顿 51)。就在此时,鲍西娅突然得知丈夫的好朋友——威尼斯 商人安东尼奥陷入债务的纠纷。她决定前往威尼斯解救安东尼奥。可是作为 一名没有社会身份的女性,鲍西娅到底该如何进入法庭,又如何说服公爵大 人的呢? 莎士比亚巧妙地通过"女扮男装"的喜剧手法,成功完成了鲍西娅 伦理身份的解构和重新建构——将大家闺秀化身为年轻有学问的律师,借以 顺利进入法庭,取得了法庭辩论的胜利,帮助自己的爱人成功解救了威尼斯 商人安东尼奥。

第三,"双城"空间建构了杰西卡的亦悖亦爱伦理身份。夏洛克之女 杰西卡的身份建构,则逐渐形成于从威尼斯城到贝尔蒙特的空间流转过程之 中。在《威尼斯商人》的叙事空间脉络中,杰西卡最终毅然决然地踏上了前 往贝尔蒙特的旅程。那是一个与威尼斯截然不同的乌托邦,一个被赋予了"绿 色世界"美誉的理想之地,它包容万象,汇聚了来自四面八方的旅人,更成 为了爱情绽放的温床。贝尔蒙特,以其独特的伦理氛围,颠覆了威尼斯的陈 规旧俗,这里,法律与传统似乎都退居二线,取而代之的是恋人们纯真的情 感与自由的灵魂。杰西卡的这一选择, 无疑是对所处威尼斯城的父权伦理禁 忌的一次大胆挑战,两个空间对角色变换的伦理影响,是从"现实世界"迈 向"理想乌托邦"(或是弗莱所说的"绿色世界")的空间跨越。然而,在 贝尔蒙特这片充满希望的土地上,她没有像人们预料的那样受到惩罚或谴 责,反而获得了某种形式的喜剧性自省与救赎。这不仅仅是因为空间上的迁 移, 让她远离了旧有的束缚, 更是因为贝尔蒙特所倡导的伦理观念, 让她得 以重新审视自我, 理解到真正的幸福与自由, 并非建立在对既有规则的盲目 遵从之上, 而是源自内心的真实渴望与勇敢追求。

夏洛克、安东尼奥、鲍西娅和杰西卡等人的故事,成为共同构成作品主 旨的深刻诠释: 在复杂多变的社会伦理中,个体应当勇于探索自我,追求内 心的真实与自由。而贝尔蒙特,作为这一理念的象征性空间存在,不仅为杰 西卡提供了逃避现实的理想王国, 更为人们开启了一扇通往自我救赎与成长 的大门。

三、伦理教化功能的空间实现

在现实伦理框架内,个人的伦理身份不仅是社会物质空间中的身份标 识,更承载着与之相应的道德责任与义务。《威尼斯商人》有其特定的空间 设置, "正是空间才使得一个故事不仅仅是故事:在时间的绵延中,故事所 给予我们的只是结局;而在空间的状态下,故事才真正成为一个过程"(徐 岱 267),而这种设置对戏剧的整体伦理倾向产生了至关重要的影响。在莎 士比亚的戏剧世界里,剧中人物因伦理身份的多样与相互交织,展现了人性 深处丰富多彩的面向,善与恶的伦理冲突构成了情节张力与人物对立的核心 驱动力。莎士比亚深刻描绘了各种人物内心善恶并存的复杂状态,以及他们 在这一伦理天平上不断进行的选择与斗争。

作为正面人物的代表,巴萨尼奥的多重身份是他面临了伦理选择的困 境。他既是威尼斯商人安东尼奥的好朋友,又是富家女鲍西娅的爱人。一面是 不顾一切对富家女的爱情追求,一面自己的好友安东尼奥为了此却吃上了官 司。他同样也遇上了伦理两难,究竟是维护来之不易的爱情,还是义无反顾挽 救友情? 巴萨尼奥的伦理抉择表明,在他心中,与安东尼奥的友情占据着更重 要的位置: "安东尼奥,我爱我的妻子,就像我自己的生命一样;可是我的生 命、我的妻子以及整个的世界,在我的眼中都不比你的生命更为贵重;我愿意 丧失一切,把它们献给这恶魔做牺牲,来救出你的生命"(4.1)。巴萨尼奥 与好朋友安东尼奥经历生死考验的感人友谊,是故事情节发展的重要线索,试 图向人们证明和谐的社会关系常常依靠爱与友谊维系。莎士比亚歌颂爱情和友 谊的同时,谴责残忍的行为。面对冷酷无情的异教徒的夏洛克坚持要以割掉安 东尼奥的一磅肉作为补偿的要求, 莎士比亚给予了"威尼斯商人"无比的同 情,对夏洛克的残酷、虚伪的"恶"也进行了辛辣的嘲讽。

作为反面人物的夏洛克在剧中非第一男主角,却是构成伦理冲突的唯一 对立面。他展现了一个复杂且多维的伦理面貌,既是公众眼中凶狠吝啬的犹 太商人,又是私底下令人心生同情与怜悯的失败父亲。一方面,夏洛克以高 利贷商人的伦理身份,对基督徒安东尼奥天生缺少理解与同情。他一心想要 完成为犹太民族复仇的伦理责任与义务,表现出凶狠残暴、自私贪婪的一面。此 时他人性中的兽性因子占据了上风,是他任由自身自由意志控制理性意志的 伦理选择结果: "我恨他因为他是个基督徒,可是尤其因为他是个傻子,借 钱给人不取利钱,把咱们在威尼斯城里干放债这一行的利息都压低了。要是 我有一天抓住他的把柄,一定要痛痛快快地向他报复我的深仇宿怨"(1.3)。另 一方面, 夏洛克作为长期饱受歧视的犹太人和犹太教徒, 有着很强的民族自 尊心和对人生而平等的渴望: "他憎恶我们神圣的民族,甚至在商人会集的 地方当众辱骂我,辱骂我的交易,辱骂我辛辛苦苦赚下来的钱,说那些都 是盘剥得来的腌臜钱。要是我饶过了他,让我们的民族永远没有翻身的日 子"(1.3)。《威尼斯商人》自诞生起,便富有强劲的活力,不仅成为宣扬 人文主义道德理想的宣言,还在于基督教虚伪的宗教伦理规范的辛辣讽刺和 对于资本主义商业伦理的功利性质的无情揭露。故有研究者认为: "作为一 个人来讲, 夏洛克有值得同情之处, 从宗教的立场来讲, 他的出路只有改宗。 莎 士比亚以为,二者统一在慈悲与博爱精神之上,其实仍是表现出他内心的偏 见。这恐怕是作为基督徒的莎士比亚所无法克服的矛盾。基督教理想给了莎 士比亚福音, 宗教立场又使他陷于一种困境"(陈惇 63), 这一评价是公允的。

作为剧中富有争议的女性形象,杰西卡的伦理选择同样经历了内心世界 的矛盾与挣扎。在光鲜亮丽的借贷商人之女与渴望自由恋爱的少女之间,杰 西卡找到了自己的声音,却也在这两者之间不断拉扯。在"卷逃私奔"的决 定性时刻,杰西卡站在了人生的十字路口,她的双重伦理身份——夏洛克之

女与罗兰佐的挚爱,成为她难以摆脱的重负。作为夏洛克的女儿,她本应是 家族荣耀与利益的守护者,但内心深处对爱情的渴望,却让她无法忽视罗兰 佐的存在。这种双重身份的拉扯,不仅考验着她的个人意志,也映射出当时 社会对女性身份与角色的严格界定。她深知,无论选择哪条路,都将是一段 荆棘满布的旅程。若选择继续留在父亲身边,虽然可以保持家族的体面与自 身的安全,但她的心灵将永远被压抑的爱情所困扰;而若选择私奔,追随内 心的爱情,她将背负起对家庭、对社会的背叛之名,承受无尽的舆论压力与 内心的煎熬。在这场伦理的较量中,杰西卡所展现出来的勇气与决绝,不仅 是对个人幸福的追求,更是对当时社会伦理规范的一种无声反抗。她深知自 己的选择将带来怎样的后果,但她仍然勇敢地迈出那一步,用实际行动诠释 了何为真正的自由与独立。相比哈姆雷特在复仇之路上的延宕与挣扎,杰西 卡的抉择充满了人性的复杂与光辉,她让我们看到了在伦理困境中,一个女 性如何用自己的方式去寻求自由与幸福。她选择以逃离威尼斯的方式与自己 家庭孝道、宗教仪轨彻底决裂:"唉,我真是罪恶深重,竟会羞于做我父亲 的孩子! 可是虽然我在血统上是他的女儿, 在行为上却不是他的女儿。罗兰 佐啊! 你要是能够守信不渝, 我将要结束我内心的冲突, 皈依基督教, 做你 的亲爱的妻子"(2.4)。万幸的是,莎士比亚没有给杰西卡选择哈姆雷特式 的优柔寡断,而是十分果断地做出了完全不同的伦理选择,使得戏剧结局得 以朝着喜剧的方向发展,避免了不幸悲剧的发生。

通过对戏剧的空间表征的对比书写,与剧中人物伦理身份的不断建构与解构,莎士比亚巧妙地揭示了人性的多面性与社会的复杂性,引导观众在欣赏戏剧的同时,深刻反思伦理、正义与人性之间的微妙关系。随着全剧空间场景的流转,角色们面对伦理选择的困境并作出各自的伦理选择,从中凸显了《威尼斯商人》的伦理教诲功能,带给读者深刻的道德启示。

在《威尼斯商人》的戏剧舞台上,从威尼斯到贝尔蒙特空间表征的交织更迭,体现了作家伦理取向的鲜明立场。作为文艺复兴末期的人文主义者,莎士比亚剥离了威尼斯城外部世界的偏见与纷争,努力守护住内心那份对天真无邪、和谐圆满的深切渴望,为在世俗伦理重压下挣扎的灵魂开辟了一条通往心灵净土的路径。剧中男女主角穿梭于威尼斯的繁华与贝尔蒙特的神秘之间,这一空间上的流转,不仅是物理位置的移动,更是他们内心伦理世界重塑与碰撞的生动展现。随着剧情的推进,男女角色在空间的变换中不断探寻、质疑并重新定义自己的伦理身份,每一次跨越都伴随着伦理观念的碰撞与融合,构筑起一个充满张力与冲突的伦理场域。这一过程展现了人物伦理身份的动态演变,深刻地触及了戏剧的核心——即在复杂多变的伦理困境中,个体如何面对自我、他人及社会的伦理期待,做出道德上的抉择与牺牲。

Works Cited

- 大卫·贝文顿:《莎士比亚:人生经历的七个阶段》,谢群等译。上海:上海外语教育出 版社,2013年。
- [Bevington, David. Shakespeare: The Seven Stages of Life Experience, translated by Xie Qun et al. Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 2013.]
- 陈惇:"莎士比亚与基督教——从《威尼斯商人》说开去",《北京师范大学学报》5(1995): 57-63。
- [Chen Dun. "Shakespeare and Christianity: Starting from The Merchant of Venice." Journal of Beijing Normal University 5 (1995): 57-63.]
- 冯伟: "《威尼斯商人》中的法律与权力哲学",《国外文学》1(2013):125-132。
- [Feng Wei. "Philosophy of Law and Power in The Merchant of Venice." Foreign Literature 1 (2013): 125-132.]
- 诺思罗普•弗莱等:《喜剧:春天的神话》,傅正明、程朝翔译。北京:中国戏剧出版社, 1992年。
- [Frye, Northrop et al. Comedy: The Myth of Spring, translated by Fu Zhengming and Cheng Chaoxiang. Beijing: China Theatre Publishing House, 1992.]
- 江守义、刘欣:《中国古典小说叙事伦理研究》。合肥:安徽教育出版社,2016年。
- [Jiang Shouyi and Liu Xin. A Study on the Narrative Ethics of Chinese Classical Novels. Hefei: Anhui Education Press, 2016.]
- 享利•列斐伏尔: "空间:社会产物与使用价值",《现代性与空间的生产》,王志弘译、 包亚明编。上海:上海教育出版社,2003年,第47-58页。
- [Lefebvre, Henri. "Space: Social Products and Use Value." Modernity and the Production of Space, translated by Wang Zhihong, edited by Bao Yaming. Shanghai: Shanghai Education Press, 2003. 47-58.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 威廉•莎士比亚: "威尼斯商人",《莎士比亚全集》(二),朱生豪等译。北京:人民 文学出版社, 1994年, 第1-95页。
- [Shakespeare, William. "The Merchant of Venice." Complete Works of Shakespeare (II), translated by Zhu Shenghao et al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 1994. 1-95.]
- 吴兴华: "《威尼斯商人》——冲突和解决", 《文学评论》6(1963):78-113。
- [Wu Xinghua. "The Merchant of Venice: Conflict and Resolution." Literary Review 6 (1963): 78-113.1
- 王忠祥: "建构崇高的道德伦理乌托邦——莎士比亚戏剧的审美意义",《外国文学研究》 2 (2006): 18-31.

- 924
- [Wang Zhongxiang. "Constructing a Sublime Moral and Ethical Utopia: The Aesthetic Significance of Shakespeare's Plays." *Foreign Literature Studies* 2 (2006): 18-31.]
- --: "论莎士比亚的《威尼斯商人》",《华中师院学报》4(1983): 135-141+148。
- [—. "On Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*." *Journal of Huazhong Normal University* 4 (1983): 135-141+148.]
- 徐岱: 《小说叙事学》。北京: 中国社会科学出版社,1992年。
- [Xu Dai. Narrative Studies in Fiction. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1992.]
- 杨林贵、黄培希: "夏洛克女儿的财富——'后'学话语中的莎剧小人物",《外语与外语教学》5(2012):76-80。
- [Yang Lingui and Huang Peixi. "The Wealth of Sherlock's Daughter: Small Characters in Shakespeare's Drama in the Discourse of 'Later' Learning." Foreign Languages and Foreign Language Teaching 5 (2012): 76-80.]

以神巫之名:美狄亚神话的医学人文踪迹 Name of Myth and Witch: Traces of Medical Humanity in the Myth of Medea

郭芷彤 (Guo Zhitong)

内容摘要:美秋亚作为女巫、祭司、医生的三重伦理身份构成了一个互相关联、互相作用、互相渗透的整体,共同作用于美狄亚这个伦理行为主体,并导向了美狄亚在医学实践中不同的伦理选择。通过对神话情节、生物程序和医学知识的互相比对,发现美狄亚实施的回春术是现代放血的治疗手段的思想实验,而她的"手术失败"含有对当代医学仍有意义的伦理教诲——医学治疗过程受到了医患双方伦理意识与伦理选择的干预。医疗技术的发展固然重要,但医学伦理的发展也同样重要,高超的医疗手段能否生效也取决于它究竟被掌握在谁的手中。

关键词: 美狄亚; 伦理身份; 巫医; 放血疗法; 医学实践

作者简介: 郭芷彤, 兰州大学文学院博士研究生, 主要研究方向为后人类研究、文学跨学科研究。

Title: Name of Myth and Witch: Traces of Medical Humanity in the Myth of Medea **Abstract:** Medea's tripartite ethical identities as a witch, priestess, and physician form an interconnected, interactive, and permeable whole, influencing her ethical selection in medical practice. By juxtaposing mythological narratives, biological processes, and medical knowledge, it reveals Medea's rejuvenation ritual as a thought experiment akin to modern blood-letting therapy. The failure of the operation in the Medea myth contains ethical lessons that are still relevant in contemporary medicine, highlighting the ethical awareness and selection of both doctors and patients. While technological advancements in medicine are crucial, this analysis underscores the parallel importance of medical ethics. Mastery of advanced medical techniques hinges not only on their technical prowess but also on who wields them.

Keywords: Medea; ethical identity; witch doctor; blood-letting therapy; medical practice

Author: Guo Zhitong is a Ph.D. candidate at the School of Chinese Languages and Literatures, Lanzhou University (Lanzhou 730000, China). Her academic research

focuses on posthuman study and interdisciplinary studies of literature (Email: gzt720@163.com).

文学伦理学批评要求批评家能够进入文学的历史现场,而不是在远离历史现场的假自治环境中评价文学¹,因此"神话时代的医学是何面目"这一问题要在进入美狄亚神话的具体论述之前廓清,本文通过引入一场1867年巴黎人类学会会议上对秘鲁人颅骨钻孔术的讨论来尝试解决以上问题。首先,人类学家们发现,"(当时)成功的钻孔术可以移除头盖骨中的骨片,不损伤脑组织本身"(玛格纳 11),这说明史前的外科手术已经具有了一定的精密性;其次,虽然颅骨钻孔术这种手术的使用频率目前还难以通过技术检测出来,但史前人类颅骨上陈旧性、已愈合的颅骨钻孔可以证明这个外科手术在人类身上成功实践过,且在同一个人身上不止进行一次,这说明这种手术既可能出于巫术或宗教目的,又可能出于人类现实健康需要。

基于考古人类学的研究成果以及上述分析,本文将神话时代的医学状况总结为三个"合一":首先,身份的合一,即巫师、祭司、医生三种身份的合一。根据亨利•西格里斯特(Henry Sigerist)的考证,到了希罗多德的时代,专科医生才出现,所以神话时代是一个尚未医学专业化、医学职业化的时代,当时的人类所持有的治疗经验中往往杂糅着巫术与医术。² 其次,手段的合一,当时人类的治疗方法既是巫术实践,又是医学实验。西格里斯特曾指出过希腊语词"阿斯克列皮阿德"(Asclepiades)背后的深刻含义,"一方面,指阿斯克勒庇俄斯的祭司,他们的医术纯粹是宗教上的法术;另一方面,有一个学派的医生也自称为阿斯克列皮阿德斯,他们以为自己是健康之神阿斯克勒庇俄斯的后裔"(西格里斯特 259)。从这个希腊语词的多义用法中可以归纳出早期医术与巫术的合一。再次,目的的合一,当时的治疗既然多次在同一人身上被使用,那么就说明它既可能出于宗教目的,又可能出于实际身体需要。

上文对史前医学状况的回顾,构成了向美狄亚神话中探求医学人文踪迹的前提。以往的研究往往从性别伦理、家庭伦理等角度对美狄亚这个神话人物进行分析,美狄亚作为一个弃妇、一个母亲的伦理身份遮蔽了其伦理身份的多元性。"只有同科学结合在一起的文学理论才能把我们从传统的伦理羁绊中解脱出来,才能从科学的视阈认识和理解人文"(聂珍钊,"人文研究的科学转向"563)。结合科学人文的跨学科视角,回到当时的伦理现场,我们会后知后觉地发现原来美狄亚的行为不仅仅是从一个弃妇、一个母亲的伦理身份出发的伦理选择,因此本研究试图结合医学以及生命科学的知识,重

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207.

² 参见 亨利·E·西格里斯特:《人与医学:西医文化史》,朱晓译,北京:中国友谊出版公司,2019年,第259页。

新认识美狄亚神话,将美狄亚还原为一个站在巫术、魔法和医学交汇处的治 疗者,从医学人文、科学人文等非传统视角重新理解她的伦理选择与伦理实 践,重启神话对于当代医学乃至医学伦理的思想实验意义。

一、重释美狄亚的伦理身份

文学伦理学批评注重对人物伦理身份的分析,几乎所有伦理问题的产生 往往都同伦理身份相关1,美狄亚的医学实践也源于她的多层伦理身份。根据 家族谱系来说,美狄亚是埃埃亚岛女巫喀耳刻的侄女,所以美狄亚的第一重 伦理身份是从家族继承而来的女巫身份,这是众多神话编纂者达成的共识。

同时,美狄亚的女巫身份也引出了她的第二重身份,即女神赫卡忒的女 祭司。赫卡忒总是和夜晚、魔力和巫术联系在一起,更是保护女巫的夜间女 神,所以美狄亚的行动从始至终都贯穿着对赫卡忒的祈祷和祭仪。比如在《阿 尔戈英雄纪》(Argonautica)中,当美狄亚要帮助伊阿宋制作灵药时,她说"如 果一个人在午夜十分向德墨特尔的独生女献祭后将这灵药涂在身上, 那么他 既不会被任何武器的攻击所伤害,也不必怕熊熊的火焰"(127)。从公元前 5世纪开始,赫卡忒与珀耳塞福涅混在一起,成为地狱和死者之神²,所以此 处的"德墨特尔的独生女"应该指的就是赫卡忒。美狄亚向伊阿宋等人复仇 前,她再次明确地祭拜了赫卡忒:"我凭那住在我闺房内壁龛上的赫卡忒,凭 这位我最崇拜的、我所选中的、永远扶助我的女神起誓: '他们里头决没有 一个人能够白白地伤了我的心而不受到报复! '"(欧里庇得斯 100),这些 情节共同构成了对美狄亚的祭司身份的推测。

基于此,再来重读美狄亚谋杀兄弟阿普叙托斯的情节,便会发现美狄亚 所作的伦理选择是身为赫卡忒祭司的伦理身份主导的。谋杀兄弟是美狄亚第 一次触碰了严重的伦理禁忌——骨肉相残,但几乎美狄亚神话的讲述者都对 这场杀戮的原因含糊其辞,《阿尔戈英雄纪》和欧里庇得斯(Euripides)的《美 狄亚》(Medea)中,都未提及杀害弟弟并将其肢解的原因。如果将《阿尔戈 英雄纪》中对伊阿宋、美狄亚谋杀兄弟的含糊其辞与其献祭情节的讳莫如深 结合起来,似乎可以勾勒出这场杀戮的轮廓:

美狄亚让他们靠岸,好向 赫卡特献祭。但愿没有人知道 那少女为献祭做了什么准备,

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

² 根据《俄耳甫斯教祷歌》中译者吴雅凌的考证,从公元前5世纪开始,赫卡忒与珀耳 塞福涅的形象开始混杂在一起,成为了地狱和死者之神,参见《俄耳甫斯教祷歌》,吴雅 凌编译,北京:华夏出版社,2006年,第7页下注。

但愿我的心中也没有将其咏出的灵感, 因为我不敢把它讲出。(157-158)

英雄伊阿宋将死尸的手足砍下,然后三次 舔掉伤口上的血,再三次把污血从齿缝中吐出, 这是阴谋杀人者应当做出的一种补偿。然后, 伊阿宋把那瘫软的尸体埋入地下。(165-166)

伊阿宋在面对龙牙武士前,也曾呼求女神赫卡忒帮助自己通过考验,所以他和美狄亚应该同为赫卡忒的信徒,如果再结合他们残杀兄弟的过程所透露出的仪式性,便不难将他们的谋杀与某种祭仪联系起来。此时美狄亚谋杀兄弟的伦理选择来源于她伦理身份的变化。伦理身份的变化往往直接导致伦理混乱(ethical confusion),而陷入伦理混乱的美狄亚破坏了原有的伦理禁忌,最终造成了弑弟的悲剧。这种推断思路不仅适用于美狄亚这时的伦理选择,还适用于美狄亚后来的种种伦理选择。

不过,美狄亚的很多行为以及行为带来的后果已然超出了巫术的范围。因为在西医的正式出现之前,各种文化中的萨满或巫师通常扮演着治疗者的角色。"强大的疾病危机是萨满启蒙仪式的重要经历"(哈利法克斯 8),这一群体往往都是在遭遇了强大的疾病危机并完成了自我治疗之后才能获得超自然的能力,当萨满或巫师完成了身份转变后,也会将自己的治疗经验与整个部落或群体共享,于是巫的身份自然而然与医的身份联系在一起。因此,本文认为美狄亚的第三重也是最深层的伦理身份是一个以神巫之名行治疗之实的治疗者。

美狄亚就像她所代表的女神赫卡忒一样,拥有着"三相一体"的伦理身份特征:第一重是女巫;第二重是赫卡忒的女祭司;第三重是医生,这三个重要的伦理身份构成了一个互相关联、互相作用、互相渗透的整体,时而分别、时而共同地作用于美狄亚这个伦理行为的主体,并导向了不同的伦理行为和伦理实践。

二、重启神话的生物程序与知识意义

马林诺夫斯基(Bronislaw Malinowski)指出,"巫术是深深地被夹杂在知识与实用技艺里面,表面差不多"(53),巫术身为知识与实用技艺的子集,其中有一部分拿到了科学领域的入场资格。本文接下来试图通过美狄亚神话的三个方面来论证神话情节、生物程序和医学知识之间的互洽发现潜藏于美狄亚神话中的生物景象与知识基础。

在美狄亚实施放血治疗之前,曾有版本称,埃宋在被珀利阿斯篡位后,"他 请珀利阿斯允许他自我了断,珀利阿斯同意了,于是埃宋饮下公牛血后身 亡"(罗伯特•格雷夫斯 1047),这是因为在当时的希腊"公牛的血被认为 有剧毒"(罗伯特•格雷夫斯 282):与此同时,另一版本称,埃宋未死,"美 狄亚先抽掉了他身上衰老的血,然后通过一种神奇的灵药(一说指牛血)恢 复了埃宋的青春"(罗伯特•格雷夫斯 1049)。这些神话版本看似互相矛盾,但 一旦并列起来便会引导人们兼看"硬币"的两面——一面指向了牛血的药性,一 面指向了牛血的毒性,不同的神话版本共同表征出了既互补又互斥的知识意 义,由此也保证了这个神话故事的多个版本没有合流,均得以流传至今。

人们对牛血的药性的认识早在亚里士多德的时代就已经形成了,《动物 志》中曾记载过,"牡牛的血凝结最速"(130)。自19世纪末以来,随着 医疗技术的进步,这一知识被正式发展成一整套的医学理论,简单来说就是 "凝血酶是从猪或牛等血液中提取精制而成的一种生化制剂,是一种天然的 局部止血药"(钱珊珊等 346);然而正如美狄亚神话故事中所反映的,牛 血也有其毒性,可能对人类身体造成致命性伤害。美国北卡罗来纳州杜克大 学医学中心曾在研究报告中指出,"牛源凝血酶已被证明在人类接触后会诱 导强烈的免疫反应,容易增加病人罹患血栓、严重凝血功能障碍以及异常出 血的风险"(Achneck, et al 221)。上述的医学知识恰好暗合了神话情节,这 一交集时刻提醒着我们或许可以通过回溯神话来重新还原人类早期的医学知 识结构。

不同版本的美狄亚神话中普遍包含着一个关键的故事情节, 即是在美狄 亚与伊阿宋初识之际,美狄亚为了保护伊阿宋免受袭击制成了所谓的"普罗 米修斯之药"。灵药的制作过程是这样的: 当雄鹰啄食普罗米修斯的肝脏时, 普 罗米修斯体内珍贵的伊科尔(或称"灵血")就会滴落并滋养一种罕见的开 花植物,美狄亚正是从开花植物的黑色汁液中"提纯"并"合成"了"普罗 米修斯之药"。这样的神话情节再次将文化现象与生物性先天条件统一到了 同一个问题域内, 基于这样的神话情节, 我们不禁要问, 为什么美狄亚选中 了番红花来入药? 为什么宙斯要让鹰来啄他的肝脏, 而不是其他的内脏? 继 而为什么美狄亚要从普罗米修斯的肝脏和植物所生成的灵血中提纯药物?这 一系列问题并未在神话研究界得到过应有的关注,本文认为这些问题背后隐 藏着早期人类对于植物药用和肝脏再生功能的生物学认知痕迹,我们需要跨 时空地结合史前"大科学"的知识谱系以及现代医学、生物学知识才能合理 地定位和评价美狄亚的相关神话情节。

首先,就"普罗米修斯之药"的原材料来说,番红花原产自欧洲南部至 伊朗,拥有着悠久的药用历史,它在古希腊、古希伯来人眼中是最为可靠的 止痛药。2014年,萨马尔(Samarghandian S)的科研团队从番红花中提取有 效成分并合成了一种预防和治疗癌症的药剂¹;博斯巴蒂(Boskabady MH)等

参见 Saeed Samarghandian and Borji Abasalt, "Anticarcinogenic Effect of Saffron (Crocus Sativus L.) and Its Ingredients," Pharmacognosy Res 2 (2014): 99-107.

人也进一步提出了番红花对于人体的抗炎、抗氧化和免疫调节作用¹;而郭洪耀团队做的烧伤大鼠实验得出了番红花素的应用可以促进创面皮肤伤口愈合并减轻疼痛的结论²,这更是进一步验证了神话中伊阿宋凭借美狄亚的灵药得以制服喷火公牛的合理性。以上的当代医学、生物学实验结论有力地说明了美狄亚神话书写中可能暗含着自然的、生物的、药理的问题,本文也是从植物的药用价值中寻找到了神话情节何以如此的根源。

其次,就为何宙斯惩罚与美狄亚制药的矛盾核心都集中于普罗米修斯的 肝脏这一问题来说,中国科学院分子细胞科学卓越创新中心研究员惠利健曾 指出,"哺乳动物的大多数组织器官都缺乏再生完整器官的能力,但肝脏是 个例外。在极端情况下,肝脏被切除高达 70% 后,残余的肝组织仍然可以在 2周左右的时间内再生出整个肝脏器官来(尽管其外观的大体结构并不能被再 生出来)"(28)。基于现代医学、生物学对肝脏再生能力的新认识,有关 普罗米修斯肝脏的相关问题便迎刃而解了,美狄亚或许就是出于对普罗米修 斯肝脏再生能力的认知才选取它作为自己提纯灵药的原材料。由此观之,神 话不仅仅是依靠人类的想象机制而运作的,人类的生物程序、相关的生物学 知识与经验也曾经作为神话的重要参照系。

本部分要着重论述的最后一个方面仍是以问题为导向的——神话中的美狄亚在向珀利阿斯说明自己的"医术"高明时,为什么要以羊作为唯一的实验动物呢?其实,在最初的医学实践中,"巫师还可能通过打断一只鸡的腿,然后对这只不幸的家禽施以治疗等象征性行为来鼓励病人"(玛格纳 17),这种做法是原始思维中相似律的具体呈现,羊在美狄亚的医学实践中也扮演着同样的角色。美狄亚以实验样本(羊)的成功案例来鼓励珀利阿斯,旨在获得患者(珀利阿斯)以及患者家属(珀利阿斯的女儿们)的信任,这不仅符合叙事逻辑,也符合现代医学临床前的基本流程,一项临床新技术的开展必然需要经历一个从动物实验到人体实验的过程,美狄亚选取羊作为实验动物,揭示了从原始医学到现代医学的连续性,而本文对这个情节的关注也大大地提前了羊作为医学研究实验动物的历史。当神话成为了医学、科学的对照组,羊不仅成为了这两组实验中跨文化、跨时空的常量,也成为了神话、医学、科学乃至科幻中的常量,我们便不禁要继续追问为什么是羊成为了现代医学、科学进步的牺牲品?

从文化上来讲,替罪羊似乎已经成为了世界各大文明共享的一种文化现象,从勒内•基拉尔(René Girard)到瓦尔特•伯克特(Walter Burkert)再

¹ 参见 Mohammad H Boskabady and Tahereh Farkhondeh, "Antiinflammatory, Antioxidant, and Immunomodulatory Effects of Crocus Sativus L. and Its Main Constituents," *Phytother Res* 7 (2016): 1072-1094.

² 参见 郭洪耀等: "番红花素促进烧伤大鼠的创面愈合与减轻疼痛",《临床与病理杂志》 3(2020): 571-577。

到王明珂¹,将神话、传说中的替罪羊机制纳入文化研究的范畴之内已经并不 罕见,不过本文借助现代医学的视角为神话中的替罪羊现象找到了现实的原 因: 在现代医学、生物学实验中, 最常用的实验动物就是小白鼠和羊, 运用 小白鼠是因为它是成本最低的哺乳动物,而羊则是常见的具有"经济适用型"的 大型哺乳动物,一方面它的经济成本要低于猿类:另一方面医学实验最终还 是要应用到人类身上,自然要选择各种反应接近人类的动物。与其他饲养成 本低的动物相比,羊的内脏尤其是心肺器官的大小与人体器官大致相似,所 以羊的药理、生理反应相对更接近于人类, 因此无论是神话时代还是科学时 代,作为很早就被人类成功驯服的哺乳动物,羊都首当其冲地成为了最常见 的牺牲品。

基于对美狄亚神话有关情节的回顾,我们不仅能找到一些生物学、医学 的踪迹,还能发现早期人文、生物与医学的微观交汇。原始先民孕育的神话 将生物程序变形为一种叙事,将生物上的、医学上的知识变形为神圣的观念 和公共的仪式,但杰克·古迪(Jack Goody)认为,"神话有很多叙述成分,但 叙述的重要性却被神话(与神话学)收集者严重夸大了,他们经常刻意向应 答者询问故事内容,但却不关心这种记诵文的哲学、神学与知识意义,这是 过去常犯的错误"(123)。诚然,神话情节并不是生物程序和医学知识的"单 向镜",人类早期对生物程序和医学治疗的认知会影响神话情节的塑造,同 时,神话情节也能将原本铭写在人类脑文本(brain text)中不易保存的原始 医学经验与生物知识保留下来,下面我们就深入到美狄亚的医学实践当中来 重思美狄亚神话中的医学伦理。

三、重思美狄亚的医学实践与伦理选择

聂珍钊在分析美狄亚的杀子行为时说,"文学伦理学批评不仅要评价杀 子复仇这个基本事实,而且更要探讨美狄亚杀子复仇的原因和理由"(《文 学伦理学批评导论》 133), 此思想进路和研究方法同样适用于分析美狄亚 的其他行为,其中最具有代表性的就是美狄亚的回春术(返老还童术)。美 狄亚使用回春术的故事发生于她与伊阿宋返乡之后, 伊阿宋背叛她之前, 这 个故事有多个版本,而这个故事的最后以埃宋成功返老还童、而珀利阿斯 手术失败死去而告终。埃宋是美狄亚运用回春术的成功案例,诗人奥维德 (Ovidius)的《变形记》(Metamorphose)将这个过程记述得比较详细:

¹ 法国学者勒内·吉拉尔(René Girard)基于对欧洲早期神话、宗教文本以及文学作品 中替罪羊现象的解读,提出了替罪羊理论及机制,他的研究揭示了人类社会中的迫害与排 斥现象以及这些现象背后的心理和文化机制; 生物文化学者瓦尔特·伯克特 (Walter Burkert)则从生物学与进化学的角度揭示了替罪羊现象背后的生物选择机制; 2021年,中国学 者王明珂发表了学术专著《毒药猫理论:恐惧与暴力的社会根源》,基于对本土的毒药猫 传说与迫害现象的分析提出了与替罪羊相平行的毒药猫理论以分析针对弱势群体的社会暴 力,以上这些理论和观点都是学界针对世界上普遍存在的替罪羊现象的分析。

(美秋亚)割断了老人的喉管,让衰老的血液流尽,用釜中药汁灌进他的血管。这药汁一半从埃宋的伤口灌注进去,一半从口里喝进去,立刻他的苍白的须发又变成漆黑,人也不瘦了,苍白憔悴的面容也消失了,深凹的皱纹也被新肉填平,四肢宛似少年那样健壮。埃宋心里充满了惊讶,根据他的回忆,这是他四十年前的景象啊。(136)

概括一下美狄亚的治疗方法,即是以放血、输血来重振老年人的生命活力,这种做法就是在医学历史上曾经长久而真实地存在过的放血疗法。放血疗法是一种通过放血达到预防和治疗疾病目的的治疗方法,也是医学的重要起源之一,普遍见于古中国、古埃及、古希腊以及古印度。当(原始)宗教出现后,放血疗法开始逐渐融入相关的教仪,"那时的人们认为疾病是由超自然因素引起的,是对他们产生邪恶念头的惩罚,想要解除病痛就必须通过放血来驱逐他们体内的恶魔"(Thompson 90),放血疗法的发明也成为了当时巫师与医生身份重合的契机。放血疗法在古希腊得到了快速发展,古希腊医学之父希波克拉底(Hippocrates)为这一疗法提供了有力的理论依据,他认为疾病是机体内部四体液(血液、黏液、黑胆汁、黄胆汁)的平衡出现紊乱所致,"血液过多即是病因之一,而放血疗法恰好能够排除多余的血液"(Orosz 227)。根据美狄亚神话的描写,她对埃宋和珀利阿斯实施的放血疗法属于放血量巨大的动脉放血,也无形中增加了病人在治疗过程中可能的风险。

与埃宋相比,埃宋的弟弟——篡位的珀利阿斯,便不如他的哥哥那般幸运,成为了美狄亚放血疗法的失败案例。本文认为,究其原因有二:首先,这与放血疗法本身的风险性有很大关系,当时的放血疗法仍处于早期实验阶段,主要以动脉放血的形式进行,治疗与测量的标准化与精确度都没有足够的保证,所以这场实验的失败情有可原;其次,更重要的是,"任何治疗手段的成功都是依靠社会、心理、药理和生化因素的结合"(玛格纳 16),作为一个医生,美狄亚在整个治疗过程中的伦理选择更是起到了决定性的作用,当时的美狄亚还未遭遇背叛,她与伊阿宋的夫妻关系也尚未破裂,面对曾经篡夺其夫王位的珀利阿斯,她作为妻子的伦理身份驱使她放弃了她治疗病人的责任和义务,"故意略去了一些关键的咒语"(罗伯特·格雷夫斯1050),最终造成了珀利阿斯的死亡。毫无疑问,珀利阿斯事件是一场成功的报复,但同时也是一场失败的手术。

从美狄亚实施的放血手术可以窥见神话时代医学与人文的关系样态,美 狄亚的放血疗法既是巫术仪式的一部分,恰恰又是原始医学的一部分,当时 的巫术实践自然而然地与医学实践相重合。若我们将美狄亚神话按照某种既 定的秩序重组,会发现美狄亚的神话是由多次思想实验构成的,尤其是医学 方面的思想实验。或言之,美狄亚神话是对当时的巫医探索放血治疗的变形 书写,这种治疗手法依附于神话,最初以脑文本的形式铭刻、存储在先民的 头脑当中,后又经语言转化以及伦理过滤和重组,变成了如今我们看到的美 狄亚神话。

2005年,伊莲娜·康博伊 (Irina M. Conboy) 和迈克尔·康博伊 (Michael J. Conboy)的研究团队将美狄亚的回春术在年轻和年老的老鼠身上进行了实 践,该团队在实验中发现,"将幼鼠血液注射到老年小鼠体内,可以使因衰 老而活性下降的老年小鼠细胞恢复活力"(760-764),这个实验在某种程度 上证明了美狄亚的回春术或许存在一定的合理性。2014年,另一个研究团队 进一步从实验数据中得出结论,"老年小鼠在晚年注射年轻血液可以改善认 知功能"(Villeda, et al 659-663)。2022年,康博伊的研究团队又公布了新 的发现,在年轻老鼠体内循环年老老鼠的血液可以加速年轻老鼠的衰老」。以 上的实验共同表明,美狄亚的回春术正在成为一种现实有效的治疗方法。现 实中的科学进展使美狄亚神话中的情节变得可见、可信的同时,也激发了美 狄亚神话在当代的新任务,人们一直渴望实现的回春术不仅于美狄亚神话中 被提出,还能在其中被讨论、被反思。

从美狄亚神话的时代开始,医学治疗就是一个整体性的过程,这个过程 受到了医患双方伦理意识与伦理选择的干预,医疗技术的发展固然重要,但 医学伦理的发展也同样重要,高超的医疗手段能否生效也取决于它究竟被掌 握在谁的手中。因此,我们需要"使医疗保健人性化,优先考虑医学上的伙 伴关系"(Thornber 475),否则珀利阿斯的悲剧将在未来重演。

本文是将美狄亚神话引入医学人文跨学科领域的一次尝试,原先的美狄 亚往往是作为一个弃妇的伦理身份被读者看见,遭受背叛而向丈夫、儿子复 仇是她的伦理主线,但本文通过回到当时前科学、前人类的历史现场,起底 了美狄亚的多重伦理身份,还原了潜藏于当时古老经验之下的原始生物知识 图景,归纳出美狄亚神话情节与生物程序、医学治疗过程的契合,解构了原 有的针对美狄亚神话的文学伦理学批评视角,让美狄亚的故事从家庭伦理、女 性悲剧走向了更广阔的论域。总之,美狄亚神话为人类增强的未来提供了一 种反思性话语,如何避免治疗者成为伦理两难的美狄亚,如何避免患者在追 求青春与不朽的过程中重演珀利阿斯的悲剧,将成为美狄亚神话在当代延伸 出来的新问题。

Works Cited

Achneck, E. Hardean et al. "A Comprehensive Review of Topical Hemostatic Agents." Annals of Surgery 2 (2009): 217-228.

¹ 参见 O. H Jeon et al., "Systemic Induction of Senescence in Young Mice after Single Heterochronic Blood Exchange," Nat Metab 4 (2022): 995-1006.

- 阿波罗尼俄斯:《阿尔戈英雄纪》,罗逍然译笺。北京:华夏出版社,2011年。
- [Apollonios. *Argonautica*, translated and noted by Luo Xiaoran. Beijing: Hua Xia Publishing House, 2011.]
- 亚里士多德:《动物志》,吴寿彭译。北京:商务印书馆,2010年。
- [Aristotle. Zoography, translated by Wu Shoupeng. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2010.]
- Boskabady, H. Mohammad and Tahereh Farkhondeh. "Antiinflammatory, Antioxidant, and Immunomodulatory Effects of Crocus Sativus L. and Its Main Constituents." *Phytother Res* 7 (2016): 1072-1094.
- Conboy, M. Irina et al. "Rejuvenation of Aged Progenitor Cells by Exposure to a Young Systemic Environment." *Nature* 433 (2005): 760-764.
- 欧里庇得斯:《罗念生全集·第三卷:欧里庇得斯悲剧六种》,罗念生译。上海:上海人民出版社,2007年。
- [Euripides. *The Complete Works of Luo Niansheng vol.3: Six Tragedies of Euripides*, translated by Luo Niansheng. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing House, 2007.]
- 杰克·古迪:《神话、仪式与口述》,李源译。北京:中国人民大学出版社,2014年。
- [Goody, Jack. Myth, Ritual and the Oral, translated by Li Yuan. Beijing: China Renmin UP, 2014.]
- 罗伯特·格雷夫斯:《希腊神话:完整定本》,席路德、王瑢译。长沙:湖南文艺出版 社,2022年。
- [Graves, Robert. *The Greek Myths: The Complete and Definitive Edition*, translated by Xi Lude and Wang Rong. Changsha: Hunan Literature and Art Publishing House, 2022.]
- 郭洪耀等: "番红花素促进烧伤大鼠的创面愈合与减轻疼痛",《临床与病理杂志》3 (2020): 571-577。
- [Guo Hongyao et al. "External Application of Crocetin Promotes Wound Healing and Reduces Pain in Burned Rats." *Journal of Clinical and Pathological Research* 3 (2020): 571-577.]
- 简·哈利法克斯:《萨满之声:梦幻故事概览》,叶舒宪主译。西安:陕西师范大学出版总社,2019年。
- [Halifax, Joan. *Shamanic Voices: A Survey of Visionary Narratives*, mainly translated by Ye Shuxian. Xi'an: Shaanxi Normal UP Co. LTD, 2019.]
- 惠利健: "普罗米修斯之火——肝脏再生和研究范式转换",《世界科学》10(2020): 28-30。
- [Hui Lijian. "Promethean Fire—Liver Regeneration and Paradigm Shift in Research." World Science 10 (2020): 28-30.]
- Jeon, O. H et al. "Systemic Induction of Senescence in Young Mice after Single Heterochronic Blood Exchange." *Nat Metab* 4 (2022): 995-1006.
- 洛伊斯·N·玛格纳:《医学史》,刘学礼主译。上海:上海人民出版社,2017年。
- [Magner, N. Lois. *A History of Medicine*, mainly translated by Liu Xueli. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing House, 2017.]

- 马林诺夫斯基:《巫术 科学 宗教与神话》,李安宅译。北京:中国民间文艺出版 社,1986年。
- [Malinowski, Bronislaw Kaspar. Magic, Science and Religion and Other Essays, translated by Li Anzhai. Beijing: China Folk Literature and Art Publishing house, 1986.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- Orosz, J. Joel. "A Short History of Bloodletting." Artificial Organs 3 (1981): 226-228.
- 奥维德:《变形记》,杨周翰译。北京:人民文学出版社,2008年。
- [Ovidiius. Metamorphoses, translated by Yang Zhouhan. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2008.]
- 钱珊珊等: "牛凝血酶的制备研究",《中国生化药物杂志》6(2006): 346-348。
- [Oian, Shanshan et al. "Preparation of Thrombin in Bovine Blood." Chinese Journal of Biochemical Pharmaceutics 6 (2006): 346-348.]
- Thompson, E. Ethel. "Primitive African Medical Lore and Witchcraft." Bulletin of the Medical Library Association 1 (1965): 80-94.
- Samarghandian, Saeed and Borji Abasalt. "Anticarcinogenic Effect of Saffron (Crocus sativus L.) and Its Ingredients." Pharmacognosy Res 2 (2014): 99-107.
- 亨利•西格里斯特:《人与医学:西医文化史》,朱晓译。北京:中国友谊出版公 司,2019年。
- [Sigerist, E. Henry. Man and Medicine: An Introduction to Medical Knowledge, translated by Zhu Xiao. Beijing: China Friendship Publishing Company, 2019.]
- Thornber, L. Karen. Global Healing: Literature, Advocacy, Care. Leiden: Brill, 2020.
- Villeda, S. et al. "Young Blood Reverses Age-related Impairments in Cognitive Function and Synaptic Plasticity in Mice." Nat Med 6 (2014): 659-663.

"驯化恐惧":《奥瑞斯忒亚》中复仇女神的斯芬克斯因子形态

"Domestication of Fear": The Sphinx Factor Form of the Erinyes in the *Oresteia*

任 晓 (Ren Xiao)

内容摘要:在古希腊,女性怪物是有序文明之外的产物,暗示着城邦公民对其所代表的潜在威胁与破坏的恐惧心理。埃斯库罗斯的《奥瑞斯忒亚》三联剧呈现的正是复仇女神所代表的恐惧及其转变的过程。在兽性因子的操控下,她们以混合的动物性躯壳和非理性的癫狂宣称报复性伦理,并在更广泛的程度上以全体女性的声音说话。直到复仇女神以清晰的语言进入与阿波罗论辩的公共空间中,在对话伦理的作用下,她们所蕴含的非理性的自然力量被改造成公民熟悉的形式,进而在雅典娜的影响下逐渐剥离自身的兽性因子,重新选择了伦理身份,即立足于家庭生活和公共仪式之中审慎安静的女性成员。值得注意的是,复仇女神的伦理转变反映了古典时期以男性为中心的伦理规范对女性的限定和控制,并指向埃斯库罗斯面向全体公民的伦理教化。

关键词:《奥瑞斯忒亚》;复仇女神;斯芬克斯因子;伦理

作者简介: 任晓,中山大学中国语言文学系博士生,主要研究领域为古希腊 悲剧伦理与科技伦理。

Title: "Domestication of Fear": The Sphinx Factor Form of the Erinyes in the *Oresteia*

Abstract: In ancient Greece, female monsters were considered manifestations beyond the bounds of civilized order, symbolizing the citizens' fear of the latent threats and potential for the destruction they represented. Aeschylus's *Oresteia* trilogy illustrates this fear embodied by the Erinyes and their subsequent transformation. Under the influence of the animal factor, the Erinyes advocate the ethic of vengeance through their hybrid animal forms and irrational frenzy, broadly representing the voice of all women. Until the Erinyes entered the public space of debate with Apollo in clear language, the irrational natural forces they embodied were transformed into forms familiar to citizens through the influence of dialogic ethics. Under Athena's influence, these forces gradually shed the animal factor and redefined their ethical identity as cautious and composed female members grounded

in domestic life and public rituals. Importantly, the Erinyes' ethical transformation reflects the classical period's male-dominated ethical norms that sought to define and control women, pointing to Aeschylus's didactic efforts aimed at the entire citizenry.

Keywords: the *Oresteia*; the erinyes; sphinx factor; ethics

Author: Ren Xiao is a Ph.D. Candidate at the Department of Chinese Language and Literature, Sun Yat-sen University (Guangzhou 510220, China). Her research interests are ethics in ancient Greek tragedy and technological ethics (Email: 740797760@gg.com).

在古希腊神话中,怪物形象构成了其叙事结构的核心要素。在某种程度 上,像米诺陶(Minotaur)、美杜莎(Medusa)、赛壬(Sirens)和斯芬克斯(Sphinx) 等怪物往往代表着人类心理、自然力量或伦理观念的象征化与具体化。其中,怪 物及其蕴含的"恐惧"显示了"混乱战胜秩序""非理性压倒理性""自然 侵蚀人类文明"的潜在可能性(Felton 103)。因为怪物彰显着古希腊文化中 所恐惧事物的内容,并与"希腊人理想化中的有序和理性的社会相反"(Felton 104)。它既不是人类或动物,而是介于两者之间,从而形成"令人不安的混 合体",一种被称为"本体论阈限"(ontological liminality)的形态(Cohen 6)。而 在这些怪物中,女性占据了大多数的数量。正如简·布雷默(Jan Bremmer) 所说的, 荒野是怪物等"无序"事物的所属之地。 由于希腊人经常将女性视 为"自然的野性(希腊人将其定义为超越有序文明边界的事物)"。因此,希 腊神话中很大一部分的怪物是女性。2她们可能有相似的面孔、武器、符号、特 权或技能,拥有生育和死亡的能力,并与血统、不朽和命运等因素相关联。3 女性掌控生死的能力指向了她们本身具备的危险性,因此被当作异类并被主 流叙事推向边缘。"这些叙事将正常、现实和理性的世界等同于希腊和男性,将 野蛮、不真实和世界的边缘等同于女性"(Marciniak 199)。古希腊人之所 以将女性怪物视为城邦生活中独特的存在,其目的在于通过重复的叙述而对 她们背后体现的恐惧进行命名,从而以期驯化或剥夺女性代表着的具有威胁 的事物。4也就是说,"当女性表达无法控制、愤怒或充满愤怒的情绪时",便

参见 Jan N. Bremmer, "Monsters en fabeldieren in de Griekse cultuur," Mededelingenblad. Vereniging van Vrienden Allard Pierson Museum 68 (1997): 3.

参见 Debbie Felton, "Rejecting and Embracing the Monstrous in Ancient Greece and Rome," The Ashgate Research Companion to Monsters and the Monstrous, edited by Asa Simon Mittman and Peter J. Dendle, London: Routledge, 2012, 105.

参见 Martina Treu, "Dark Ladies, Bad Girls, Demon Queens: Female Power and Seduction from Greek Tragedy to Pop Culture," Seduction and Power: Antiquity in the Visual and Performing Arts, edited by Silke Knippschild and Marta Garcia Morcillo, London: Bloomsbury, 2013, 73.

参见 J. J. Cohen, Monster Theory, Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1966, viii.

被赋予了某种怪物的特质,从而使人类产生恐惧。进一步地,人们将这种女 性的特质视为"兽性",并反过来将其"拟人化"。"在没有男性文化的情 况下,女性代表某种兽性、野蛮和原始的东西",女性的愤怒与动物母亲的 情感类似, "她的行为也受到这种情绪的支配和控制"(Gabriel 56-57)。在 一众古希腊的女性怪物中,复仇女神(Erinyes)是其中尤为重要的一个。她 们可能与生与死(作为复仇者、惩罚者或连环杀手)等古老力量相关,也可 能化身为美丽危险的女性,富有诱惑性。 '埃斯库罗斯作为延续神话写作模式 的悲剧诗人,在《奥瑞斯忒亚》(the Oresteia)²三联剧³中呈现了复仇女神由 怪物到城邦成员的转变,一种人性因子(Human Factor)和兽性因子(Animal Factor)两部分构成的斯芬克斯 ⁴ 因子(Sphinx Factor)式的伦理选择。⁵

总体来说,本研究以古希腊古典时期的城邦生活为背景,借助文学伦理 学批评的相关理论,对《奥瑞斯忒亚》中复仇女神的"做兽"还是"做人"的 伦理困境进行全方位的解读,从而探索她们伦理身份的转变过程及其背后反 映的公元前5世纪新的城邦性别伦理规范。进一步地,通过本研究以期对女 性怪物的驯化与城邦制度之间的关系进行更深度的挖掘,在剖析性别身份形 成过程的多重权力动态中,对当下社会的女性困境提供一定的借鉴。

一、混合的身体形态:理性秩序的威胁性力量

怪物的主要特征是"尺寸异常"、"与任何人以前见过的任何东西都不 一样"和"引起厌恶"(Felton 104)。从这个层面上看,复仇女神正是一种 刻板的怪物形式,尽管她们被描述为"女性",但更多体现的是"兽"的形 态和品质。她们呈现的是"人的动物性本能的一部分",这些"兽性因子是 人在进化过程中的动物本能的残留,是人身上存在的兽性部分"。进一步地,"兽

参见 Martina Treu, "Dark Ladies, Bad Girls, Demon Queens: Female Power and Seduction from Greek Tragedy to Pop Culture," Seduction and Power: Antiquity in the Visual and Performing Arts, edited by Silke Knippschild and Marta Garcia Morcillo, London: Bloomsbury, 2013, 77. 本文引用西方古典文献的译文,均系笔者依据古希腊原文,并参考不同英译本、中译 本译出。文中的引用标注西方古典学通行编码,埃斯库罗斯剧作行码随文标注。埃斯库 罗斯剧作的古希腊原文参见 Aeschylus, Oresteia: Agamemnon, Libation-Bearers, Eumenides, translated by Alan. H Sommerstein, MA: Harvard, 2008。由于《奥瑞斯忒亚》是由三联剧的 形式构成,本文在引用时采用简写的形式,即《阿伽门农》简写为"Aga.",《奠酒人》 简写为 "Cho. (由希腊文 "Choephoroi"而来,是其常见简写形式)",《和善女神》简 写为 "Eum."。

³ 指《阿伽门农》(Agamemnon)、《奠酒人》(Libation-Bearers)、《和善女神》(Eumenides)。

⁴ 从性别层面看,斯芬克斯是一个长着女人的头、狮子的身体、鹰的翅膀和蛇一样的尾 巴的女性,显示了怪物与女性的关系。参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京: 北京大学出版社, 2014年, 第37页。

⁵ 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第38页。

性因子只是人在进化为人之后身上的动物性残留,它不仅说明人从兽进化而 来,而且说明人即使脱离野蛮状态之后变成了文明人,身上也还存在有动物 的特性"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》39)。因此,复仇女神的"兽 化"类似于古代对美杜莎以及蛇发女妖的描绘,在城邦话语的叙述中往往作 为秩序与文明的反面存在,由此凸显了她们及其代表的女性特有的动物性和 非理性,并进一步地将这些女性贴上离经叛道的标签。

当复仇女神第一次出现在舞台上时,就引发了大范围的恐慌和震惊,其 至造成了观众的流产。1在《奠酒人》结尾中,尽管她们暂时并未获得实体形 象,仅仅作为投射在奥瑞特斯头脑中的幻象存在。直到《和善女神》,阿波 罗的女祭司皮提亚(Pythia)为观众展示了更为可怖的复仇女神形象:

在他近旁的位置上,一群惊异于常人的女人正酣然大睡。不! 我应 该称她们为蛇发女妖,而不是女人;但我也无法将她们与蛇发女妖的相 比较。曾经有一次,我在一幅画中看到一种怪物夺走了菲纽斯 (Phineus) 的食物。这些怪物没有翅膀、全身呈黑色、令人憎恶。她们打着令人厌 恶的鼾,眼睛里滴着令人作呕的泪水;她们那身装束不适合带到神明的 雕像前或进入人类的家中。(Eum. 46-55)

这是复仇女神沉睡时的形象, 当她们梦中醒来时便恢复了复仇的使命, 即 通过强有力的诅咒来延续以牙还牙的报复性伦理,以此持续地加深观众的恐 惧情绪。复仇女神的第一个连贯的话语由单个单词"抓住他"(λαβέ)(Eum. 130)的四次重复组成,这意味着她们情感的狂乱并可能伴有狩猎的嚎叫。这 些野性的声音可能也有助于加深性别之间的对比,从而强调男性的优越性。在 "第一合唱歌中,复仇女神使用了"诅咒歌曲"(Binding Song),这是一种 仪式歌曲,每个单词都被赋予了具有魔法的属性。2这些诅咒之歌能够在最大 程度上造成观众的恐慌,因为诅咒以补充的方式附着在一个家族的连续几代 人身上,类似于"遗传的罪恶感"。3这样的癫狂的诅咒,能够在最大程度上 引发观众的情感的恐慌,并一次次地使人们产生持续性地失序感和威胁感。

此外,复仇女神也作为克吕泰墨涅斯特拉的"母亲权力"4的代表者,与

¹ 参见 Helene Foley, "Choral Identity in Greek Tragedy," Classical Philology 1 (2003): 7.

² 参见 Cynthia Werner, The Erinyes in Aeschylus' Oresteia, 2012, Victoria University of Wellington, PhD dissertation, 120-121+125.

诅咒是古希腊戏剧中经常出现的表演形式,关于其四种定义参见 N. J. Sewell-Rutter, Guilt by Descent Moral Inheritance and Decision Making in Greek Tragedy, New York: Oxford University Press, 2007, 59.

^{4 《}和善女神》中提到,埃里倪斯的母亲是"黑夜女神(Nóξ)"(321),这充分体现 了与母亲角色的关系和本身单性生殖的特质,从而与三联剧中更广泛的性别冲突主题产生 联系。

克吕泰涅斯特拉的形象完全融合在一起形成共生关系。因为克吕泰墨涅斯 特拉声称谋杀行为本身的实施者为复仇女神对阿特柔斯的报复(Aga. 1500-1552)。「与此同时,克吕泰墨涅斯特拥有与复仇女神类似的动物性的形态 和野性。在卡珊德拉的预言中,克吕泰墨涅斯特拉是"双足母狮 (δίπους λέαινα)",阿伽门农是"高贵的狮子"(Aga. 1258)。"母狮"赋予了克 吕泰墨涅斯特拉积极的角色和威胁性力量,在某种程度上集中彰显了男人和 女人、家庭和战场、私人和公共空间、人类和野兽行为之间的紧张关系。2"双 足母狮"一方面指向克吕泰墨涅斯特拉个人权威的集中展示,另一方面是她 与狮子完成猎杀后相似的视觉呈现。同时,克吕泰墨涅斯特拉的弑夫行为本 质上是"非理性意志"的作用,"这是一种不道德的意志。它的产生并非源 于本能,而是来自错误的判断或是犯罪的欲望。非理性意志是理性意志的反 向意志,是一种非道德力量,渗透在人的伦理意识中"(聂珍钊,"文学伦 理学批评:伦理选择与斯芬克斯因子"13)。克吕泰墨涅斯特拉的犯罪欲 望是"对阿伽门农本人和他作为一个男人地位的嫉妒"(Winnington-Ingram 132),她通过强烈个人主张实现自我存在,拒绝社会提供的角色定位,展 现了一种以毁灭男性为代价的极端女权政治。从这个层面上看,复仇女神既 作为"兽性因子"的形态和功能的呈现者,也在更广的范围上作为女性整体 上的斯芬克斯因子和"非理性意志"而存在。作为复仇和诅咒的女神,她们 与海伦和克吕泰墨涅斯特拉表现出对男性秩序产生威胁的潜力,特洛伊因海 伦的越轨而被毁灭,阿尔戈斯因克吕泰墨涅斯特拉统治而陷入恐惧中,"这 表明复仇女神(及其潜在的有益能力)必须处于男性之下控制"(Werner 11),而这主要通过她们新的伦理选择而实现。

二、流动的身份边界: 祛除兽性的伦理选择

在古希腊政治生活中,对立、派系斗争、叛乱和内战是长期存在的一种 现象,其产生的根源在于城邦制度的特殊性——即强烈自豪感的自治和开放 性的边界。因而, 在城邦生活中时刻充斥着富人与穷人、本邦与外邦、男性 与女性之间争夺政治权、公民权与参与权等不同类型的斗争。3在某种程度 上,这些论辩成为解决模糊不清的问题和消除潜在威胁的第一步,这也正是 复仇女神从原始的荒野进入城邦生活的第一步。她们以对女性权利的清晰陈 述而出现,认为儿子杀害母亲比妻子杀害丈夫更重要,因为婚姻关系只是规

参见 Emmanuela Bakola, "Seeing the Invisible: Interior Spaces and Uncanny Erinyes in Aeschylus' Oresteia," Gaze, Vision, and Visuality in Ancient Greek Literature, edited by Alexandros Kampakoglou and Anna Novokhatko, Berlin: De Gruyter, 2018, 181.

² 关于双足母狮的问题参见 Ariadne Konstantinou, "The Lioness Imagery in Greek Tragedy," The Quaderni Urbinati di Cultura Classica 2 (2012): 127-130.

参见 Peter T. Manicas, "War, Stasis, and Greek Political Thought," The Comparative Studies in Society and History 4 (1982): 680.

定性社会关系的一种,而母子关系根植于共同的"血缘"。针对复仇女神的 观点,阿波罗的反驳指向赫拉与宙斯的"婚姻誓言、库普里斯所赋予的甜蜜 情爱以及正义之神保护下的男女结合"(Eum. 210-218)。在这里,埃斯库罗 斯通过设置双重视角,使二者分别坚持个人的观点和伦理身份,因为"叙事 能够给个体经验赋予一定的结构与秩序,具有建构世界的能力。在被叙事建 构起来的世界中,叙述者和人物认同了自己的位置,同时也投射出自己的意 识形态,并对自我产生一定的意义"(尚必武 27)。因此,当复仇女神与阿 波罗在争论奥瑞斯特斯因弑母而犯罪还是因维护父亲权力而无罪的问题时,显 示了二者因身份认同问题而产生的不同的伦理标准。从这里来看,"斯芬克 斯因子的不同组合和变化,导致文学作品中人物的不同行为特征和性格表 现,形成不同的伦理冲突,表现出不同的道德价值"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理 学批评导论》 38)。换句话说, "伦理选择的复杂性和责任性正在于人类价 值观念的多样性和非公约性,因为做出选择所包含的道德份量不仅在于做出 什么选择,还包括怎样做出选择"(杨革新 120)。而对于人类本身而言,"需 要解决的最大问题是在动物身份和人类身份之间做出选择"(Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection" 384)。因此,在这种情 况下,复仇女神必须选择坚持还是抛弃自身的受控于自然意志的伦理标准。促 成这一切的转变则取决于复仇女神的认知功能,认知过程中的关键在于她们 是否"能够不断地用人性因子抑制和引导兽性因子,始终让人性因子处于主 导的地位,不断地通过伦理选择学习做人"(聂珍钊,"论人的认知与意识" 94)。因此,促成复仇女神身份转变的节点变得异常重要,而雅典娜的出现 为她们的伦理选择提供了一个契机。

雅典娜在出场时便表明了她的伦理身份,即一个"完全属于父亲"(Eum. 738)的雌雄同体的人。雅典娜之所以如此宣称是因为她诞生于宙斯的头颅,这 也正是她理性精神的起源,也就为她进行伦理选择奠定了基础。在这种理性 思维的影响下,雅典娜决定投票支持奥瑞斯特斯,宣告其无罪,并创立了以 男性为中心的战神山法庭。一开始,复仇女神并未立刻遵从该判决的结果,她 们内心秉承的仍然是自然意志、原始惯例和女性权利结合的主张,从而迸发 出极大的报复性激情,诅咒雅典"从此枝叶不生结果,正义的报复,蔓延于 这片大地"(Eum. 785-786)。直到通过雅典娜的劝解,在情感安抚、权威震 慑和宗教权利三重力量的作用下,复仇女神接受了男性制度之下以理性解决 冲突的方案,从而转向对城邦的祝福。自此,复仇女神实现了功能的转变,即 从惩戒家族罪犯的埃里倪斯转而被雅典娜安抚,成为"崇敬女神"(Revered Goddesses)¹, 永恒居住于雅典城邦。"当兽性因子得到抑制和约束时,人就 会做出正确的伦理选择。伦理选择阶段最重要的就是人如何用人性因子约束

关于复仇女神的名字问题参见 Edith Hall, Greek Tragedy: Suffering under the Sun, New York: Oxford University Press, 2010, 224.

兽性因子,选择做人而不是做兽。因此,做人是伦理选择的道德目的"(聂 珍钊, "文学伦理学批评:人类文明三阶段论" 8)。也就是说,在此时,复 仇女神的兽性因子得到了约束,而这种人性因子正是来自于男性,她们整个 的转变过程呈现的正是男性理性对女性野性的驯化,以此明确规定女性活动 的"正确"领域——即排斥于城邦公共政治生活之外的忠实的妻子、孩子合 法的母亲和受人尊敬的城邦仪式的参与者。1

三、教化的功用: 古典时期性别伦理范式的构建

复仇女神的身份选择蕴含了一定的伦理智慧,她们"对具有历史合理性 的伦理道德原则和规范予以遵守,对旧的伦理道德原则和规范的束缚勇于突 破,并倡导和践行顺应社会发展潮流的新的伦理道德"(苏晖 103)。这种 新的道德指向的正是公元前5世纪的奥林匹斯诸神的地位高于复仇女神为代 表的原始神,希腊人高于野蛮人,男性高于女性的社会规范。也就是说文学 是道德的产物,也成为特定历史情况下的一种伦理表达形式。2因此,在《和 善女神》的结尾我们可以看到,剧作中"完成了克吕泰墨涅斯特拉在第一部 中大言不惭地宣称的政治权力(沿着母权制神话的路线)向女性仪式权力的 转移"(Zeitlin 173),最终使女性成为附属于男性的妻子和女儿。进一步地,由 丈夫赋予妻子的理性与知识,本质上是属于男性的特质。"理想的、顺从的、听 话的妻子可以说与她的丈夫在智力上是匹配的"(Gabriel 12)。从男性哲学 家的角度来看,"女性在生物学上生来就不如男性。她们的低调,受剥削和 限制的女性角色被自然世界牢牢地固定下来"。在根深蒂固的以男性为中心 的社会中, "女性自然而然地处于被征服的地位" (Gabriel 15)。这种观点 在埃斯库罗斯所在的古典时期尤为显著。在这个时期,希腊公民资格特别排 除了两个主要群体:女性和外邦人(包括奴隶)。当然,女性并未完全排斥 在一切政治进程之外,因为在官方的宗教活动中,她们仍保持自身的参与。例 如,雅典的首席祭司是一位女性3,这也与三联剧中复仇女神保留的宗教职能 建立了关联。

"由于伦理规范不能先天遗传而只能后天学习,因此如何做人就成为 后天的伦理选择, 道德教诲就成为伦理选择的方法。道德教诲的价值在于教 导人(teaching and learning)怎样抑制身上的兽性因子而进行正确的伦理选 择"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:人类文明三阶段论"8-9)。为了建立

¹ 参见 Edith Hall, Greek Tragedy: Suffering under the Sun, New York: Oxford University Press,

² 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

参见 Paul Cartledge, "Democratic Politics Ancient and Modern: From Cleisthenes to Mary Robinson," Hermathena 166 (1999): 9.

和巩固上面表述的城邦生活中的性别规范,埃斯库罗斯发挥了诗人的"教 化"(paideia)功能¹,通过一年一度的城邦酒神节表演,使公民获得作为希 腊人、男性、公民和雅典人的身份认同和权利归属。²在这个过程中,"故事 讲述凭借其本质特征变成了一项道德参与活动,敦促我们做出同意与否的判 断。他要求我们参与其中并对其做出反应或按照罗森布拉特的观点'与之沟 通交易'(transact)"(杨革新 119)。因此,复仇女神的转变过程是一场 大型的伦理教化现场。一开始,复仇女神在前两部剧作中往往作为"幻影"存 在,直到第三部,她们的形象开始实体化。因为展示共同体内的恐惧并将其 驯化的第一步必须是"提供邪恶力量的视觉形式,当它们无形无形时,最令 人恐惧"(Porada 1)。当复仇女神的形象开始出现在舞台上时,也就意味着 她们进入了城邦公共的生活,进而通过戏剧表演,促成古典时期的性别规范 的构建和成熟, 正如朱迪斯•巴特勒(Judith Butler)所言: "从这个意义上说, 性 别绝不是一种稳定的身份或各种行为发生的代理场所。相反,它是一种在时 间中牵强地构成的身份——种通过程式化的重复行为而建立的身份。此外,性 别通过身体的风格化而建立,因此必须被理解为一种普遍的方式。基于此,各 种身体姿势、动作和表演构成了持久的性别自我的幻象"(Butler 519)。在 巴特勒的视角中不难发现,复仇女神及其体现的女性特质正是在"重复性行 为"中建立,这样的"怪物"是根据共同体制定的"何谓好的、可接受的、正 常的或自然的"标准而定义,从而导致"在不同的时间、地点、文化,或者 同一文化中的不同观点,会出现不同的答案"(Atherton x)。在与男性特质 的对比中,怪物呈现了一种有序社会的"颠倒模式",它们作为由社会规范 所定义的他者出现,并成为特定文化的产物。³因此,不论是转变前复仇女神 的怪物形象,还是其转变后符合城邦伦理的女性特征,都是在城邦话语的重 复性叙述中形成。希腊人之所以要创造与自身对立的典范,这是因为雅典公 民的"希腊性"往往通过边缘人(非希腊人、女性和奴隶等"负面人物") 而定义。而积极的的词语定义了自由、希腊人(雅典人)和城邦的男性公民。4 在对复仇女神的恐惧及其驯化的过程中,埃斯库罗斯展现了符合希腊人或者 说希腊成年男性的伦理规范。进一步地,"人类通过叙事不仅建构了自我身

德国古典学家韦尔纳·耶格尔(Werner W. Jaeger)指出 paideia 是古希腊语境中的一个 复杂的概念,现代意义上文明、文化、传统、文学或教育等概念。但它们都没有真正地涵 盖希腊人所说的 paideia。参见 Werner W. Jaeger, Paideia: The Ideals of Greek Culture vol. 1, translated by Gilbert Highet, London: Basil Blackwell, 1946, v.

² 参见 Mark Griffith, "Brilliant Dynasts, Power and Politics in the Oresteia," Classical Antiquity 1 (1995): 62-63.

³ 参见 Liane Posthumus, Hybrid Monsters in the Classical World: The Nature and Function of Hybrid Monsters in Greek Mythology, 2011, University of Stellenbosch, PhD dissertation, 24.

⁴ 参见 Page duBois, Centaurs and Amazons: Women and the Pre-History of the Great Chain of Being, Ann Arbor: The University of Michigan Press, 1982, 4.

份,而且最终理解了自我与世界之间的关系,从而实现对道德意义的诉求,达 到伦理化的目的"(尚必武 29)。复仇女神及其代表的报复性观念呈现的是 古希腊人对于传统习俗的理解,阿波罗则象征着理性和法律的新兴观念。通 过埃斯库罗斯对二者的叙述,古希腊人既能增加对伦理和法律的多重理解,也 能进一步地定义自身的道德立场,从而建立起自身的公民身份。

在这部剧作中, 复仇女神作为传统复仇以及与之相关的恐惧力量的代 表者,展现了她们在兽性因子的操控下的混乱伦理观念。直到剧作的最后一 部,复仇女神与阿波罗以论争的方式对话,由此形成了"自我与他者的对话 伦理",从而促成"主体间的相互理解与共同体良好伦理秩序的建构"(苏 晖 董旭 144)。在雅典娜的影响下,复仇女神从纯粹的兽性和非理性的复仇 者,转变为一个参与城邦生活的成员,从而形成了新的城邦伦理秩序。自此,女 性遵循安静而审慎的伦理,保持谦逊与服从,男性则占据公共生活的主导地 位,从而导致了女性在公共领域中的边缘化,由此反映了公元前5世纪古希 腊女性伦理的形成。

Works Cited

- Aeschylus. Oresteia: Agamemnon, Libation-Bearers, Eumenides, translated by Alan. H Sommerstein. MA: Harvard, 2008.
- Atherton, Catherine. Monsters and Monstrosity in Greek and Roman. Bari: Levante, 1998.
- Bakola, Emmanuela. "Seeing the Invisible: Interior Spaces and Uncanny Erinyes in Aeschylus' Oresteia." Gaze, Vision, and Visuality in Ancient Greek Literature, edited by Alexandros Kampakoglou and Anna Novokhatko. Berlin: De Gruyter, 2018. 163-186.
- Bremmer, Jan N. "Monsters en Fabeldieren in de Griekse Cultuur." Mededelingenblad. Vereniging van Vrienden Allard Pierson Museum 68 (1997): 2-5.
- Butler, Judith. "Performative Acts and Gender Constitution: An Essay in Phenomenology and Feminist Theory." Theatre Journal 4 (1988): 519-531.
- Cohen, J. J. Monster Theory. Minneapolis: U of Minnesota P, 1996.
- DuBois, Page. Centaurs and Amazons: Women and the Pre-History of the Great Chain of Being. Ann Arbor: U of Michigan P, 1982.
- Foley, Helene. "Choral Identity in Greek Tragedy." Classical Philology 1 (2003): 1-30.
- Felton, Debbie. "Rejecting and Embracing the Monstrous in Ancient Greece and Rome." The Ashgate Research Companion to Monsters and the Monstrous, edited by Asa Simon Mittman and Peter J. Dendle. London: Routledge, 2012. 103-131.
- Gabriel, Katherine Anne. Performing Femininity: Gender in Ancient Greek Myth. New York: Bard College, 2016.
- Griffith, Mark. "Brilliant Dynasts, Power and Politics in the Oresteia." Classical Antiquity 1 (1995): 62-129.

- Hall, Edith. Greek Tragedy: Suffering under the Sun. New York: Oxford UP, 2010.
- Jaeger, Werner W. Paideia: The Ideals of Greek Culture vol. 1, translated by Gilbert Highet. London: Basil Blackwell, 1946.
- Konstantinou, Ariadne. "The Lioness Imagery in Greek Tragedy." The Quaderni Urbinati di Cultura Classica 2 (2012): 125-144.
- Marciniak, Katarzyna. Chasing Mythical Beasts: The Reception of Ancient Monsters in Children's and Young Adults' Culture. Heidelberg: Universitätsverlag Winter, 2020.
- Manicas, Peter T. "War, Stasis, and Greek Political Thought." The Comparative Studies in Society and History 4 (1982): 673-688.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一: "文学伦理学批评: 伦理选择与斯芬克斯因子",《外国文学研究》6(2011): 1-13。
- [... "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choices and the Sphinx Factor." Foreign Literature Studies 6 (2011): 1-13.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 人类文明三阶段论", 《东吴学术》5(2022): 6-13。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On the Three Stages of Human Civilization." Soochow Academic 5 (2022): 6-13.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "论人的认知与意识", 《浙江社会科学》10(2020): 91-159。
- [—. "On Human Cognition and Consciousness." Zhejiang Social Sciences 10 (2020): 91-159.]
- Posthumus, Liane. Hybrid Monsters in the Classical World: The Nature and Function of Hybrid Monsters in Greek Mythology. 2011. University of Stellenbosch, PhD dissertation.
- Porada, E. "Introduction." Monsters and Demons in the Ancient and Medieval Worlds, edited by Ann E. Farkas, Prudence Oliver Harper, and Evelyn Byrd Harrison. Mainz am Rhein: Philipp von Zabern, 1987. 1-11.
- Pestell, Ben. "Kindly Terror and Civic Fury: Eumenides and the Language of Myth." Comparative Literature Studies 2 (2017): 305-328.
- Sewell-Rutter, N. J. Guilt by Descent Moral Inheritance and Decision Making in Greek Tragedy. New York: Oxford UP, 2007.
- 尚必武: "叙事身份的内涵、意义与建构方式", 《学术论坛》6(2022): 20-30。
- [Shang Biwu. "The Connotations, Significance, and Construction Methods of Narrative Identity." Academic Forum 6 (2022): 20-30.]

- 苏晖: "伦理智慧与伦理选择:关于文学伦理学批评核心范畴的思考",《华中师范大学学报(人文社会科学版)》2(2022):79-105。
- [Su Hui. "Ethical Wisdom and Ethical Choices: Reflections on Core Categories in Literary Ethics Criticism." *Journal of Central China Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences)* 2 (2022): 79-105.]
- 苏晖、董旭: "对话伦理与伦理选择", 《外语导刊》4(2024): 141-149。
- [Su Hui and Dong Xu. "Dialogue Ethics and Ethical Choices." Foreign Languages Bimonthly 4 (2024): 141-149.]
- Treu, Martina. "Dark Ladies, Bad Girls, Demon Queens: Female Power and Seduction from Greek Tragedy to Pop Culture." *Seduction and Power: Antiquity in the Visual and Performing Arts*, edited by Silke Knippschild and Marta Garcia Morcillo. London: Bloomsbury, 2013. 71-84.
- Werner, Cynthia. *The Erinyes in Aeschylus' Oresteia*. 2012. Victoria University of Wellington, PhD dissertation.
- Winnington-Ingram, R. P. "Clytemnestra and the Vote of Athena." *The Journal of Hellenic Studies* 68 (1948): 130-147.
- 杨革新: "伦理批评的重新界定",《江西师范大学学报(哲学社会科学版)》4(2016): 117-121.
- [Yang Gexin. "Redefinition of Ethical Criticism." *Journal of Jiangxi Normal University (Social Sciences)* 4 (2016): 117-121.]
- Zeitlin, Froma I. "The Dynamics of Misogyny: Myth and Mythmaking in the *Oresteia*." *Arethusa* 11 (1978): 149-184.

作为一种正义的"耻": J. M. 库切作品中的伦理未决

"Shame" as a Form of Justice: The Ethical Ambiguity in J. M. Coetzee's Works

陈佳璐 (Chen Jialu)

内容摘要:精神危机是库切作品的重要主题。"耻"是他从所处的社会历史和文学传统中生发出的一种变形后的罪感;是在神被祛魅的时代下,身处畸形法律和道德中个人面对不公而审判自身的动力与依据。库切试图祛除宗教视角,在世俗层面进行苦涩的伦理探索。整体的道德沉沦和沉默的身体共同催生出了"耻",使库切不能轻易对苦难之后的道德和解进行文学想象。在精神危机和伦理解决上,库切延宕了人物的道德选择。从库切写作的历史背景和个人身份来看,伦理未决成为了一种文学正义。

关键词:"耻";库切;伦理;文学正义

作者简介:陈佳璐,贵州大学文学院讲师,主要研究方向为南非文学和俄罗斯文学。本文为贵州大学引进人才科研基金"存在主义视域下的 J.M. 库切书写之'耻'"【项目批号:贵大人基合字(2023)040号】的成果。

Title: "Shame" as a Form of Justice: The Ethical Ambiguity in J. M. Coetzee's Works

Abstract: A spiritual crisis constitutes the central theme in J. M. Coetzee's works. The concept of "shame" in Coetzee's writings represents a transformation of guilt stemming from his socio-historical context and literary traditions. "Shame" serves as both a motivation and foundation for individuals to engage in self-reflection when confronted with injustice within a distorted legal and moral framework, particularly in an era marked by the disenchantment of God. Coetzee endeavors to eliminate the religious dimension and conducts a profound ethical inquiry on secular level. The whole moral decline, coupled with the silent body, engenders "shame" that renders Coetzee unable to envision moral reconciliation following suffering. Regarding spiritual crisis and ethical resolution, Coetzee defers the moral decision of the character. Drawing upon the historical context of Coetzee's writing and personal identity, ethical ambiguity emerges as a form of literary justice.

Keywords: "Shame"; Coetzee; ethics; literary justice

Author: Chen Jialu is Lecturer at the School of Literature, Guizhou University (Guiyang 550025, China). Her academic research focuses on South African Literature and Russian Literature (Email: 15285068487@163.com).

在文明发展史上,人类经历了三种选择,即自然选择(natural selection)、 伦理选择(ethical selection)和科学选择(scientific selection)。人类文明始 于自然选择。类人猿获得了人的形式。伦理选择形成了人的本质,科学选择 旨在以技术解决人的科学化问题。1 文学从起源上说是人类文明向前发展的标 志,它将伦理观念具化为文本,并建立社会的伦理秩序。2伦理价值即是文学 的基本价值。3在文学作品中,作家通过叙事展现了人求善逐恶的伦理观念,以 及社会的伦理禁忌。J. M. 库切(J. M. Coetzee)正是一位频繁在小说中展现伦 理困境,思考人物如何做出伦理选择的作家。他出身于南非,追求共情与平 等的道德伦理, 但对可能会压迫个体的思想保持警惕。他的文学生涯开始于 对自己故乡的审视与回归,再现了不公正的社会制度与思想体系对人们造成 的肉体伤害和精神影响,试图探求修复人与人关系纽带的可能性,却对可能 的"救赎"保持距离。作为一名知识分子和流散者,库切不断地思考自我在 历史上的角色和责任,以及自我对于弱势他者的义务,因此伦理选择成为了 他小说的重要内容。目前的研究多集中对库切小说内容的伦理阐发,探究后 殖民文学的伦理转向在其作品中的呈现。4但是,它们未揭示出库切小说具有 的伦理未决性特征,及其在库切进行文学表达时的重要作用。库切并没有在 堕落一救赎的框架下思考。在人物遭遇精神危机以及由此衍生出的伦理解决 上,库切让人物的选择延宕,使伦理未决成为了一种文学正义。

一、库切之"耻"

读者可以从库切作品中发现他对于"耻"的重视。在《铁器时代》(Age

¹ 参见 聂珍钊: "伦理选择概念的两种涵义辨析", 《外国文学研究》6(2022): 16。

² 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 193.

³ 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》 4 (2014): 13。

⁴ 参见 史菊鸿: "从苏珊的'实体'问题看库切的主体观",《外国文学评论》4(2016): 215-228; 金怀梅: "库切作品中的素食伦理意蕴",《外国文学研究》2(2020): 110-120; 蒋晖: "'耻'的哀悼:大屠杀叙事与后殖民写作的伦理转向——从《迈克尔·K的生活和时代》说起",《上海师范大学学报(哲学社会科学版)》2(2021): 74-83; 姜小卫: "沉默与言说:库切小说《福》与后殖民批判",《外国语文》2(2016)38-45; 王妮、向天渊: "库切小说中的'属下'形象——后殖民理论视域下的一种阐释",《当代外国文学》3(2017): 149-156; 张德明: "从《福》看后殖民文学的表述困境",《当代外国文学》4(2010): 66-74。

of Iron, 1990) 和《等待野蛮人》(Waiting for the Barbarians, 1980) 中, 主人 公频繁地以"耻"来表达自己的感受,将其视作人在特定时代下重要的精神 状态。1999年,库切出版小说《耻》(Disgrace),展现了后种族隔离时期 南非白人寻求伦理和解的困境。

分辨善恶的能力使人不同于动物,这即是人类文明发展史上进行的伦 理选择。1库切也是如此,他身上的人性因子压倒了兽性因子,2南非白人身 份使他生来就背负着"耻"。他既反对布尔人的种族隔离政策,也难以将自 己视为非白人群体的代言人。无论自己是否参与种族压迫,是否认同布尔文 化,面对严密的国家机器,身为南非白人就意味着带有共谋性地参与了种族 隔离。因此,库切的早期小说一直思考作为殖民者后代该如何面对身份带给 他的"耻"。不过,库切没有抛弃他的"耻",而是形成了另一种自我认识 的路径。他要在写作中拥抱 "耻",表达对自己出身的愤怒。同样,"耻"让 他的存在变得延宕。库切在其小说里的隐现不是为了形塑全新的自己,而是 延续由"耻"所导致的存在焦虑。

库切的"耻"是从他所处的社会政治状况和文学传统中生发出变形后的 罪感。法律是现代社会中的权威标准之一。然而,在实行种族隔离制度的南 非,非人道的行为和种族主义取得了完全合法的地位。面对他者苦难、法律 不公,库切持守作家与生俱来的道德使命。他一方面关注他者的苦难,另一 方面也从自己不光彩地参与到种族隔离这一事实中深切体认到"耻"。罪感 文化植根于基督教。"耻"则是在神被祛魅的时代下,身处畸形的法律环境 和道德环境中的个人面对不公而去审判自身的动力与依据。整体的道德沉沦 和沉默的身体共同催生出了"耻",让库切不能轻易对苦难之后的道德和解 讲行文学想象。

由于关注种族他者在南非社会的遭遇,库切的作家主体性也受到了他者 面容的击打,让他开始思考自己作家身份的合理性。库切不把自己看作是预 言者、真理言说者或社会导师,不认为作家具有权威性。反而,他对自己的 作家身份感到了"耻",即作家之"耻"。蒂莫西·贝维斯(Timothy Bewes)认为,南非白人作家要对南非历史做出批判性的文学回应本身就是一种 "耻"。在复杂的伦理境况中,写作仅有在背叛那种复杂性的情况下才是可 能的。"耻"对库切而言既是义务又应受谴责,是不可能的,又是不能够避 免的。而南非白人在种族主义中的共谋又让作家的道德境况更具有自我审视 的意味。所以,库切的作品一直暗中为以下三个问题感到困扰:在意识到写 作与想要结束的事物有共谋性的前提下,如何有良心地去写作?如何在意味

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 386.

² 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 389.

到不公正的情况下写作,并且宣称写作与个人作为作家的职业能够免除于不 公正?如何去辩解写作中隐藏的至高无上的专横性质。1在这样的情况下,能 够书写的能力就是库切为作家身份感到"耻"的原因。2

库切没能在他的创作中寻找到伦理和解的方法,也未能从他者那里获取 消除自身存在焦虑的能力。在对库切早期小说的评论中,多数认为他没能展 示出各种历史力量斗争的清晰图景,或没有建立任何对于殖民主义或种族隔 离的伦理导向。纳丁·戈迪默(Nadine Gordimer)批评库切在《迈克尔·K 的生活和时代》(Life & Times of Michael K, 1983, 下文简称为《迈克尔·K》) 中没有想象出一种解决方式。3但戈迪默持批评态度的原因是她拥有和库切不 同的作家观。在2002年在国际作家组织PEN的讲座上, 戈迪默说道: "因 为我曾是一个作家(……)我成为了我的社会中未被发声的人的见证人"(qtd. in Bewes 140)。但这对库切是难以想象的。戈迪默的宣言在声称自己的写 作具有伦理性和政治性的同时, 也暗含了例外和开脱罪责的请求。她假定了 人类意识中的伦理基础,将对认识的纠正和改善视作伦理计划,但库切更警 惕作家成为社会现实的一个例外。库切的写作是对自我特权和共谋身份的一 种"自我诊断"。4他严厉地质疑作家通过写作为自己开脱罪责的合理性,拒 绝把自己定位为旁观的见证人。但是,身为作家的他不可能对社会上的现象 视若无睹。出于普遍的伦理责任感,库切选择以自己的立场去写作。5 作家之 "耻"正是在写作的先验命令和应受谴责的写作特权之间的张力中产生的。

二、整体的道德沉沦: 共谋之"耻"

库切关注人在特定境遇下的疑惑和行动上的停滞, 正视苦难的残酷和人 们在苦难形成中的共谋。6《等待野蛮人》呈现了不平等环境下的共谋问题。《等 待野蛮人》从老长官对乔尔上校的抵触出发,讲述以乔尔上校为代表的帝国

¹ 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011, 137, 139, 150.

² 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press,

³ 参见 Nadine Gordimer, "The Idea of Gardening," Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/ H1420001763/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=96ce1c54, Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.

⁴ 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011, 140-141.

⁵ 库切认为作家有两种责任。一是社会、社会的灵魂、社会的希望和梦想强加给作家的 一种义务。二是作者的本性,即良心。库切倾向于称第二种责任为一种命令,即先验的命令。 参见 J. M. Coetzee, Doubling the Point: Essays and Interviews, edited by David Attwell, Boston: Harvard University Press, 1992, 340.

⁶ 参见 Sam Durrant, Postcolonial Narrative and the Work of Mourning: J. M. Coetzee, Wilson Harris, and Toni Morrison, Albany: State University of New York Press, 2004, 51-52.

征服心态和严刑拷打对老长官的精神打击,以此展现博爱在病态环境下的缺 失。老长官作为帝国体系里的一员,在边陲小镇里过着清闲的日子。他对生 活在荒野中的野蛮人是温和的,并不去征服他们。然而,这一切在乔尔上校 到来后就改变了, 他严刑拷打了被偶然逮捕的两个野蛮人。尽管他们并未参 与野蛮人的抢劫活动,只是在附近求医看病。乔尔怀疑他们与最近野蛮人要 集结起来攻打帝国的传闻有关,坚持要审问他们。没过多久,老人被拷打致 死,男孩则受了重伤。老长官为他们的遭遇感到惋惜,但乔尔对这样的审讯 不以为然, 他相信只有疼痛才能使真相浮出水面。

老长官经历了没有结局的伦理事件。在老人和小孩被拷打之后,老长官 猛烈地觉察到自己间接参与其中的共谋性。当意识到可能发生了惨剧时,他 不自觉地为自己辩护:

后来人们声称从粮仓听到了尖叫声,但我什么也没听到。那天晚上 的每一刻, 当我开始我的工作时, 我都知道可能发生的事情, 我的耳朵 甚至会听到人类痛苦的音调。但是粮仓是一座巨大的建筑,门很重,窗 户很小。它位于南区的屠宰场和磨坊之外。曾经是前哨、然后是边境的 堡垒,现在变成了一个农业定居点,一个拥有三千人的城镇,生活的喧 嚣,这些灵魂在温暖的夏夜发出的喧嚣,并不会因为某处有人在哭泣停 止。(在某个时候,我开始为自己的理由辩护。)(9)1

但道德感依旧引导老长官去了解真相。他打着灯走进了谷仓,看到了被 折磨后虚弱无力的男孩。他想到: "我感到我的心变沉重了。我从未希望被 牵扯进这种事情。它将在何处停止,我不知道"(12-13)。自此,老长官的 良知开始在他的精神生活中占据上风。他照顾了一个看不见的瘸腿女孩。她 的父亲死于拷打, 流落街头时被老长官发现。后来, 老长官亲自护送这个女 孩回到了她的部落, 但在回到小镇后却被判了通敌罪, 被囚禁了起来。老长 官的行为表露了他内心博爱意愿的生发。他听见了犯人被拷打的叫喊声,这 声音不仅击打了他的良知,也击打了他对自己的认知。他意识到自己不再是 独立和自足的个体了。从自己没有听到任何声音到想要盖住耳朵,好不听见 任何暴力的声响,他内心的自我防护罩已经被击溃,他不能再将自己隔绝在 他人的苦难之外。2

库切让老长官去审视自己生活的共谋性,突破帝国/野蛮的二元对立。老

¹ 本文有关《等待野蛮人》的引文均来自 J. M. Coetzee, Waiting for the Barbarians (New York: Penguin Books, 1999)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。凡未特殊注明,引文均 出自笔者拙译。

² 参见 Sam Durrant, Postcolonial Narrative and the Work of Mourning: J.M.Coetzee, Wilson Harris, and Toni Morrison, Albany: State University of New York Press, 2004, 43.

长官对盲眼女孩的关照也已经超出了他所处的位置能够做到的极限。不过,老长官的转变停留在了伦理困惑的状态。他虽然对帝国有质疑和反思,但囿于帝国的认识体系,难以逃脱帝国历史施加于他的思想重负,更不可能摆脱他代表帝国的身份。而对盲眼女孩来说,作为帝国官员的老长官帮她洗脚实际上是令她感到恐惧的事件,是她所遭受的拷打的一种变形。后来,老长官也发现自己与乔尔并无本质差异。"我是帝国处于宽松时期的谎言,而他却是帝国在凛厉的风吹起时的真相"(181)。

在帝国偏执猜疑的思想形态中,老长官以法律为行事审判的标准。他却无奈地觉察到帝国的法律仅仅出于维护帝国的利益。当面对弱势者的"错误"时,法律就成为了欺压的工具。因此,老长官总会在他做出不公正的审判后良心不安,并感到羞耻。老长官是一个无力的主体。他处于帝国历史迷宫的中心,不会找到指引他取得根本性伦理转变的方向。尽管他冒着风险把官眼女孩送回了部落,但他仍然属于帝国。他不能对自己陷入的困境以及这个自己共同参与其中的,针对野蛮人的阴谋发表权威的意见。由此也可看出老长官在面对他异性事物时理解力上的缺失。这部作品展现的不是已经获得的知识,而是想要去获得知识的意图;展现的不是理解的结果,而是理解的过程。到最后,老长官也没有得到任何对于一切确定的解释。「在小说结尾,他失落地想到,"像现在的其他事情一样,我觉得很愚蠢,就像一个早已迷路的人却还要沿着一条无路可走的路走下去"(207)。

小镇的居民是被帝国的敌对意识所奴役的去主体性的群体。一开始,从帝国中心传来了关于野蛮人开始攻击的传闻。经过一些小事件的发酵后,帝国决定在战争开始之前采取防备性的措施。这种集体不安的情绪很快在普通人的身上变成了偏执的幻想: "没有一个住在边境的女人没有想过一个黑色皮肤的野蛮人从床底下抓住她的脚踝,没有一个男人没有想过野蛮人会在他的家里捣乱,打碎盘子,烧毁窗帘,强奸他的女儿而不受到惊吓"(14)。在乔尔抓捕了一些并不能被证明为要对帝国展开突袭的野蛮人之后,民众的狂欢达到了极点。他们在广场上喊叫着,争抢武器去殴打这个被塑造出来的敌人。在出发征讨野蛮人的部队迟迟未凯旋归来时,他们只能费力地讨好留守在城里的士兵。最后,部队放弃留守边境,这些居民只能收拾家当,结伴逃难而去。

居民们从未思考过野蛮人是否真的会攻击他们,未在受拷打的野蛮人身上看到与他们相同的人性。他们任由帝国控制自己,又莫名地憎恶野蛮人。他们的恐惧甚至让他们放弃了家园。《等待野蛮人》展现了整体的道德沉沦。帝

¹ 参见 Mike Marais, "Waiting for the Barbarians (1980)," *Contemporary Literary Criticism*, edited by Lawrence J. Trudeau, 414 (2017), Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/H1100123398/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=0c213220, Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.

国任意性「的历史造就了大多数人的无知盲从。而小说中清醒的老长官限于帝 国的思想体系却不能做出实质性的改变,他只能被裹挟在帝国的"摇篮"之 中,等待不知何时会结束的历史。他发现,即使为野蛮人受到的拷打疾呼,自 己也无计可施,依旧迷失在历史迷宫之中。

三、沉默的身体:超越之"耻"

除了整体的道德沉沦,库切在他的小说中还持续再现沉默的身体。这是 一种不能也不愿在小说里超越苦难现实的写作旨意。库切看到了人性被暴政 和强权损害扭曲,但囿于个人的局限性而对他人的苦难保持着距离。在写作 中,身为作家的他主动取消了对他者的阐释权力,让他者处于不可接近的状 态。所以,他的作品多体现出断裂和未完成的面貌,主人公的精神状态仿佛 迟迟不能达到某种澄澈和谐的宁静。库切没有在小说里展示超越,即使人物 产生了某种类似的欲望,最后也不能实现。一方面,他在文学中书写恶与苦,毫 无保留地袒露间接共谋者的"耻";另一方面,他始终让和解的欲望悬置。他 发现以往的创作中对于超越的追寻往往会和某些未能言明的企图勾连在一 起,这些企图有时恰恰造成了文学中呈现的苦难。

作为苦难的旁观者,有忏悔意识的同谋者如何去面对被压迫群体?求助 于形而上学暗含着视角的转移,潜藏着对苦难的轻视和消解。当写作主体有 义务去表达立场却发现自身的空无和缺乏时,"耻"就会出现。在个体认知上,它 是自我认识和自我经验不符造就的情感后果,是自我的中断和自我内部的他 者性。2

"耻"不能也不应该被写作祛除。对库切来说,守住"耻",悬置也许 会到来的伦理和解是一种写作正义,这样就保存了处在历史瞬间里个人内心 的真实状态,以及对他者生命的尊重。在美学上,对于库切来说"耻"是情 境化的经历。当库切表示自己的作品对于苦难来说是无关紧要的抵抗时,意 味着作家对于其艺术失败的表述。3这样一来,库切的作品就将自身维持在 "耻"的不足形态中,以至于主体性缺失在文本中的表征就成为了静态的价值。4 这是小说在面对自身美学与伦理张力时采用的补偿性手段。小说必须失败,必 须丧失总体性和完整性,以换取伦理上的正当性。所以,库切小说里的绝对

¹ 小说中多处提到,野蛮人并不想与帝国交战,他们只想拥有安定的生活。帝国对野蛮 人的偏执幻想则是基于某种任意性的评断,而不是理性的思考。库切凭此解构了大历史叙 事的冠冕堂皇。它声称的必然性实际上只是任意性。

² 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011, 24.

³ 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press,

⁴ 参见 Timothy Bewes, The Event of Postcolonial Shame, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011, 20.

他者与人物浓重的困惑心理,不可和解与无法安慰的状态就成了库切必须去 维持的风格。他的小说不在于从历史中得到心理上的疗愈,而是在历史面前 保持不可和解,无法安慰的状态。1

在这样的情况下, 库切呈现绝对他者是试图定格流逝瞬间里的沉重躯 体,并以疏离感来转喻他们受到的伤害。他的伦理学建立在承认一个人对另 一个人的无知,承认另一个人的他异性的基础上。2他作品中那些承受不公的 弱势群体在不同的程度上均可视为极端的他者,他们不能被言语容纳,更拒 绝被小说作者"翻译"。他(它)们身体上的残缺更凸显了苦难历史的物质性。例 如,星期五若隐若现的被阉割的伤口和没有舌头的口腔; 蛮族女孩瞎了的眼 睛,走路时蹒跚的跛脚;迈克尔·K因饥饿和逃避官兵而异常消瘦的躯体; 动物因疾病而肿胀的生殖器官等。库切没有以貌似更高更合理的观念去否定 或转化这些痛苦,而是保留自我与他者的距离。他们的身体存在表明了一段 无法哀悼、无法言说的历史, 一段拒绝被翻译成文字或被语言召唤出来的物 质历史。³ 库切对于沉默的坚持是他的写作伦理选择和抛弃作家权威的体现,是 为了不对人物做任何随意或是强迫的处理,从而达到一种文学正义。

库切的小说《迈克尔·K》立足于崩裂的社会上,展现人们面对苦难和他 者的局限。迈克尔在战乱年代冒着生命危险逃离营地,以禁食和沉默拒绝接 受改造营对他的医治。在小说的第二部分里,库切加入了医疗官这个人物,并 让后者对执意禁食的迈克尔产生兴趣,试图了解他禁食的原因。作为国家机 器的一员,医疗官的持续关注反而增加了迈克尔的抵抗。医疗官对迈克尔的 理解是误读, 迈克尔成为了他眼里的"白痴"、"非人化的石头"和"能听 见神意的人物"。4面对迈克尔的执拗,他带着救赎者的面具说着国家规训的 话语, 劝迈克尔不要再禁食, 即使他知道自己并不能真正解救迈克尔。"事 实是你会默默无闻地死去,被埋在赛马场角落一个无名的洞里(……)除 了我,没人会记得你,除非你屈服,并最后张开你的嘴"(Coetzee, Life & Times 208) 5。 医疗官要求他逐渐增加胃口, 获得充足的体力的医学劝告是为 了让他回到政治话语对他的分类,从而进行体力劳动。当迈克尔宣称自己不 在这场战争中时,他十分气恼地说:"这个营地是用来改造像你这样的人,并

¹ 参见 Sam Durrant, Postcolonial Narrative and the Work of Mourning: J. M. Coetzee, Wilson Harris, and Toni Morrison, Albany: State University of New York Press, 2004, 24.

² 参见 Pieter Vermeulen, "Being True to Fact: Coetzee's Prose of the World," J. M. Coetzee and Ethics: Philosophical Perspectives on Literature, edited by Anton Leist and Peter Singer, New York: Columbia University Press, 2010, 284.

³ 参见 Sam Durrant, Postcolonial Narrative and the Work of Mourning: J. M. Coetzee, Wilson Harris, and Toni Morrison, Albany: State University of New York Press, 2004, 26.

⁴ 库切也通过一个细节暗示了医疗官对迈克尔的误解。他一直将后者称为"迈克尔斯", 这个错误的称呼直观地体现了二人的隔阂。

⁵ 本文有关《迈克尔·K》的引文凡未特殊注明,均出自笔者拙译。

让你工作的!你要学会填沙袋和挖坑,我的朋友,直到你的背折弯!如果你不配合,你就会去一个比这里更糟糕的地方!"(Coetzee, Life & Times 189)在此处,医疗官的话语和国家话语重叠,二者本质上都在功利性地对待迈克尔这样弱势和边缘化的人,肆意"改写"他们的意志。因此,在迈克尔的顽抗面前,医疗官带有愤怒的语气说道:"我们都翻过边沿掉进了历史的大锅里:只有你,追随你的白痴之光,在一个孤儿院里等待着你的时代(谁会把那儿看成一个藏身之地?)(……)"(Coetzee, Life & Times, 207);"他像一块石头,一块鹅卵石,从时间伊始就安静地躺在地上,想着自己的事(……)对它周围几乎一无所知,包裹在自己和自己的内部生活之中(……)"(Coetzee, Life & Times 185)。这些话语显示出医疗官站在了压迫者的一方,他不把迈克尔看作是实在的人,而是给当局的群体归类造成麻烦的"白痴"。

当发现自己被战争变成了"囚犯"时,医疗官又将迈克尔当作追随神意的不凡之人,开始向往迈克尔的野外生活。他幻想自己追随迈克尔的脚步离开营地,并对他说:"你不仅是另一个病人,不仅是这场战争的另一个伤者,不仅是这个由牺牲铸成的金字塔上的另一块砖〔……〕迈克尔斯,但是你是一个伟大的逃跑艺术家,伟大的逃跑者中的一员:我向你脱帽致敬!"(Coetzee, Life & Times 228)但直到最后,他也不能肯定自己对迈克尔有充分到位的认识,仍然在心里不断呼唤迈克尔回答他的疑问。医疗官对迈克尔的矮化和神化均忽视了迈克尔本人。无论是"石头""白痴",抑或是"能与神沟通的人",医疗官的阐释是超越对象本身的误读。在他受局限的视野和知识体系中,医疗官没能意识到迈克尔这样的人会产生的批判意义。迈克尔通过破坏性的沉默展现出伦理责任和政治意图之间的矛盾。他不能被轻易地归入某些简单的叙述里,不能被简化。医疗官和他的互动显示了伦理怎样超越政治,同时避免被简单的判断、理解和并入到政治估算的过程。1

这部小说想要表达的是,面对坚硬的身体和切实的存在,国家政治的话语、宗教的话语和医学话语都不能把实在的对象笼络到固定的范围内,因为任何狭窄的视角和话语都会将受难的事实切割、简化,最后消解/升华为不同的事物。库切通过对绝对他者和受难身体的展现,强调历史事件的物质性。这种对当下和身体的"粘滞"是他小说中"耻"的呈现。他拒绝用超越性的理念来驱散眼前的苦难景象,而是用集体性共谋,以及始终面向个体的写作信念指引自己,从而形成了他小说中浓烈的"耻"之氛围。小说中伦理和解的无尽推延实际上是他自身一直面临的伦理难题,而该问题在整个西方思想史中去主体主义的哲学思潮和具体历史事件的笼罩下又获得了一种代表性。库切的小说是对"历史的身体"的接入,不仅仅是国家史和民族史、也是微观

¹ 参见 Duncan McColl Chesney, "Toward an ethics of silence: Michael K," *Criticism* 3 (2007), Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A330005662/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=d68c6 ad7, Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.

的、有血有肉、被损害与被忽视的个人史。虽然库切否定自己作为白人作家 去为受难他者代言的合法性,也不在小说里构建某种最终的真理和完全的个 人解放;但是他从自己的历史位置出发,通过文学想象担负起了历史再现的 艰难事业, 让"小说的失败"和伦理未决成为了一种文学正义, 用悬置的伦 理选择展示了人对于道德和善恶是非的坚守。

Works Cited

- Bewes, Timothy. The Event of Postcolonial Shame. Princeton: Princeton UP, 2011.
- Coetzee, J. M. Doubling the Point: Essays and Interviews, edited by David Attwell. Boston: Harvard UP, 1992.
- —. Life & Times of Michael K. London: Secker & Warburg, 1983.
- —. Waiting for the Barbarians. New York: Penguin Books, 1999.
- Chesney, Duncan McColl. "Toward an ethics of silence: Michael K." Criticism 3 (2007). Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A330005662/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=d68c6ad7. Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.
- Durrant, Sam. Postcolonial Narrative and the Work of Mourning: J. M. Coetzee, Wilson Harris, and Toni Morrison. Albany: State U of New York P, 2004.
- Gordimer, Nadine. "The Idea of Gardening." Contemporary Literary Criticism, edited by Daniel G. Marowski and Jean C. Stine, 33 (1985). Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/ H1420001763/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=96ce1c54. Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.
- 金怀梅: "库切作品中的素食伦理意蕴", 《外国文学研究》2(2020): 110-120。
- [Jin Huaimei. "The Implications of Vegetarian Ethics in J. M. Coetzee's Works." Foreign Literature Studies 2 (2020): 110-120.]
- 蒋晖: "'耻'的哀悼: 大屠杀叙事与后殖民写作的伦理转向——从《迈克尔·K 的生活 和时代》说起",《上海师范大学学报(哲学社会科学版)》2(2021):74-83。
- [Jiang Hui. "Narratives of Holocaust and Ethical Turn in Postcolonial Literature." Journal of Shanghai Normal University (Philosophy & Social Sciences Edition) 2 (2021): 74-83.]
- 姜小卫: "沉默与言说: 库切小说《福》与后殖民批判", 《外国语文》2(2016): 38-45。
- [Jiang Xiaowei. "Silence and Speech: Coetzee's Foe and A Critique of the Postcolonial." Foreign Language and Literature 2 (2016): 38-45.]
- Marais, Mike. "Waiting for the Barbarians (1980)." Contemporary Literary Criticism, edited by Lawrence J. Trudeau, 414 (2017). Available at: https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/ H1100123398/GLS?u=sichuan&sid=GLS&xid=0c213220. Accessed 6 Jan. 2025.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature

- Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 聂珍钊: "伦理选择概念的两种涵义辨析", 《外国文学研究》6(2022): 15-25。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Analyzing the Implications of Ethical Selection and Ethical Choice." Foreign Literature Studies 6 (2022): 15-25.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》4(2014): 8-13。
- [-. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." Foreign Literature Studies 4 (2014): 8-13.]
- 史菊鸿: "从苏珊的'实体'问题看库切的主体观",《外国文学评论》4(2016):215-228。
- [Shi Juhong. "J. M. Coetzee's Subjective Perspective on Susan's 'Entity' Problem." Foreign Literature Review 4 (2016): 215-228.]
- Vermeulen, Pieter. "Being True to Fact: Coetzee's Prose of the World." J. M. Coetzee and Ethics: Philosophical Perspectives on Literature, edited by Anton Leist and Peter Singer. New York: Columbia UP, 2010. 269-289.
- 王妮、向天渊: "库切小说中的'属下'形象——后殖民理论视域下的一种阐释", 《当 代外国文学》3(2017):149-156。
- [Wang Ni and Xiang Tianyuan. "The Image of the Subaltern in Coetzee'S Novel: From the Perspective of Post—colonial Theory." Contemporary Foreign Literature 3 (2017): 149-156.]
- 张德明: "从《福》看后殖民文学的表述困境",《当代外国文学》4(2010):66-74。
- [Zhang Deming. "The Dilemma of Postcolonial Representation in Foe." Contemporary Foreign Literature 4 (2010): 66-74.]

《有趣的自述》中埃奎亚诺多重选择主题下的种族伦理内涵

The Racial Ethical Implications of Equiano's Multiple Choices in *The Interesting Narrative*

梁小梅(Liang Xiaomei)

内容摘要: 在《有趣的自述》中,埃奎亚诺做出三重关键伦理选择: 与白人海员团结一致以共同应对海上危险; 作为英国战士参与英法海战; 通过勤勉工作而非逃跑的方式获得自由。埃奎亚诺为获得个人自由做出的一系列选择由当时的政治文化因素引发。过度接受白人优越而黑人低劣的殖民伦理规训是左右他做出这些伦理选择的根本原因。他的三次选择,表面上是其通往自由的关键节点,实际上却在无形中强化并维护了殖民伦理秩序的合法性。

关键词:《有趣的自述》;埃奎亚诺;黑人水手;种族伦理内涵;伦理选择 作者介绍:梁小梅,东北师范大学外国语学院博士生,主要研究方向为流散 文学。

Title: The Racial Ethical Implications of Equiano's Multiple Choices in *The Interesting Narrative*

Abstract: In *The Interesting Narrative*, Equiano makes three pivotal ethical choices: forging solidarity with white sailors to collectively confront maritime dangers; serving as a British warrior in the Anglo-French naval battles; and securing his freedom through diligent labor rather than escape. These decisions, shaped by the political and cultural forces of the time, reflect the profound influence of colonial ethical discipline, which upheld white superiority and Black inferiority. This internalized colonial ethic fundamentally informed Equiano's decision-making. While these choices appear as critical milestones on his journey to freedom, they inadvertently reinforce and legitimize the colonial ethical order.

Keywords: The Interesting Narrative; Equiano; black sailor; racial ethical implications; ethical choice

Author: Liang Xiaomei is Ph.D. candidate at the School of Foreign Languages, Northeast Normal University (Changchun 130024, China). Her research focuses on diasporic literature (Email: liangxm075@nenu.edu.cn).

埃奎亚诺(Olaudah Equiano)的《有趣的自述》(The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano, or Gustavus Vassa, the African. Written by Himself, 1789)以鼎盛时期的跨大西洋奴隶贸易为背景,讲述了黑人奴隶埃奎亚诺在争 取自由的历程中进行伦理选择的故事。黑奴流散者埃奎亚诺做出对白人言听计 从的伦理选择映射了黑人奴隶在追寻自由时对白人殖民伦理标准的内化。伦理 环境就是文学产生和存在的历史条件,也是理解文学作品中人物进行伦理选择 的关键。1埃奎亚诺的《有趣的自述》创作与发行正值英国废奴运动的高涨时期。 受孟德斯鸠等启蒙思想家的影响,越来越多的人开始反思奴隶贸易的道德正当 性,其中威廉·威尔伯福斯(William Wilberforce)和格兰维尔·夏普(Granville Sharp)等人积极推动废奴运动。彼时,越来越多的废奴作品接连问世,黑奴 们也通过书写悲惨经历以控诉奴隶制的不公。这一政治伦理环境为解读埃奎亚 诺做出的伦理选择提供了必要依据。

研究者多莉(Laura Doyle)高度赞扬这部自述:埃奎亚诺"隐晦地逆转 了贝恩和笛福的操作方式。在这部作品中, 非洲奴隶的故事为英格兰-大西 洋作家进入历史提供了切入点"(184)²。国外学术界对《有趣的自述》的研 究主要集中在埃奎亚诺的文化身份问题上,例如,杰拉尔丁·墨菲(Geraldine Murphy) 将埃奎亚诺称为"持不同意见的殖民主义"(553)的"意外旅行 者"(551); 而路易斯(Louis Rolingher)则主张埃奎亚诺具有多重身份—— 英国人、伊博人、非洲人以及这些身份包含的其他身份。3 然而,现有研究忽 视了埃奎亚诺多重伦理身份背后的伦理选择及其动因。埃奎亚诺在通往自由 的关键节点上所做的伦理选择暗含白人对黑人奴隶的殖民伦理规训。在自述 中,面对海上突发灾难,身为海员的埃奎亚诺做出与白人互相协助的伦理选 择。这是埃奎亚诺生本能作用下理性选择的结果。在英法战争中,海员埃奎 亚诺以英国人身份与受爱国主义驱使、暂时搁置种族歧视的英国白人,共同 投身于保卫英国国家利益的事业,形成超越种族界限的海上战争联盟。随着 战争的结束,白人奴隶主回归殖民伦理,误以为通过为英国赢得战争便可获 得自由的埃奎亚诺被再次贩卖,导致跨种族战争联盟的错位与瓦解。在下一 任主人金先生身边为奴时,埃奎亚诺面临是否要逃跑的伦理选择,最终他选 择通过努力工作获得自由。埃奎亚诺做出的三重关键伦理选择,究其本质是 他内化了白人殖民文化的伦理标准,通过顺从殖民伦理秩序与勤奋工作来实 现自由的愿望。

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

外文引文均出自笔者译。

参见 Louise Rolingher, "A Metaphor for Freedom: Olaudah Equiano and Slavery in Africa," Canadian Journal of African Studies 1 (2004): 88-122.

一、海员的生存伦理

在《有趣的自述》中,埃奎亚诺探讨了面对海洋灾难,黑人奴隶如何 生存以及为何选择与白人水手团结一致等问题。在海上这一特殊的伦理环境 中,白人水手的伦理地位与黑人奴隶埃奎亚诺近乎相同。船上所有的水手面 对海上危险时,只有跨越种族界限,遵守着同命运共患难的生存伦理才能得 以幸存。

《有趣的自述》中,与陆地不同的海上伦理环境是黑人奴隶与白人水手选择遵守海上生存伦理的直接原因。文学伦理学批评强调分析作品需要回到历史的伦理现场,以揭示影响人物命运的伦理因素。¹正是在海上这一特殊伦理环境,自述中人物的伦理选择受到影响。波塞特(W. Jeffrey Bolster)指出"航海为黑人和白人工人带来了截然不同的地位和特权。白人海员在白人社会中是最边缘化的人群之一,而黑人海员却能够获得大多数奴隶无法享有的特权、见识和财富"(36)。当埃奎亚诺作为一位海员在船上生活时,埃奎亚诺描述道: "我现在的境况较之前好多了,我可以躺在帆布上,有充足、可口的食物饮品,船上的人在差遣我时都很随和,与我之前见过的白人完全不同"(32-33)²。

在18世纪末的英国社会这一背景下,从事海员工作的白人与黑人水手的地位相近已是不争的事实。1795年6月16日,柯勒律治(Samuel Taylor Coleridge)在英国三大奴隶贸易港口之一的布里斯托码头的一家咖啡屋内发表关于废除奴隶贸易的演讲。尽管柯勒律治此番演讲的目的是废奴,但其更为关注奴隶贸易为英国下层人民带来的痛苦。他以白人水手作为英国劳苦大众的代表,对当时吸纳白人船员的政策与方法和白人船员的艰苦环境进行了详细的描述并加以道德谴责。3另外,在船上的白人水手还面临着情境性的"奴役"(situational "slavery")。对此,18世纪末曾有一位叫威廉•雷(William Ray)的纽约人曾感叹道:

一些奴隶可能欢呼独立 或在歌唱监狱里的自由 他比我们更有礼貌

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

² 本文有关埃奎亚诺的《有趣的自述》的引文均来自 Equiano, Olaudah, *The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano, Or Gustavus Vassa, The African* (London: Dodo Press, 2007)。以下引文仅标出页码,不再一一说明。

³ 参见 Lewis Patton and Peter Mann eds., *The Collected Works of Samule Coleridge*, London: Princeton University Press, 1971, 231-252.

因为我们所有人都被束缚在海上。(Bolster 70)

1815年以前,白人水手常常被和黑人奴隶一视同仁对待。水手们像商品 一样被商船船长们随意交易,其中一些"麻烦制造者"极有可能被发配到英 国海军。波塞特指出:"海军部法典并不是唯一将海员单独列为与奴隶类似 的特殊待遇的法律。从马萨诸塞州到巴巴多斯的地方法律都试图确保海上劳 动力的定期和可控制的供应,并加强水手对船长的从属地位。有关海员的法 规与针对奴隶的法规非常一致"(73)。埃奎亚诺就曾目睹"我们获准到甲 板上时,见到他们在前桅旁前用一条粗大的绳子无情地抽打一个白种男人,后 来他就死了。他们把他扔在一边儿,就像处置畜生似的"(26)。足以见得,当 时的法律法规完全无视白人水手的伦理诉求,并将他们贬低到与黑人奴隶相 同的伦理地位。同时期著名思想家塞米尔约翰逊(Samuel Johnson)指出水手 的艰辛:

商船水手的生活是极其艰难的。水手们不得不忍受狭窄、压抑的居 住环境,以及通常既腐烂又稀少的"食物"。他们经常遭受毁灭性的疾 病、致残的事故、船只失事和过早死亡的威胁。他们还面临来自军官的 严酷甚至致命的纪律处罚。而他们为这些冒着生命危险的劳动所得却微 乎其微,因为和平时期的工资低廉,且支付中欺诈行为频繁。(Rediker 258)

船上的生存危机将水手们的命运紧密相连,迫使他们遵守共命运、同患 难、团结互助的生存伦理。弗洛伊德指出的生本能,即"人是自然选择的结果,恐 惧和求生出于人的本能"(王先霈 王又平186)。但是,在同一艘船上的海 员的生命被捆绑在一起,面对海上灾难,即使是"生本能"发挥作用,任何 人也无法独善其身。生存伦理是埃奎亚诺等海员面对海上灾难,在"生本能"这 一原始本能基础之上理性选择的结果。因此,在面对大海的严酷考验时,海 员们无论种族, 必须跨越身份和种族界限, 以遵守团结互助的生存伦理来共 同应对威胁。埃奎亚诺在他的自述中描述了在西印度群岛遭遇极端恶劣天气 和怒海狂波时的险境 1 等海上经历。要在极端的海上环境中生存,只有跨越种 族的合作与团结才是解决之道。

在艰难的海上环境中,不同种族的海员选择跨越种族壁垒,遵守生存伦 理。在"那慕尔号"上,埃奎亚诺结识了美国土著人理查德•贝克。两人变 得形影不离,埃奎亚诺这样描述贝克: "我上船没多久他就待我好过别人,特 别关照我,因此我也非常喜欢他。后来我们变得形影不离,两年内他不知帮

参见 Olaudah Equiano, The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano, Or Gustavus Vassa, The African, London: Dodo Press, 2007, 85.

了我多少忙,一直陪着我,还处处提点我。虽然这个好小伙有不少奴隶,但我俩还在船上吃了不少苦头,我俩依偎在对方的怀中,挨过了很多个痛苦的夜晚"(34)。

除了好兄弟贝克,负责船长起居饮食的丹尼尔·奎恩同样如此。奎恩教埃奎亚诺剃须、打理头发,读《圣经》,还为"我讲解许多理解不了的篇章"(58)。埃奎亚诺将传授自己技能的奎恩视若自己的父亲,并像对待自己的父亲一样对待他。贝克对埃奎亚诺的特殊关照,以及埃奎亚诺对贝克的感激与喜爱,构成了以友谊为核心的生存伦理。而奎恩不仅在物质上支持埃奎亚诺,更在精神上为他传授知识,成为其生活的榜样,弥补了他生命中缺失的"父爱"。埃奎亚诺与奎恩的相处,体现了以家庭关系为中心的生存伦理。他们与埃奎亚诺之间的深厚情感充分展现了生命的追求和对彼此生存的需要,这种需求和追求让他们超越了种族障碍,使得他们能够共同面对海上的孤独与艰难。

在《有趣的自述》中,埃奎亚诺等海员能成功构建跨种族海上战争联盟,除了不同种族的水手们面对长期突如其来的危险不得不遵守的生存伦理外,还有黑人奴隶水手已将自己视为英国臣民的一员这一因素。当埃奎亚诺等黑人水手面对来自法国战舰的进攻时,他们在生死一瞬间感受到生存伦理和爱国主义伦理的合力。埃奎亚诺等黑人水手面对法国的进攻,即刻由英国商船上普通的水手变身为与白人水手同一身份的英国保家卫国的战士。他们吴越同舟,共同为英国而战。

二、黑奴战士的爱国伦理意识

埃奎亚诺代表了数以万计在英法七年战争中为英国作战的黑人奴隶。英国通过利用黑人奴隶追求自由的伦理诉求,引导埃奎亚诺等人参与战争。《有趣的自述》展现了作为英国士兵的埃奎亚诺,忠于英国,承担起保家卫国的伦理责任。尽管无法获知埃奎亚诺的英国国民身份是否得到官方的承认,但通过埃奎亚诺在海战中为英国赴汤蹈火的表现可以看出,埃奎亚诺本人已经认定自己具有英国国民的伦理身份。他与其他士兵共同为英国而战,在英法战争发生前,进行时和结束后表现出身为一位英国人的民族自豪感。

埃奎亚诺之所以做出在英法战争中维护英国利益的伦理选择的原因有二: 一是埃奎亚诺当时效忠于他的主人帕斯卡,后者在战争期间被任命为战舰那 慕尔号的第六中尉。《有趣的自述》明确指出,埃奎亚诺在"1757至1762年 间跟随帕斯卡"(张陟231),正值英法战争的关键时期。在这种背景下,埃 奎亚诺作为一名奴隶,参与战争并非出于自愿选择,而是由于与主人之间的 隶属关系。他为英国效力并非主动的民族认同,而是他作为奴隶的身份的必 然结果。二是埃奎亚诺在战争中表现的爱国之情源于他对自由的期望。早于《邓 莫尔宣言》(Lord Dunmore's Proclamation, 1775)之前,欧洲白人统治者往往 通过口头许诺自由,诱使黑人奴隶为他们在战争中厮杀。 埃奎亚诺也正是被 这样的承诺所误导,误将英国的胜利与他自身的解放画上等号,并时刻憧憬 着战争胜利后获得自由的美好未来。

埃奎亚诺在整个战争期间持有的"英国人"身份表征了黑人奴隶对英国 的爱国伦理意识。首先,埃奎亚诺因为能被英国允许参与英法海战表现出激 动的心情;在战争期间,"英国战士"埃奎亚诺宁可牺牲自己也要完成任务; 在战争结束后,对英国的胜利感到无比欣慰。埃奎亚诺作为英国士兵承担起 保家卫国的伦理责任。尽管无法确切得知他的英国国民身份是否得到了官方 承认,但从他在海战中为英国奋不顾身的表现来看,埃奎亚诺已自我认同为 拥有英国国民伦理身份的人。他与其他士兵并肩作战, 在英法战争之前、期 间及其结束后,展现出作为一名英国人的强烈民族自豪感。

在《有趣的自述》的第四章中,埃奎亚诺为读者交代了自述发生的历史 背景, "当我来到斯皮特黑德 (Spithead) 时, 我发现我们将与一支大型舰队 前往地中海。舰队已经准备好出海,我们只等候海军司令的到来。不久他就 上了船。大约在1759年春初,我们起锚出发,驶向地中海〔……〕"(47)。据 此可以推断,埃奎亚诺亲历了1756-1763年间的英法战争。在该自述的第三 章与第四章,埃奎亚诺详细呈现三次规模庞大的战役,即"围攻法属加拿大 的路易斯堡战役、在葡萄牙海岸截击法军军舰的战斗以及在法国基伯龙港附 近的海战"(张陟 232)。

首先,埃奎亚诺对即将参与的海战表现出积极且热切的态度。1759年 初春,"那慕尔号"当时正在斯匹德角停泊,准备迎接海军副将波斯考文 (Boscawen),共同前往路易斯堡的远征。波斯考文的到来被埃奎亚诺如此 描述:"这位勇敢的海军副将的旗帜被悬挂在船上,蓝色的旗帜在主桅上。为 了这次远征,有一支由各种各样的战士组成的强大舰队,我希望很快就能有 机会参加一场海战"(40-41)。根据埃奎亚诺对波斯考文副将到来的盛况描 述可以看出,他对参加英法海战表现出了极度的亢奋和渴望。勇敢的海军副 将形象,船上高高悬挂的蓝色旗帜等景观无疑激发了埃奎亚诺的爱国情怀和 战斗热情。埃奎亚诺的热情和决心彰显了他已决定为英国的国家利益和胜利 而全力以赴。

在海战中,埃奎亚诺树立了忠于英国,英勇作战与无私奉献的道德形象。在 1759年的拉各斯湾第二场海战中,埃奎亚诺亲眼目睹了战友在激烈战斗中惨 烈牺牲。面对"被撕成碎片,当即毙命"的无数战友,埃奎亚诺在关键时刻 依然坚守岗位,负责"为靠近船尾的枪支运送火药"(51),无畏生死,迅 速完成任务。值得注意的是, 在埃奎亚诺关于此次海战的描述中, 他一直使 用"我们"(we)这一字眼,"我们"这一词该部分中出现了将近30次。在

¹ 参见 Ira Berlin and Ronald Hoffman, Slavery and Freedom in the Age of the American Revolution, Charlottesville: University of Virginia, 1983, 233.

描述海战的残忍性时,埃奎亚诺将不同种族的战友都称之为"同伴"并多次 使用这一词语。不管是埃奎亚诺对"我们"还是"同伴"等词的使用,都无 疑模糊了黑人与白人之间的肤色和种族的界限。同时如此所做也拉近了黑人 叙述者与白人读者之间的距离。人物的伦理身份还包括"以集体和社会关系 为基础的身份"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学导论》 263)。跨种族战争联盟因 战争将黑人斗士与白人战士凝聚在一起。在此期间,埃奎亚诺将自己的生死 置于一旁,以"英国人"的伦理身份为英国抛头颅、洒热血,积极对抗法国,并 贏得战争。

英法战争的结束不仅标志着埃奎亚诺爱国主义情感的顶点,更使他对英 国的文化伦理认同达到了前所未有的高度。在1762年11月,"那会儿我们 听闻许多有关和平的谈论"(58)。埃奎亚诺使用了"喜出望外"、"我们 欢呼着"、"以各种各样表现喜悦的方式庆祝"和"船上的每个角落充满欢 笑"(58)等洋溢着喜悦的词汇。诚如里根(Shaun Regan)所言,这本自述"并 没有批判支撑着英国商业帝国的殖民奴隶制,而是在语气上带有必胜主义色 彩,为英国在全球范围内战胜法国而取得的胜利而欢欣鼓舞",同时更为"重 要的是,正是在这些年里,埃奎亚诺形成了一种爱国的'英国人'或英国人的 认同感"(240)。

英国获得胜利原本可被视为凝聚跨种族联盟的契机,然而,英国白人 持有的白人种族优越而黑人种族低劣的伦理观念严重阻碍战争联盟的有效运 作。英法战争以英国作为战胜方宣告结束,与埃奎亚诺一样曾为英国冒着枪 林弹雨、浴血奋战的爱国战士们欢呼雀跃。埃奎亚诺回忆道: "12 月初,我 们奉命前往伦敦领报酬,这令我们喜出望外。我们欢呼着,以各种各样表现 喜悦的方式庆祝。船上的每个角落充满欢笑。在这种场合下,我也有属于自 己的快乐(……)"(58)。然而,在喜悦的下一刻,埃奎亚诺与英国白人 建构的战争联盟因其主人对埃奎亚诺的再次转卖直接发生"错位"。埃奎亚 诺的主人以"我想离开他"(59)为借口,将埃奎亚诺视作物品随手卖给詹 姆斯•多伦船长。尽管当时的埃奎亚诺奋起反抗并且做出"我是自由的,依 照法律他不能这样对我"(59)的伦理批判。主人依旧将埃奎亚诺转卖给多 伦船长的行为暗示了埃奎亚诺寄希望于海上战争联盟以摆脱自己奴隶身份伦 理愿景的破灭。在战争中立下汗马功劳的埃奎亚诺本以为自己会因此获得自 由且终结奴隶的伦理身份,然而这只是他单方面的一厢情愿,最终被转手卖 于下一位主人, "我的主人与船长爽快成交后, 走出船舱, 他和随行的人乘 小艇离去。我用心痛的眼神尽力目送直到他们消失在我的视野范围之外。我 倒在甲板上, 悲伤, 痛苦, 内心几欲裂开"(61)。

三、埃奎亚诺的种族伦理规训

《有趣的自述》通过展现埃奎亚诺为获得自由所做的伦理选择意在传播

和巩固白人的殖民伦理规训。文学"通过一系列道德事例和榜样达到教诲、奖 励和惩戒的目的"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》2)。欧洲殖民者通过 利用《有趣的自述》中埃奎亚诺面对自由做出的伦理选择,以实现其对其他 黑人奴隶进行殖民伦理规训的目的:这本自述的出版对数以万计的非洲流散 同胞进行道德教诲, 使他们顺从殖民伦理秩序, 接受黑奴作为从属群体的伦 理地位。主人金先生反复向埃奎亚诺灌输"黑奴应当诚实"的伦理教诲。在 埃奎亚诺面临逃跑机会时,他对自由的强烈渴望与被植入的伦理观念产生冲 突。通过强调诚实与忠诚,主人成功将白人的道德框架植入到埃奎亚诺的行 为与思想之中。在主人反复的考验下,埃奎亚诺表现出对白人伦理的顺从,尽 管其内心对自由的渴望仍在挣扎。他的伦理选择体现了白人文化对黑奴道德 成长的期待,最终使他成为殖民伦理规训的道德典范。

美国历史学家乔治·拉威克 (George P. Rawick) 指出, "鞭打不仅是一 种惩罚手段,也是让奴隶们意识到他们身份的有意识工具;这是一种社会控 制的重要形式,特别是在我们成功防止奴隶逃跑的情况下"(59)。与大多 数奴隶主通过身体惩罚控制黑人奴隶不同,埃奎亚诺的主人金先生采取了另 一种规训方式。他反复强调"诚实",使这一道德观念融于埃奎亚诺的思想 他在面临追求自由的机会时,陷入忠诚与逃跑之间的伦理困境。金先生对埃 奎亚诺进行道德训诫不仅是为了维持奴隶对主人的顺从, 也是通过道德手段 进一步加强对黑奴思想的控制。

埃奎亚诺的伦理困境体现在两方面: 一是一直以来寻找逃跑机会追求自 由的强烈愿望,二是对主人金先生诚实并尊从主人的决定。逃跑可以被视为 一种本能的、求生的反应。逃跑本质上是追求生存和自由,是一种自由意志 驱动的行为。黑奴为了摆脱奴隶主的压迫,选择用最快、最直接的方式来获 得自由,符合兽性因子中的自我保护和求生冲动。而黑奴选择在漫长的时间 里通过积累金钱的方式赎买自由,则由人性因子主导。黑奴通过理性思考权 衡利弊,并试图在种族伦理秩序认可的范围内获得自由。在埃奎亚诺的前任 船长以其打算逃跑为由,将埃奎亚诺追求自由幻想的火苗随即掐灭,并把他 卖给另一个奴隶主的痛苦事实之后。面对这样的前车之鉴,埃奎亚诺是否要 坚守对主人的诚信,使他内心的折磨和伦理道德的拷问。

埃奎亚诺作为主人花钱购买来的奴隶,尤其是金先生对埃奎亚诺的倾心 栽培下,理应诚实守信,报答主人。然而,作为一个被在非洲绑架贩卖到陌 生白人世界的黑人来说,不想从主人的手里逃脱,重获自由之身是不可能的。在 埃奎亚诺成为奴隶的每一分每一秒都想通过逃跑获得自由,用他自己的话说 就是"我脑海里想的全是自由,每时每刻都在琢磨怎么才能得到自由"(84)。埃 奎亚诺的伦理困境是由他的伦理悖论造成的。具体来说,在获得自由的选择 上,埃奎亚诺对主人的忠心耿耿和在合适机会下逃跑,选择这两种的任何一

个,就意味着对另外一种产生伤害,这使埃奎亚诺深深陷入到伦理悖论中。在这种情况下,埃奎亚诺做出如下打算,"如果不受虐待,我并不打算逃跑。假如一旦出现这种情况,如果我会开船,我就能用单轨船逃跑。我们的单轨船是西印度群岛速度最快的。有很多人想加入我。如果我必须做这样的尝试,我计划逃到英国"(87)。

这两种道德力量的极力冲撞具体表现在埃奎亚诺提到的那次"绝佳"的 逃跑机会:

有一次我们在瓜德罗普岛,有一支庞大的商船队要驶往法兰西,但水手不够数。他们开出每人15到20磅的酬劳跑这趟船。他们挺看重我的,想让我一道去,如果我愿意去,他们发誓会保护我。船队第二天启程,我敢肯定那时我将安全抵达欧洲。但是,我家老爷很善良,我不会离开他。而且谨记那句老话,"做人以诚信为本",因此我忍痛没有和他们同去。(87)

主人金先生怀疑埃奎亚诺有逃跑的想法时,当面质问埃奎亚诺,埃奎亚诺不仅解释自己没有逃走的必要性,还敢于质问同行的船长是否发现他有一丝逃跑的迹象。"给人物设置伦理困境是为了对人物进行道德考验"(徐彬68)。《有趣的自述》中埃奎亚诺向读者展示了几次自己所面对的道德考验。前任船长发现埃奎亚诺刚刚燃起渴望自由的火苗后,冷酷绝情地将他卖给下一位主人,他心中痛苦万分,哀叹"我是船上的一个囚犯,如今已毫无希望了!我以难以形容的悲伤,双眼游离在陆地上,不知道要做什么,绝望地不知道要如何自救"(64)。尽管如此,埃奎亚诺放弃可以逃跑的机会,恪守道德底线,成功通过主人金先生设置的道德考验。在通过考验后不久,埃奎亚诺得到了自己渴望已久的自由。

经受了伦理困境和道德考验的埃奎亚诺,成为了白人文化中的美德典范,为当时受困于奴隶制、渴望自由的黑奴们树立了"道德劝善"的榜样。伦理选择是对人的一种道德要求,不仅要求人克制自然意志,加强道德修养,而且也要求人在伦理选择过程中获取教诲,提高道德认知水准和正确选择的能力。「作为"毫无疑问在两个世纪中激励了成千上万的非洲流散同胞"(金莉71)的跨大西洋黑奴流散自述,《有趣的自述》通过描述埃奎亚诺做出伦理选择的经历向其他黑人奴隶灌输白人殖民伦理教诲。在从奴役之躯变为自由之身的艰难历程中,埃奎亚诺始终强调"诚实是上上策"(87)。换句话说,埃奎亚诺通过《有趣的自述》对黑人传达了白人文化伦理中的道德劝解,并通过自己的经历证明,即使在最严峻的困境中,也需要坚持白人所倡导的伦理原则才能获得自由。

《有趣的自述》作为跨大西洋黑奴流散文学中的代表作,被康斯坦佐

¹ 参见 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。

(Angelo Costanzo) 誉为"19世纪奴隶叙事的原型"(6)。该作品揭示了埃 奎亚诺在追求自由的伦理选择过程中, 遵循并内化白人的殖民伦理, 且成为 了白人殖民文化中的"道德典范"。他的经历和自述虽然展示了个人在追求 自由的道路上的坚韧与毅力,但也反映了他对殖民统治道德框架的接受和认 同。埃奎亚诺的故事在某种程度上强化了殖民统治者的道德观念,表明即使 在反抗压迫的过程中,受压迫者也可能被迫采用压迫者的价值体系,从而无 意维持了这种不公平的权力结构。埃奎亚诺通过他的伦理选择,展示了殖民 伦理如何塑造并控制被殖民者的思想和行为, 使他们在追求自由的过程中, 不 自觉地成为维持殖民体系的一部分。

Works Cited

- Bolster, W. Jeffrey. Black Jacks: African American Seamen in the Age of Sail. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 1999.
- Brumwell, Stephen. Paths of Glory: The Life and Death of General James Wolfe. London: Hambledon Continuum, 2006.
- Costanzo, Angelo. Surprising Narrative: Olaudah Equiano and the Beginnings of Black Autobiography. New York: Greenwood Press, 1987.
- De Bruyn, Frans and Shaun Regan, eds. The Culture of the Seven Years' War: Empire, Identity, and the Arts in the Eighteenth-Century Atlantic World. Toronto: U of Toronto P, 2014.
- Doyle, Laura. Freedoms Empire: Race and the Rise of the Novel in Atlantic Modernity, 1640-1940. Durham: Duke UP, 2008.
- Equiano, Olaudah. The Interesting Narrative of the Life of Olaudah Equiano, Or Gustavus Vassa, The African. London: Dodo Press, 2007.
- 金莉: "西方文论关键词: 奴隶叙事", 《外国文学》4(2019): 66-77.
- [Jin Li. "Slave Narrative: A Keyword in Critical Theory." Foreign Literature 4 (2019): 66-77.]
- Linebaugh, Peter and Marcus Rediker. The Many-Headed Hydra: Sailors, Slaves, Commoners, and the Hidden History of the Revolutionary Atlantic. Boston: Beacon Press, 2000.
- Rolingher, Louis. "A Metaphor for Freedom: Olaudah Equiano and Slavery in Africa." Canadian Journal of African Studies 1 (2004): 88-122.
- Murphy, Geraldine. "Olaudah Equiano, Accidental Tourist." Eighteenth-Century Studies 4 (1994):
- Rawick, George P. From Sundown to Sunup: The Making of the Black Community. Westport: Greenwood Publishing Company, 1972.
- Rediker, Marcus. Between the Devil and the Deep Blue Sea: Merchant Seamen, Pirates and the Anglo-American Maritime World, 1700-1750. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1987.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.

- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- 徐彬编:《英国文学的伦理学批评》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Xu Bin, ed. Ethical Literary Criticism of English Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]
- 王先霈、王又平编:《文学批评术语词典》。上海:上海文艺出版社,1999年。
- [Wang Xianpei and Wang Youping, eds. *A Dictionary of Literary Criticism Terms*. Shanghai: Shanghai Literature and Art Publishing House, 1999.]
- 张陟: "奥劳达·埃奎亚诺《生平自述》中的海洋与自由",《外国文学评论》1(2021): 212-238。
- [Zhang Zhi. "The Ocean and Freedom in Olaudah Equiano's *The Interesting Narrative*." Foreign Literature Review 1 (2021): 212-238.]

见证、重构与协调:文学伦理学批评视域下 文学的共同体功能

Witness, Reconstruction and Coordination: The Community Function of Literature from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism

陈 勋 (Chen Xun)

内容摘要:在文学伦理学批评视域下,文学作为一种虚拟现实,具有三重层层递进的共同体功能:第一,提供了一个虚拟的伦理试验场,让人们通过文学去理解共同体灾变的机制;第二,通过虚拟现实,述行性地重构共同体,让人们体验个人和共同体之间的伦理关系;第三,通过虚拟现实对不同共同体之间的关系进行协调,为全球化时代处理共同体关系提供解题思路。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;共同体;见证灾变;重构秩序;协调关系作者简介:陈勋,文学博士,邵阳学院文学院讲师,主要从事比较文学与世界文学、文学伦理学研究。本文为湖南省社会科学基金"希利斯·米勒文学伦理批评理论研究"【项目批号:22YBX010】和湖南省教育厅青年项目"微型小说的阅读伦理研究"【项目批号:22B0754】的阶段性成果。

Title: Witness, Reconstruction and Coordination: The Community Function of Literature from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism

Abstract: From the perspective of literary ethics, literature as a kind of virtual reality, has three layers of progressive community functions: First, it provides us with a virtual ethical testing ground, allowing us to understand the mechanism of community disasters through literature. Secondly, literature reconstructs the community through virtual reality, allowing people to experience the ethical relationship between individuals and the community. Third, literature coordinates the relationship between different communities through virtual reality, which provides an understanding of how to deal with community relations in the era of globalization.

Keywords: ethical literary criticism; the community; witness the catastrophe; reconstruct the order; coordination relationship

Author: Chen Xun is Lecturer at Liberal Arts College of Shaoyang University

(Shaoyang 422000, China). His main research interests are Comparative Literature and World Literature, Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: chenxun2009@163.com).

在后现代主义思潮的影响下,许多带有宏大叙事特征的观念实现了一种 转型,其中就包括共同体思想。解构主义文学批评作为后现代主义思潮下的 文学批评流派,其理论主张在一定程度上继承了摒弃现代性的大叙事观念,将 知识作为一种语言游戏,从而解构了一种总体性。由于解构主义思潮的兴起,以 卢克·南希(Jean-Luc Nancy)和 J. 希利斯·米勒(J. Hillis Miller)为代表的 学者开始声讨共同体的有机/内在属性,共同体的"共同"越来越受到怀疑,学 者们更多地将目标聚焦在"差异"上,更倾向于强调共同体中个体与个体的 差异1,同时,发现个体存在与共同体之间,甚至共同体和共同体之间的关系 变得难以协调,共同体愈发呈现一种崩解状态。2面对这种境况,我们不得不 继续追问,如何看待共同体的崩解,又该如何重构共同体,而共同体中的各 种关系到底应该如何协调。在文学伦理学批评的视域下,文学作为一种用语 言构建起来的世界,让我们有机会在一种虚拟现实中去想象和试验共同体的 各类伦理秩序,通过文学可以见证共同体的崩解,也可以用文学来述行性重 构一种共同体以及通过文学对共同体的各层关系进行一种想象性协调。

一、文学对共同体灾变的虚拟性见证

对于"共同体"概念,本尼迪克特·安德森(Benedict Anderson)在《想 象的共同体: 民族主义的起源和散布》(Imagined Community: Reflections on the Origin and Spread of Nationalism, 1983) 一书中,以一种冷静中立的态度进 行了论述。安德森基于人类学精神,对"民族"进行界定,认为"它是一种 想象的政治共同体——并且,它是被想象为本质上有限的(limited),同时 也享有主权的共同体"(6)。安德森在这里指出"民族"这样一种政治共同 体,其特征之一就是即使是最小的民族,其中的成员也不可能认识大多数同 胞,因此,"所有比成员之间有着面对面接触的原始村落更大(或许连这种 村落也包括在内)的一切共同体都是想象的"(6),安德森将共同体限定在 "原始部落"这种范围之内,实质是对更大共同体的一种存疑态度。在这个 思想基础上,安德森提出了共同体崩溃的一种情形,他认为即使每一个民族 在内部存有不平等和剥削,但是"民族总是被设想为一种深刻的,平等的同 志爱"(7),也正是在这种设想下,数以百万计的人们甘愿为此而去屠杀或 者从容赴死,继而导致共同体的最后崩解,其中奥斯维辛的灾变可以说是共 同体崩解的典型事件。

¹ 参见 殷企平: "西方文论关键词: 共同体", 《外国文学》2(2016): 70-79。

² 参见 J. 希利斯·米勒:《共同体的焚毁:奥斯维辛前后的小说》,陈旭译,南京:南 京大学出版社,2019年,第5页。

奥斯维辛灾变不仅仅是一个历史事件,还是一个文化事件,伴随着奥斯 维辛的巨大灾变,在文化界,有一种倾向,认为文学无力见证此类灾变的发 生,就犹如保罗·策兰(Paul Celan)则认为的那样"没有人/出来为这证 人/作证"(转引自 唐晓渡 西川 95)。在这类极端的事件中,就像利奥塔 (Jean-François Lyotard) 认为的那样,只有被屠杀的人才能证明大屠杀的存 在,但是这些人已经不可能再开口作证,而幸存者的证言,似乎也无法通过 补足证据而被证实。¹从利奥塔到南希再到阿甘本(Giorgio Agamben),从不 同的侧面提出奥斯维辛的不可见证性,从而使得如何为共同体的崩解见证,成 为了一个难题。面对这种困境,文学作为一种用语言建构起来的虚拟现实,在 见证共同体崩解方面,却有着其独特的功能。

米勒在《共同体的焚毁:奥斯维辛前后的小说》(The Conflagration of *Community: Fiction before and after Auschwitz*, 2011) ² 中通过对托马斯•基尼利 (Thomas Keneally)、伊恩·麦克尤恩(Ian McEwan)、阿特·斯皮格曼(Art Spiegelman)以及凯尔泰斯(Imre Kertész)四位作家的小说进行解读,对文 学如何见证共同体的灾变进行了论述,"认为这些小说都试图以高贵而诚实 的方式见证大屠杀,或者至少向读者展现大屠杀的相关事实"(190)。米勒 根据四位小说家距离大屠杀的真实经历的远近,逐一解读小说的见证方式,构 建起文学作为虚拟现实见证共同体崩解的机制。另一方面,米勒以一种更为 宏观的视野,将奥斯维辛前后的小说串联起来,通过一种阅读的共同体,告 诉我们文学不仅能够见证共同体的崩解,还能够预言这种灾变并对可能的灾 变给出再预警,从而引导人们时刻警惕曾经的灾变再次来临。

如果一部文学作品有可能对奥斯维辛做出见证,那一定指的是作品的一 种以言行事的能力。众所周知,即使是最接近事实或自传色彩最浓的小说也 毫无例外会遭遇很难为奥斯维辛作证的困境,其中第一个难解之题就是"无 论以何种方式进行再现,奥斯维辛的事实都无法想象、无法言说"(米勒,《共 同体的焚毁》 221)。就像利奥塔提出的那样,只有亲眼见到毒气室的人才 有权说它的存在,并且如果要证明毒气室是用来杀人的,唯一可接受的证据 是有人死于毒气室,可是人已经死亡,就无法做出证明,因此"再现"历史 事实,尤其是灾变,是不可能实现的事情,但是通过"审美化"的文学作品 来"见证"灾变是一种可能的路径。关于文学为灾变作证,并非指的是文学 作品对于某种具体灾变的历史记录, 而是通过审美的一种表达方式给灾变的 发生找到一种更为有效的路径。而文学作为见证的有效性,与事件发生的必 然律相关联, 文学作品中的事件越契合必然律, 其见证的有效性就越高。这 一点继承了西方自亚里斯多德(Aristotle)以来的一种传统,亚里斯多德在其《诗

¹ 参见 让-弗朗索瓦•利奥塔:《异识》,周慧译,上海:上海文艺出版社,2022年, 第16页。

² 下简称为《共同体的焚毁》。

学》(Poetics)中就论述过这一观点: "诗人的职责不在于描述已发生的事 而在于描述可能发生的事,即按照或然率或必然律可能发生的事情"(39),描 述可能发生的事情,是文学作品以言行事能力的一个体现。

对于奥斯维辛灾变的那段历史,已经再也没有办法使之"在场"或者"再 现",但如聂珍钊所言"几乎所有的文学文本都是记录人类的道德经验"("Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 189)¹,因此米勒论述奥斯维辛前后的小说 给大屠杀作证,其最终目的是通过文学这种虚拟现实,记录人类在经历重大 灾变时刻的道德经验,让它们作为一种述行式的方式给读者留下言后效果,即 读者在阅读、重读这些小说时在内心发生的变化。米勒所讨论的有关大屠杀 的四部小说,由远及近对历史上的灾变做出见证。我们可以将文学的这种见 证推及其他灾变,文学作品不是再现灾变,而是见证灾变,文学"是通过语 言传达的一个人在极端环境中的极端经验,这种非常个人化的经验只能通过 语言才能得到生动表达"(陶东风 122),历史上任何其他的灾变都有可能 通过文学作品来见证。在《共同体的焚毁》中,米勒论证了文学作为一种形式,在 保留那些即将走向死亡的记忆从而抵制一种遗忘发挥了一种重要的作用。值 得一提的是, 《共同体的焚毁》一书, 不仅选择了奥斯维辛有关的小说家比 如凯尔泰斯等,通过他们论证了文学的见证功能,还通过奥斯维辛之前或者 之后的小说家,比如卡夫卡(Franz Kafka)和托尼·莫里斯(Toni Morrison) 等人的文学作品,论证了文学作品预见和预警共同体灾变的机制。正如米勒 所言,"我认为卡夫卡的作品预示了奥斯维辛,凯尔泰斯的《无命运的人生》 回应了卡夫卡"(《共同体的焚毁 7),再通过对后现代小说家莫里森的文 学作品,论证了小说对于可能性的共同体灾变的再预警,从而构建起一种文 学共同体,从而实现了文学的第一个共同体功能。

二、文学对共同体秩序的述行性重构

在西方当代共同体的语境中,有学者发现共同体并没有依据人们对它的 筹划而"发生"²,也就是说在后现代的语境下,安德森意义上的"古典共同 体"模式并没有在现实社会中建立起来。此时,通过文学这种虚拟现实,对 共同体进行一种述行性重构,对共同体秩序进行一种实验性规范,从而在这 个过程中探讨个人与共同体之间的伦理秩序,不失为一种可行的方法。

如果文学中存在着一种共同体,那么文学作品则是对这种现实共同体的 一种模仿、反映或者再现。米勒就曾幽默地指出"《荒凉山庄》就允许你将 狄更斯的整个伦敦装入你的口袋"(Charles Dickens: The World of His Novels 88),在《荒凉山庄》这部小说中,狄更斯(Charles Dickens)将伦敦市民作

¹ 外文引文为笔者译。

² 参见 让 - 吕克·南希: 《无用的共通体》,郭建玲、张建华、夏可君译,郑州:河 南大学出版社,2016年,第24页。

为一个共同体呈现在小说之中。乔治·艾略特(George Eliot)、安东尼·特 罗洛普(Anthony Trollope)等维多利亚时期小说家的作品也是基于这类共同 体观念而写成,米勒在《小说中的共同体》(Communities in Fiction)中,专 辟一章论述特罗洛普的《巴塞特郡的最后纪事》,指出其就是维多利亚共同 体的一种典型,这种典型要以一种真实的再现为衡量标准,"它必须与它所 模拟的微型真实共同体点对点地一一对应"(21),由此可见,共同体在文 学作品中得到映射,从而在文学中实现了现实社会与虚拟现实的链接。

作为对现实共同体的一种真实的回应,文学再现的是一种"可居的共同 体"(viable community),是文学记述(constative)功能的一种体现。这 种可居的共同体,在西方有着思想史基础,从费迪南·腾尼斯(Ferdinand Tönnies) 到雷蒙·威廉斯 (Raymond Williams) 再到齐格蒙德·鲍曼 (Sigismund Bowman) 等人,都曾对这一类共同体寄予希望。

滕尼斯在《共同体与社会》(Community and society, 1935)中从人类自 然的状态出发,他将共同体分为了呈现递进关系的三种,分别是血缘共同体、地 缘共同体以及精神共同体,其中"精神共同体在自身结合了前两种共同体的 特征,构成一种真正属人的、最高级的共同体类型"(87)。而这些共同体 则是以亲属关系、邻里关系以及友谊为主要关键词,在这一类的共同体中,因 为亲属关系或者是邻里关系,人们会感到最大程度的愉快和欢乐,但是"共 同体的生活是相互占有和享受,也是对共同财产的占有和享受"(滕尼斯 102)。因此,在滕尼斯的论述中,以自然血缘关系为基础的共同体,能够实 现个体的自由和集体的协同,共同体充满着一种理想倾向。

威廉斯在《关键词:文化与社会的词汇》(Keywords: A Vocabulary of Culture and Society, 1976)中,从词汇溯源的角度出发,指出"共同 体"(community)一词在 14 世纪的英语世界中就已经存在,"意指具有关 系和情感所组成的共同体"(125),并且认为该词的词源最早在拉丁语中意 指普遍和共同的意思,从这个意义上来说,组成共同体有两个基本前提,一 是要具有一种社会性的联系, 第二要有一种契合的价值观。威廉斯在阐释 "共同体"的时候还特别指出,这一词汇不像其他社会组织的词语,比如 "nation" "state"以及 "society", "共同体"一词 "似乎从来没有用负面 的内涵,并且不会被赋予明确的反对意涵或具区别性的意涵"(《关键词: 文化与社会的词汇》 27)。另外,威廉斯在《文化与社会》(Culture and Society, 1958) 一书中阐释"共同体"时,指出对于共同体这一文化观念的两 种阐释,分别是:服务的观念和团结的观念,前者主要是中产阶级所持有,后 者则是工人阶级所发展。威廉斯指出共同体的"服务的观念"经过几代人的 训练,形成一种伦理实践,这"抵制了放任主义和自我服务的实践,这是一 个重大的成就,相当有助于我们社会的和平与福利"(407),这一种解释,与 个人主义相对立,但是强调一种顺从和尊重权威,因此服务演变为一种治理。另

外一个方面,"由于把共同利益界定为真正的自我利益,由于发现个人主要是在共同体中才能得到检验,团结观念是社会潜在的真正基础"(Culture and Society 410)。鲍曼在《共同体》(Community, 2003)一书中也认为共同体一词会给人以不错的感觉,其一,共同体是一个温暖而又舒适的场所,其二是在共同体内,人们能够互相依靠对方。

同时,文学还有述行(performative)功能,因此,文学对共同体的重构,实质上是一种述行式构建模式,这种述行式的构建更能体现出文学的共同体功能。这一共同体的理念,通过乔治•巴塔耶(Georges Bataille)、莫里斯•布朗肖(Maurice Blanchot)、阿甘本以及南希等学者从不同但又或多或少一致的路径共同完成建构。¹ 而米勒在《文学作为行动》(*Literature as Conduct: Speech Acts in Henry James*, 2005)中主要借鉴南希提出的"无用的共同体"(La communauté désceuvrée)概念,将这一概念引入到文学批评中,将其命名为"无功效的共同体"(unworked community),并在《共同体的焚毁》中进行了补充论证。

这种"无功效的共同体"共同体模式,"南希认为人们不是个体而是独体,每个人与其他人具有根本性的区别。每个独体都有自己的私密从而绝不可能与其他独体相互交流"(Literature as Conduct: Speech Acts in Henry James 90)。在保留个体独特性的前提下谈论共同体,是后现代语境下的流行思潮,也就是先承认独体之间的差异,然后在这种前提下来谈论一种共同体的可能性。南希在《无用的共通体》(La communauté désceuvrée, 1986)一书中,举例说当我们试图将法语中的"共同体"一词翻译成汉语时,就会出现词语与语义的一种延异,通过这一案例,客观上对中西方文化中的"共通体"做了一个比较,这对我们理解不同文化中的共同体观念提供了直接的参考。在汉语中有很多词能够与"共同体"一样能够表示总体或者全体的概念,比如邻居之间的共同体或者利益的共同体等。南希认为人类共同体的法则是:"它只能穿越不可还原的分离来沟通(……)分离也是一直内在于每一个语言和每一个预设的'共同体'之中的"(《无用的共通体》中文序言第5页)。可以看出,即使在西方文化圈内,对于共同体的内在含义以及人们对于这个词语语义以及背后文化的理解,都可能存有差异。

南希谈论共同体,是在保留个体独特性的前提下进行,也就是先承认独体之间的差异,然后在这种前提下来谈论一种共通/共同的可能性,"南希认为人们不是个体而是独体,每个人与其他人具有根本性的区别。每个独体都有自己的私密从而绝不可能与其他独体相互交"(Miller, Literature as Conduct: Speech Acts in Henry James 90),在这种"无功效的共同体"中,"不存在主体,不存在互主性交流,不存在社会'纽带',也不存在集体意识"(米

¹ 参见 J. 希利斯·米勒: 《共同体的焚毁: 奥斯维辛前后的小说》, 陈旭译, 南京: 南京大学出版社, 2019 年, 第 18 页。

勒,《共同体的焚毁》 22),独体之间中间存有界限并互相隔离,但是正是 因为界限的存在, 使得他们又以一种"共处"的方式向外展示他们的独体。

不管是可居的共同体还是无功效的共同体,这两者都是以语言为工具创 造了文学这种虚拟现实,从而使得文学成为这种共同体的一种表达形式。如 果文学作品中再现的是可居的共同体,那么这种共同体"确保了诸如承诺、婚 誓、合同、遗嘱等施行性语言得以恰当起效"(米勒,《共同体的焚毁》 30)。由彼此完全是他者的独体所构成的共同体却不具备恰切言语行为的基 础,但是因为语言的述行性,所以缺乏有效法律基础的共同体,其语言也可 能产生言后效果。不仅如此,米勒还认为每一部文学作品,也是一个独体,它 们的特征之一就是"每个都是特别的、自成一体的、陌生的、个体的、异质 的"(《文学死了吗》51),我们经常论及的共同体,更大程度上接近于"无 功效的共同体",从这个意义上来说,对于此类共同体的讨论,对我们更具 参考意义。卡夫卡《审判》(The Trial, 1925)中的共同体呈现出一种崩溃状态,其 作品中的描述刚好对应了"无功效的共同体",其中的言语行为已经处于不 恰切状态。但是"这并不是说非功效的共同体中没有言语行为或者说其中的 言语行为无效,而是说这些言语行为缺乏任何法律制度的支撑。它们依靠忠 于自身的决心而起效,此决心也不断自我生成、自我推动"(米勒,《共同 体的焚毁》 31)。在文学伦理学批评视域下,我们会发现在人类文明的进程 中,人类通过文学语言创造了一个虚拟现实,通过语言的自动赋权,使得共 同体中非恰切言语行为产生了言后效果,在这种缺乏制度支撑的共同体中,先 进行一种伦理实验, 在这种实验中, 通过一种有异于人类自然选择的伦理选 择1, 让人们体验共同体中各个独体之间的伦理关系, 为现实中的共同体提供 了一种先验的模板,这是文学所特有的共同体功能。

三、文学对共同体关系的想象性协调

卢梭(Jean-Jacques Rousseau)、腾尼斯、威廉斯、鲍曼以及安德森等人,从 各个方面尝试对共同体之间的关系做出探讨,但是都发现构建共同体的诸多 困境。卢梭就认为,家庭这种最古老又唯一自然形成的社会²,也具备了共同 体的雏形,这个时候人的自由,产生于天性。但是当家庭中父母完成对孩子 的养育,他们之间的自然联系就解体,双方进入独立状态,于是共同体便向 着滕尼斯论述的地缘共同体甚至精神共同体发展,人与人之间的关系就处于 聚合而非结合的状态。这种情况下,可能出现这样一种境况: "在自然状态 下危及他们的生存的障碍之大,已经超过了每一个人为了在这种状态下继续 生存所能运用的力量"(卢梭 5),因此为了人类的存续,就需要改变这种

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

² 参见卢梭《社会契约论》,李平沤译,北京:商务印书馆,2011年,第5页。

自然状态。卢梭认为人类不能产生新的力量,只有联合起来,将分散的个人力量结合成一股力量,达成动机一致,行动一致才能延续人类,而这一股力量需要人类的共同协作,才能形成,于是在"社会公约"下,在一种社会公约下,共同体中的人们"以一种不稳定和不可靠的生活方式去换取一种更美好的和更可靠的生活方式,以自己可被他人战胜的力量去换取由于社会的结合而拥有的不可侵犯的权利"(5)。而以一种社会公约为基础建立起来的共同体,与其他共同体之间也往往属于一种贴合而非结合状态,因此协调共同体之间的关系是需要进一步探讨的议题。

滕尼斯认为在狭义的共同体中,人们即使有种种分离的因素,但是还保持着结合,但是当人类从自然状态走向"社会"状态,情形就变得不一样了,"他们实质并非结合在一起,而是彼此分离"(129),因而在其理论中,共同体未能完成的使命,就要交给"社会"去承担。而安德森也秉持类似的观点,认为共同体的范围存在于最小的"原始部落"这样一个单元,超过这一范围的共同体,就只能是一种想象,无法实现。威廉斯则指出实现"团结共同体"的两种困难,其一是必须在一个不行使多数权力的有效共同体中才能实现多样化,其二是怎么实现多样化的同时不造成分离,事实上,共同体的团结与分离,成为一个不断追求平衡却永远无法平衡的问题。鲍曼同样认为,共同体这样一个"甜美"的词汇,让人想起的东西都是失去但是怀念的一切,也就是这一切的甜美是人们期待的一种美好,属于一种尚未到来的"乌托邦"。鲍曼还认为"这是一个失去了的天堂,或者说是一个人们还希望找到的天堂;从某个角度来看,这绝不是一个我们栖息的天堂,绝不是那个从我们自己的经历而得知的天堂"(5)。而南希和阿甘本等人也继承了这一思路,使得共同体之间的关系协调问题面临理论上的困境。

对文学作品这种虚拟现实中的共同体关系进行一种想象性协调,米勒做出了独特的贡献。米勒提出一种复数形式的共同体概念。米勒通过对复数形式共同体的研究,对共同体之间的关系进行一种想象性协调。米勒指出华莱士•史蒂文斯(Wallace Stevens)和南希理论中的共同体,分别是第一种和第二种共同体的典型,并且已经发现了第一种模式类似于一种"乌托邦"的想象,并且暗含着第二类共同体的基因,所以他在吸收南希和史蒂文斯两人观念的基础上,最终提出了自己的第三种共同体模式,也就是共同体的复数形式,"这第三种共同体模式,则将一个既有社会视为诸多共同体的集合,这些共同体之间彼此交叉、相互联系,没有任何一个共同体完全隔绝在其他共同体之外"(《共同体的焚毁》 41)。在理论界看来,这两类共同体本来处于一种互相禁止互相限制但是又互相依靠对方而存在的状态,而文学则通过虚拟现实中的共同体,给共同体的重构提供了一种想象性的解决方案。最后,共同体之间的关系,就犹如阿甘本所说的那样"人们若能不再各自特殊地生活却又出落为一种同一性(……)人们可能首次达成一个既不知何为'相互沟

通'、亦不知何为'不可相互沟通'的共同体"(封底)。

史蒂文斯和南希两位学者的共同体思想处于两个极端, 但是都是属于西 方文化的传统,"南希的共同体思想及其所属传统,以及华莱士。史蒂文斯 的诗歌所表现的相反的共同体模式,它们同任何其他西方文化资本主义的产 品一样,都是西方的发明"(米勒,《共同体的焚毁》 36)。在西方的思想 领域,对于共同体并没有完全统一的模式,各种完全对立的观点都可以同时 存在干思想界。这是西方文化的一种困境,并且没有办法走出这种特定的困境。

王逢振与谢少波等人就担心,随着全球化进程的加速,全球化将会使得 全世界的人们丧失了个人特质,最后消除了多样性,王逢振在"全球化和民 族主义"一文中,就认为,只要参与了全球化进程,民族性就会发生改变,"要 么不通过全球网络传播和收听,以保持独特的民族性;要么参与全球网络的 传播,使自己民族的原有特性发生改变"(13)。对于王逢振的担忧,米勒 给出了自己的回应, 其认为在"无功效的共同体"里面, "土著的独一性无 法被本土文化的质询所触及,而网上冲浪者的独一性,也不会被美国夷平性 的大众文化所触及"(《共同体的焚毁》 37)。米勒在这里,试图消除大众 对于全球化的一些疑虑,这在一定程度上,解决了滕尼斯和安德森等人对于 更广大共同体的担忧。同时,在一种"无功效的共同体"以及复数形式的共 同体中,每个人"在一种独特的土著文化中栖身,遵循一种全球化无法染指 的当地生活方式〔……〕能够更好地使独体在彼此的外展中,经历他性,这 胜过了全球日趋同质的文化"(《共同体的焚毁》 37)。从这可以看出,米 勒所谓的"经历他性",认为即使身处异质文明,在尊重各自独特生活的基 础上,体验其他共同体之间的文明,从而实现对不同文明之间共同体关系的 协调。在米勒眼中,"文化、语言和习语丰富多彩,这一多样性本身不错,就 如动植物的多样性生态一样"(《共同体的焚毁》 37)。因此,植根于西方 传统的共同体理念,陷入一种困境,保持着对于西方文化的一种反思,这种 反思给异质文明的交流提供了一种契机。

在一种后现代语境中,对共同体"共同"的讨论慢慢转移到对其"差异"的 讨论,虽然两者都有其思想史基础,但是对"差异"越来越多的谈论,形成 了对于共同体更加疑惑的学术氛围,在这种氛围中,关于共同体的诸多问题 又成为学术界必须要面对的课题。而文学作为一种语言虚构起来的世界,在 探讨共同体方面发挥着独特的优势。文学作为虚拟现实,虽然构建起的是想 象的世界,但是正是因为其对于共同体的一种回应和和重构,使得其对于真 实共同体的崩解发挥着一种独特的见证功能,尤其是对那种不可见证灾变的

¹ 参见王逢振: "全球化与文化同一性",《马克思主义与现实》6(1998):55-56;王 逢振、谢少波: "全球化文化与空间在中国的复制", 《社会科学》1(2006): 154-163。

见证,证明了文学对于现实社会的一种独特价值。在文学言语行为理论框架下,文学述行性地对共同体进行了一种重构,这种重构一方面对反应了真实社会,另外一方面又塑造和影响了真实社会,因此,在文学虚拟现实中对个人和共同体的伦理关系进行的协调,将有可能流溢到现实社会,使得文学参与社会的进程。在全球化时代,文学还通过对共同体之间的关系进行一种想象性协调,让我们在一种虚拟现实中,对于共同体和共同体之间,怎样在保持自己独有特征的前提下,实现共同体从聚合到贴合再到结合最后融合的过程和机制进行一种伦理实验,从而进一步证实了文学的一种共同体功能。

Works Cited

- 吉奥乔·阿甘本:《来临中的共同体》,相明、赵文、王立秋译。西安:西北大学出版社, 2019年。
- [Agamben, Giorgio. *La comunità che viene*, translated by Xiang Ming, Zhao Wen and Wang Liqiu. Xi'an: Northwestern Polytechnical UP, 2019.]
- 本尼迪克特·安德森: 《想象的共同体: 民族主义的起源与散布》, 吴叡人译。上海: 上海人民出版社, 2011 年。
- [Anderson, Benedict. *Imagined Community: Reflections on the Origin and Spread of Nationalism*, translated by Wu Ruiren. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing Press, 2001.]
- 亚里斯多德:《诗学》,罗念生译。上海:上海人民出版社,2006年。
- [Aristotle. *Poetics*, translated by Luo Nianseng. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing Press, 2006.]
- 齐格蒙特•鲍曼: 《共同体》,欧阳景根译。南京:江苏人民出版社,2003年。
- [Bowman, Sigismund. *Community*, translated by Ouyang Jinggen. Nanjing: Jiangsu People's Publishing Press, 2003.]
- 让-弗朗索瓦•利奥塔:《异识》,周慧译。上海:上海文艺出版社,2022年。
- [Lyotard, Jean-François. *Le Différend*, translated by Zhou Hui. Shanghai: Shanghai Literature and Art Publishing Press, 2022.]
- Miller, J. Hillis. Charles Dickens: The World of His Novels. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 1958.
- —. Communities in Fiction. New York: Fordham UP, 2015.
- 希利斯·米勒:《共同体的焚毁:奥斯维辛前后的小说》,陈旭译。南京:南京大学出版社, 2019年。
- [—. The Conflagration of Community: Fiction before and after Auschwitz, translated by Chen Xu. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2019.]
- —. Literature as Conduct: Speech Acts in Henry James. New York: Fordham UP, 2005.
- 一一:《文学死了吗》,秦立彦译。桂林:广西师范大学出版社,2007年。
- [—. On Literature, translated by Qin Liyan. Guilin: Guangxi Normal UP, 2007.]
- 让一吕克•南希:《无用的共通体》,郭建玲、张建华、夏可君译。郑州:河南大学出版社,

- 2016年。
- [Nancy, Jean-Luc. La communauté désceuvrée, translated by Guo Jianling, Zhang Jianhua and Xia Kejun. Zhengzhou, He'nan UP, 2016.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 卢梭: 《社会契约论》, 李平沤译。北京: 商务印书馆, 2011年。
- [Rousseau, Jean-Jacques. Du contrat social, translated by Li Ping'ou. Beijing: Commercial Press, 2011.]
- 唐晓渡、西川主编:《当代国际诗坛(4)》。北京:作家出版社,2010年。
- [Tang Xiaodu and Xi Chuan eds. Contemporary International Poetry World vol. 4. Beijing: Writers Publishing Press, 2010.]
- 陶东风: "论见证文学的真实性", 《文学评论》1(2022): 117-125。
- [Tao Dongfeng. "On the Authenticity of witness Literature." Literary Review 1 (2022): 117-125.]
- 费迪南•滕尼斯:《共同体与社会》,张巍卓译。北京:商务印书馆,2020年。
- [Tönnies, Ferdinand. Community and Society, translated by Zhang Weizhuo. Beijing: Commercial Press, 2020.]
- 王逢振: "全球化和民族主义", 《外国文学动态》3(1998): 13-16。
- [Wang Fengzhen. "Globalization and Nationalism." New Perspectives on World Literature 3 (1998): 13-16.]
- 王逢振、谢少波: "全球化文化与空间在中国的复制",《社会科学》1(2006): 154-163。
- [Wang Fengzhen and Xie Shaobo. "Globalization and the Reproduction of Culture and Space in China." Journal of Social Sciences 1 (2006): 154-163.]
- 雷蒙德•威廉斯:《文化与社会》,吴松江、张文定译。北京:北京大学出版社,1991年。
- [Williams, Raymond. Culture and Society, translated by Wu Songjiang, Zhang Wending. Beijing: Peking UP, 1991.]
- ——: 《关键词: 文化与社会的词汇》,刘建基译。北京: 生活·读书·新知三联书店, 2016年。
- [... Keywords: Vocabulary of Culture and Society, translated by Liu Jianji. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2016.]
- 殷企平: "西方文论关键词: 共同体", 《外国文学》2(2016): 70-79。
- [Yin Qiping. "Key words of Western literary theory: Community." Foreign Language 2 (2016): 70-79.]

《一个医生的女儿》中英国犹太流散伦理共同体代际生存策略

The Intergenerational Survival Strategies of the British Jewish Diaspora Ethical Community in *The Surgeon's Daughter*

黄兰迪(Huang Landi)

内容摘要:沃尔特·司各特在《一个医生的女儿》中揭示了英国犹太流散者 共同体的生存主义伦理价值取向,以及代际生存策略的文化传承与社会适应 机制。在经济立足、犹太种族文化回归、自我价值实现等不同伦理道德原则 指引下,三代英国犹太流散者蒙沙达、齐丽娅、理查分别以海外投资、异教 婚姻和世俗教育的方式寻求英国主流社会认可。司各特对英帝国殖民扩张背 景下犹太族裔群体的流散经验和历史命运的描写,凸显了经济利益与社会正 义、个人幸福与家庭伦理、兽性因子与人性因子等伦理主题。

关键词:《一个医生的女儿》;英国犹太流散伦理共同体;代际生存策略作者简介:黄兰迪,东北师范大学外国语学院博士生,主要研究方向为流散文学。本文为国家社科基金重大项目"流散文学与人类命运共同体研究"【项目批号:21&ZD277】的阶段性成果。

Title: The Intergenerational Survival Strategies of the British Jewish Diaspora Ethical Community in *The Surgeon's Daughter*

Abstract: In *The Surgeon's Daughter*, Walter Scott reveals the existentialist ethical orientations of the British Jewish diaspora community, as well as the cultural inheritance and social adaptation mechanisms of intergenerational survival strategies. Guided by diverse ethical principles, such as economic self-reliance, Jewish cultural return, and self-value realization, three generations of British Jewish diaspora, Moncada, Zilia, and Richard, seek recognition within British mainstream society through overseas investment, interfaith marriage, and secular education, respectively. Scott's depiction of the diaspora experiences and historical fate of the Jewish ethnic group in the context of the British Empire's colonial expansion highlights ethical themes such as economic interests versus social justice, personal happiness versus family ethics, and animal factor versus human factor.

Keywords: The Surgeon's Daughter; British Jewish diaspora ethical community; intergenerational survival strategies

Author: Huang Landi is Ph.D. Candidate at the School of Foreign Languages, Northeast Normal University (Changchun 130024, China). Her academic research focuses on diaspora literature (Email: hld8816@163.com).

在《一个医生的女儿》(The Surgeon's Daughter, 1981)中,英国苏格兰 作家沃尔特·司各特(Walter Scott)突破了以往主要描写英格兰和苏格兰历 史的局限,将目光转向远在海外且具有殖民侵略性质的英国东印度公司。同 时,司各特首次将犹太流散者从以往的附庸角色提升为主要角色并赋予其更 为重要的叙事地位。司各特在伦理环境和伦理主体相关问题上的转变与 18 世 纪晚期英帝国转型和英国犹太流散者共同体融合发展的历史进程密切相关。在 英帝国转型进程中,具有双重文化背景的司各特"渴望解决民族和文化冲突 而备受煎熬" (Fay 216)¹, 试图从英国犹太流散群体的多元代际生存策略上 寻求答案,同时以审慎态度关注到,英国犹太流散者共同体的生存主义伦理 价值取向与英国社会伦理规范存在冲突。

在小说《一个医生的女儿》中,三代英国犹太流散者的不同伦理身份认 同需求决定了多元生存策略的必要性。出于社会适应的动机,以从欧洲大陆 流散至英国的蒙沙达及其后代为代表的的群体逐渐形成了具有生存主义伦理 价值取向的英国犹太流散者共同体。其中,三代英国犹太流散者对于犹太传 统伦理身份的保持程度,深刻影响着他们在文化置位中的协商策略。不同历 史时期的文学有其固定的属于特定历史的伦理环境和伦理语境,对文学的理 解必须让文学回归属于它的伦理环境和伦理语境,这是理解文学的一个前提。2 《一个医生的女儿》回溯了18世纪70年代中后期两次迈索尔战争期间英帝 国殖民扩张的历史现场,英国以东印度公司为着力点进行的殖民方式调整为 犹太流散者提供了包括市场投资和文化交融的生存发展契机。此时,英国犹 太流散者共同体"需要面对的问题不是其结构性界限能否抵御社会变革的冲 击,而是其成员是否能够为其文化注入活力,并构建一个提供意义和身份认 同的象征性共同体"(Cohen 9)。正如布莱恩·切耶特(Bryan Cheyette) 指出"面对帝国时代英国观念的巨大权威,盎格鲁犹太人内部一直在斗争。优 越的英国气质所具有的诱惑力意味着, 犹太人非常渴望在居住国获得认 同"(Introduction XV)。以蒙沙达、齐丽娅、理查为代表的三代犹太流散者 构成了犹太流散者共同体,海外投资、异教婚姻、世俗教育的伦理选择是他

凡未特殊注明,外文引文均出自笔者译。

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

们在主流社会中寻求身份认同的伦理选择¹。该过程充分体现了犹太流散者共同体"对当地社会环境产生归属感的结构形式的多样性"(Cohen 9)。

英国犹太流散者共同体生存策略内含伦理规范与现实需求冲突的伦理挑战。在18世纪70年代,"犹太人经历了变得更'英国人'的压力,这种压力同样强大,因为它是微妙而分散的"(Endelman 260),"微妙"和"分散"尤体现在英国犹太流散者的伦理身份重塑问题上。葡萄牙裔犹太流散者蒙沙达及其后裔齐丽娅和理查的流散身份"是在散居的过去和克里奥尔化的现在之间的复杂对话中形成的"(Cohen and Story 6)。其中,英国国家伦理身份导向为个体伦理选择提供道德指南,然而道德指南的本质是将英帝国殖民扩张霸权行径正当化。在英帝国印度殖民扩张的伦理环境下,犹太流散者逐渐陷入基于生存动机为英帝国谋利与恪守伦理规范两种伦理选择的两难境地,凸显了英国犹太流散者共同体找寻文化归属感过程中面临的复杂挑战。

一、海外投资:经济立足与主流社会安身

《一个医生的女儿》的故事背景设定在 18 世纪 70 年代第一次和第二次迈索尔战争之间,东印度公司成为以第一代英国犹太流散者蒙沙达为代表的犹太商人群体经济利益与伦理规范冲突的场域。第一代英国犹太流散者的伦理道德原则是经济立足,他们意图凭借在欧洲积累的商贸经验和金融技能获取经济话语权,以此在英国主流社会中扎根安身,完成生存的首要目标。海外投资是固守犹太传统伦理身份的蒙沙达的最佳选择,既最大程度维护了传统价值观,又确保了生存资源的获取。但基于满足资本积累的经济需求同大英帝国共谋印度殖民扩张颠覆了社会正义基本伦理道德规范。

英国市场经济的流动性特征和蒙沙达的经济价值决定了蒙沙达与东印度公司形成紧密联系。18世纪晚期迈索尔战争和美国独立战争促使英国重新评估全球殖民经济政策,尤其以东印度公司为试点调整殖民策略中的经济手段,即重商主义让位于经济自由主义。英国推崇亚当•斯密(Adam Smith)在《国富论》(The Wealth of Nations)中所提倡的经济自由放任政策,即尊重市场规律减少政府干预。²因此由英国统治阶级推行的一系列商业化政策突破种族伦理身份局限,极力发挥各种族群体的经济价值,促进了英国犹太流散者共同体的融合和解放事业。在描写蒙沙达伦理身份转换的过程中,司各特对隐含在蒙沙达跨国投资中的政治与经济问题进行了伦理批判。"莱顿豪

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 190; 聂珍钊: "人文研究的科学转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 565 等。

² 参见 Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations*, edited by Edwin Cannan, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1977.

尔街¹的董事们悄悄地为那个无边无际的帝国打下了基础"(72)²,庞大的 市场机器不间断地运转为大不列颠带来捷报,同时也急需货币燃料的大力支 持。英国犹太流散者共同体洞察到东印度公司的市场规模和投资商机, 更重 要的是发掘了东印度公司对于英国犹太流散者的生存跳板作用。小说中,葡 萄牙裔犹太人蒙沙达因经商来到伦敦,在出场时举止不俗出手阔绰,展现了 自己与银行关联紧密的雄厚经济实力。镇公所书记官劳德福对蒙沙达具有超 凡理财能力的评价代表了英国人对犹太人的共识: "他们没有地产,因为那 儿的法律不许他们购置地产,但是他们在金融市场里却很有势力——拥有大 量的证券"(29)。在经济自由和身份受限的伦理环境下,蒙沙达定居伦敦 与东印度公司进行贸易往来成为蒙沙达追求稳定生活的必然出路。

蒙沙达先拒绝后同意女儿嫁给效力于东印度公司的威瑟林顿将军的做法 可被视为18世纪末英国犹太流散者共同体遵循传统道德原则和谋求经济利益 之间冲突的表现。出于宗教纯洁的伦理观念,蒙沙达拒绝了异教徒威瑟林顿 的求婚,并在二人私奔时申请拘票逮捕女儿。十四年后,得知威瑟林顿在东 印度公司发家致富,蒙沙达出于获取最大商业利益和提升社会地位的考量鼓 励双方婚事,甚至同意女儿改宗英国国教。蒙沙达保持传统和异教联姻的对 立伦理选择凸显了英国犹太流散者共同体的伦理两难境地, 即承担责任传承 文化的道德原则与融入社会追求幸福的道德原则之间的矛盾冲突。

生活在英国的犹太流散者在语言学习和宗教生活等方面都发生了转变,只 保持了犹太流散者的经济职业结构。司各特在小说中所描写的犹太富豪蒙沙 达与英国本土名门望族交际往来的情景暗示了犹太商人群体在英国经济生活 中的重要地位。出于维系经济地位和克服与主流群体疏离感的心理动机,蒙 沙达与东印度公司合作成为不二选择,因为东印度公司凝聚了英国全民共 识,即东印度公司被广泛认可为维护国家利益和提升国际地位的重要力量。然 而,东印度公司宣扬自由放任经济主张的实质是实现经济创收以维护大英帝 国统治的殖民本质。这一经济主张表面上强调市场自由和不受干预的贸易环 境,但实际上它服务于英国的殖民利益,即过度追求经济利益而忽视社会正 义和伦理道德规范。小说中的东印度公司成为大英帝国拓殖的缩影,"包括 领土、商业和道德三大领域,大英帝国的'王权'涵盖殖民地土地所有权、殖 民地商业垄断权和殖民道德豁免权"(徐彬 116)。小说中,蒙沙达赠予女 婿的财富被用于东印度公司士兵的纪律训练事业,进一步充实了大英帝国的 殖民力量,并且以重利轻义为核心价值的经济活动使人际关系变得功利化,也 警示着英国犹太流散者共同体面临陷入社会伦理规范失衡危机。

¹ 莱顿豪尔街是坐落于英国伦敦市东部的商业中心。东印度公司总部设于此地并在国际 金融市场上具有重要影响力。

本文有关《一个医生的女儿》的引文均来自沃尔特·司各特,《一个医生的女儿》,陈 漪译(上海:上海译文出版社,1981年)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

蒙沙达与东印度公司合作海外投资是英国犹太流散者共同体经济需求下的必然结果。面对 18 世纪晚期自由放任的经济环境和主流社会疏离感,与承载国民经济繁荣希望的东印度公司合作,蒙沙达不仅获得了稳定的收入来源和经济保障,还借此提高社会地位。英国犹太流散者共同体在殖民经济活动中改善了自身处境,但同时无形中助长了剥削与压迫殖民地人民的殖民势力。这一矛盾揭示了英国犹太流散者共同体在追求经济利益与维护道德正义之间的复杂联系,使得犹太流散者的生存策略在道德层面备受质疑与挑战。

二、异教婚姻: 犹太种族文化隐秘回归

以齐丽娅为代表的第二代英国犹太流散者的伦理道德原则在经济立足的基础上发展为对犹太种族文化回归的考虑。第二代英国犹太流散者在成长的过程中增进了对英国文化和社会规范的理解。在追求幸福动机下,齐丽娅对异教婚姻的成见减弱,同时也希望在异教婚姻中保持内在的犹太文化认同。对此,司各特认为,异教婚姻并不能完全解决犹太流散者在融入主流社会时保持犹太种族身份的核心问题。司各特通过齐丽娅的悲剧性经历揭示了英国犹太流散者难以平衡个人幸福与家庭伦理规范之间的两难境地。

18世纪晚期英国社会中的政治改革与宗教宽容是齐丽娅实现英国犹太流散者共同体异教婚姻的前提条件。异教婚姻是指"来自不同宗教背景的伴侣聚集在一起,应对不同宗教观念和实践差异带来的机遇和挑战的婚姻伙伴关系"(Scott 86)。通过建立跨宗教的家庭纽带,促进文化交流和社会融合,进而提升社会接纳度,并维护以共同体稳定为核心的伦理秩序。这一时期,英国逐步放宽对非国教徒的限制,通过一系列的立法和社会运动扩展了公民权利,放宽了对犹太人等少数族群的宗教限制。尽管在1800年之前,异教徒的人数在英国总人口的比例中不足10%,但"跨宗教婚姻依然是文化关注的焦点,作为一种社会实践,我们观察到这种婚姻的比例在稳步上升"(Conway 3)。特定的伦理环境激发了齐丽娅的身份认同和心理归属感。作为第二代英国犹太流散者,齐丽娅"在英国居住多年,宗教成见已经大大缓和"(134),并渴望通过异教婚姻来弥补单一犹太伦理身份所带来的种族歧视和社会排斥,与此同时试图在主流社会规范下传递犹太种族文化的精神内核。

18世纪中后期英国人对《犹太人入籍法》 的强烈反响表明,接受犹太人的独特性与接受他们成为英国公民之间仍然存在着巨大的差异。"对犹太婚姻独特性的宽容并没有转化为接受犹太人成为18世纪英国社会的一部分"(Conway 4)。这种宽容的局限性反映出英国社会在处理宗教和文化差异时保持着对犹太人的深层次矛盾和偏见,这决定了英国犹太流散者共同体

^{1 1753} 年《犹太人入籍法》是一项允许居住在英国的犹太人通过向议会申请入籍的议会 法案。该法案于1753 年 7 月 7 日获得皇家批准,但由于其条款遭到英国民众的广泛反对,于 1754 年被废除。

在寻求社会融入过程中面临着复杂伦理困境和身份认同挑战。

作为犹太女性, 齐丽娅在跨宗教婚姻中不仅要面对来自家庭和犹太社区 的传统压力,还必须应对在主流社会中保持犹太伦理身份的挑战。由于所有 伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关,齐丽娅为寻求更高的社会接纳度,克 制犹太伦理身份,推崇基督伦理身份,引发了违背家庭伦理规范的一系列伦 理问题。小说中,由于路途劳顿而意外早产的齐丽娅在丈夫的安排下来到苏 格兰内地一个州里的米得尔马斯村,并接受外科医生基地安•格莱先生的治 疗和帮助。在基督徒聚居的米得尔马斯村, 齐丽娅即使在生产过程中依然坚 持戴面罩,以避免大家识别出她的犹太样貌特征。医生深谙犹太流散者在英 国的处境,在怀疑这位女客人是犹太人的同时,尽力隐瞒情况不让他的妻子 和其它看护者发现,因为他们一旦知情后"是不是能保持审慎的态度和宽大 的胸怀"(15)是一件更令人怀疑的事情。齐丽娅身为犹太流散者在英国社 会结构性压迫下不得不采取的隐忍与自我保护,充分展现了犹太伦理身份给 她带来的自我压抑和生存困境。

齐丽娅异教婚姻中犹太伦理身份和基督伦理身份冲突下的家庭伦理失 常,映射了18世纪晚期英国犹太流散者共同体在寻求文化保留与融入英国 社会之间的矛盾。在英国犹太流散者共同体中,通过婚姻结为一体的家庭 是维系犹太文化传承和社会生存的核心基石。斐迪南·滕尼斯(Ferdinand Tönnies)指出: "家庭生活的核心是丈夫和妻子结合为一体生育和教育后 代, 所以婚姻作为持久关系特别具有这种天然含义"(74)。齐丽娅尽力做 好妻子角色,为维持家庭幸福甚至改奉丈夫的国教。齐丽娅建构的融合双重 伦理身份的新型家庭伦理秩序是增强英国犹太流散者共同体生存能力的重要 手段, "犹太教从本质上来说是一种以家庭为核心的家庭宗教" (宋立宏 孟 振华 217)。

抑制犹太伦理身份使齐丽娅与孩子之间的伦理关系破裂,进而难以维 持犹太流散者共同体稳定。滕尼斯认为,将共同体成员各种意志结合在一起 的最强有力的方式之一是"一个母亲和她的孩子之间的关系"(58)。齐丽 娅为维护社会地位不惜遗弃具有犹太血统的长子理查,导致理查对自己充满 了怨意。齐丽娅之所以如此是因为,在"许多上层社会的犹太人和外邦人 之间缔结的婚姻中,毫无疑问,犹太伴侣带来的财富是确保婚姻的关键因 素"(Endelman 266)。异教婚姻中的功利主义预示了齐丽娅的不幸家庭生活。齐 丽娅在与自己的儿子分离后忧虑不断,身陷隐匿犹太伦理身份的痛苦。

总而言之,齐丽娅通过异教婚姻组建家庭的方式是英国犹太流散者共同 体寻求生存和生活稳定的重要策略,但值得注意的是,伦理主体的伦理身份 失衡即犹太性的失声表达容易造成以家庭分崩离析为表现形式的伦理问题。作 为第二代犹太流散者, 齐丽娅致力于建构的异教结合的家庭"成为一个冲突 或幸福延续的场景"(Tylee 17),折射出 18世纪晚期英国犹太流散者共同 体归属感缺失和身份认同困难的艰难生存境遇。

三、世俗教育: 世界主义认同与广泛生存空间开拓

《一个医生的女儿》中,以理查为代表的第三代英国犹太流散者以自我价值实现为主要伦理道德原则,在世俗教育中接受世界主义认同,意图将英国民族国家认同、犹太种族文化认同和个人自由价值观融合在一起,通过参与英国全球范围殖民扩张为犹太流散者开拓更加广泛的生存空间。通过叙述理查在兽性因子驱使下陷入道德困境的故事情节,司各特揭示了英国犹太流散者共同体在满足个人欲望与遵守社会伦理规范时的内在矛盾,同时批判了世界主义认同中英帝国"文明"与"进步"主张背后的殖民本质。

接受英国世俗教育是以理查为代表的第三代犹太流散者实现人生价值的必经之路。理查是齐丽娅与威瑟林顿成为合法夫妻前出生的孩子,由苏格兰乡村医生格莱抚养长大。格莱以及理查的外祖父蒙沙达格外关注理查的受教育问题。在哈斯卡拉「运动的影响下,久居英国的蒙沙达首先推荐理查修习医学,以确保理查未来在英国主流社会中能够实现长远发展。理查根据外祖父的意愿学习医学,并坚信自己"英国自由民"(39)的伦理身份会帮助自己具备"出人头地所必须具备的能力"(38)。"伦理身份是道德行为及道德规范的前提,并对道德行为主体产生约束"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评及其它》14)。理查始终坚定维护自己作为"英国自由民"的伦理身份,以此为基石规范言行,追求个人发展。理查接受英国世俗教育,即通过掌握实用知识技能实现个人价值,表征了18世纪晚期英国犹太流散者共同体年轻一代通过个人努力实现社会价值的伦理价值取向。

18世纪晚期,英国世俗教育通过倡导全球公民意识,推动对世界主义价值观的接受。这种教育模式不仅在国内倡导开放包容的理念,更在全球背景下建设适应国际需求的价值体系。世界主义"始于简单的理念,即在人类共同体中培养共存的习惯"(Appiah 43),尤其"当自我、他者和世界之间的新关系在开放的时刻发展起来时,就会产生世界主义的想象"(Delanty 53)。这种超越自我他者界限的全球性意识渗透在教育的方方面面,使得人们不仅在知识层面上理解世界多样性,还在情感上建立起对跨文化理解和合作的尊重。

英国世俗教育在培养个人职业技能的同时,隐含了殖民扩张带来的广阔职业机会和社会期望。对于受过医学训练的理查来说,东印度公司为他提供

^{1 &}quot;哈斯卡拉"是希伯来语单词"Haskalah"的英语音译。该词在中世纪摩西•迈蒙尼德(Moses Maimonides)的《逻辑语言的解释》(Biur Milot Hahigayon)中多次使用,为理性之意。哈斯卡拉运动,即犹太启蒙运动,是 18-19 世纪欧洲犹太人的一场运动,旨在吸收启蒙运动价值内涵,以推动犹太社群更好进入欧洲社会。受该运动影响,英国犹太流散者共同体逐渐重视世俗教育并开始参与英国的教育体系建设,以增强与主流社会的互动和融合。

的不仅是职业机会,更是实践他在教育中所吸收的全球视野的途径。理查深 受"在创造性的自我超越中形成的"(Delanty 36)世界主义认同的影响,形 成了超越单一犹太性的自我价值实现的伦理道德原则,以包容的视野将英国 民族国家、犹太种族文化和个人自由的认同融为一体,逐步实现多元文化身 份下的自我超越和道德成就。但是,英帝国扩张中世界主义意识形态的殖民 性扰乱了理查的人性因子与兽性因子的动态平衡 1, 致使英国犹太流散者共同 体面临严峻伦理挑战。在英国东印度公司工作期间,理查痛斥父母生而不养 的不道德行为,导致母亲齐丽娅精神崩溃最终离世,理查对此无动于衷。如 格莱医生所言,理查就是一个充满"'雄心'和'贪婪'的恶魔"(66),理 查远走东印度公司实现人生理想本质上是出于满足个人欲望的目的,兽性因 子控制下的理查无视家庭亲情,间接犯下了针对族人的弑亲伦理大罪。

理查作出满足私欲共谋殖民扩张的错误伦理选择是受到认知局限的影 响,而这种认知局限源自理查在英国世俗教育中所接受的特定历史观和伦理 价值观,即将重功利轻道义的行为合理化正当化。自幼接受功利主义教育的 理查被作为低级和从属地位的兽性因子操控,其弑母行为打破了人类力图控 制自由本能即原始欲望而形成的伦理规范。2面对父亲的解释,理查只是以"请 求您们两位承认我的权利"(123)冷漠回应,毫无悔过之心的行为举止内含 了英国民族国家认同对理查自我利益优先的殖民意识形塑。

出于开拓广泛生存空间的目的,理查打破种族伦理身份界限,积极与英 国白人形成良好社会关系。理查利用殖民地提供的机会和资源,在发展个人 事业的同时,进一步巩固了自身和族群在英国社会中的地位,建构了"以集 体和社会关系为基础的身份"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》263)。在 与白人交易过程中, 理查被拐骗到怀特岛病院, 失去了财产, 此时理查深刻 认识到东印度公司的本质是充满"犯罪和暴行"(90)的敛财机器。尽管如 此,被东印度公司不健康伦理环境荼毒的理查已然失去伦理判断力,在远走 印度后继续保持对财富和权势的强烈渴望,甚至将未婚妻曼妮出卖给印度王 公为妃,此后又勾结东印度公司把亲王出卖给英国当局,沦落为"双重叛 徒"(170)。随着阴谋叛变计划的泄露,理查最终葬身于象蹄之下。

实际上, 理查是英帝国殖民扩张和领土征服的工具, 为帝国的利益服务。这 种工具角色使得理查的个人成就始终伴随着违背伦理道德的阴影,司各特以 此批判性地揭露了帝国时代世界主义观念的殖民实质。理查在开拓广泛生存 空间的过程中,犯下无情弑母和阴谋叛变的伦理罪行。理查的理性丧失和责 任感缺位揭示出,在帝国殖民扩张和英国自由民身份认同双重张力下,个体

¹ 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 389.

参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

自我价值的实现总是背离伦理道德根基,这是英国犹太流散者共同体在建构 自我身份时为实现个人健康发展必须加以考量的问题。

透过小说,司各特对 18 世纪晚期英国犹太流散者共同体在生存主义伦理价值取向下的不同代际生存策略展开了深刻的伦理道德批判。"文学作品的伦理价值是历史的、客观的,它不以我们今天的道德意志为转移"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语"19)。《一个医生的女儿》中,犹太流散者出于生存考量而进行的海外投资、异教婚姻和世俗教育等文化适应策略是在英帝国印度殖民扩张伦理环境中做出的必要选择,但与此同时,司各特通过小说指出了英国犹太流散群体在实施经济立足、犹太种族文化回归以及自我价值等伦理道德原则时存在的内在矛盾冲突,如经济利益与社会正义、个人幸福与家庭伦理、兽性因子与人性因子。司各特的创作不仅回应了18世纪晚期英国社会对异质族群的焦虑心理,也反映了他对人类在文化冲突中寻求共生与群体认同的深刻伦理思考。

Works Cited

- Appiah, Kwame Anthony. *Cosmopolitanism: Ethics in a World of Strangers*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 2010.
- Cheyette, Bryan, ed. *Contemporary Jewish Writing in Britain and Ireland An Anthology*. Lincoln: U of Nebraska P, 1998.
- Cohen, Anthony P. *The Symbolic Construction of Community*. Sussex: Ellis Horwood Limited, 1985.
- Cohen, Robin and Joanna Story, eds. *The Impact of Diaspora on the Making of Britain: Evidence, Memories, Inventions*. London: Oxford Diasporas Programme, 2015.
- Conway, Alison. Sacred Engagements: Interfaith Marriage, Religious Toleration, and the British Novel in the Eighteenth Century. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins UP, 2023.
- Delanty, Gerard. The Cosmopolitan Imagination: The Renewal of Critical Social Theory. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 2009.
- Endelman, Todd M. The Jews of Britain, 1656 to 2000. Berkeley: U of California P, 2002.
- —. The Jews of Georgian England, 1714-1830. Ann Arbor: U of Michigan P, 1999.
- Fay, Elizabeth. "Grace Aguilar: Rewriting Scott Rewriting History." *British Romanticism and the Jews: History, Culture, Literature*, edited by Sheila A. Spector. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2002. 215-234.
- 刘兮颖: "贝娄与犹太伦理", 《外国文学研究》3(2010): 114-122。
- [Liu Xiying. "Saul Bellow and Jewish Ethics." Foreign Literature Studies 3 (2010): 114-122.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.

- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评及其它》。武汉:华中师范大学出版社,2012年。
- [—. Ethical Literary Criticism and Others. Wuhan: Central China Normal UP, 2012.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 一: "文学伦理学批评: 基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010): 12-22。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- Scott, E. S. "Interfaith Marriage: Perspectives from Religious Studies." Journal of Interreligious Dialogue 14 (2019): 85-105.
- 沃尔特•司各特:《一个医生的女儿》,陈漪译。上海:上海译文出版社,1981年。
- [Scott, Walter. The Surgeon's Daughter, translated by Chen Yi. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 1981.]
- Smith, Adam. An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations, edited by Edwin Cannan. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 1977.
- 宋立宏、孟振华: 《犹太教基本概念》。南京: 江苏人民出版社, 2013年。
- [Song Lihong and Meng Zhenhua, eds. Basic Concepts of Judaism. Nanjing: Jiangsu People's Publishing House, 2013.]
- 斐迪南•滕尼斯:《共同体与社会——纯粹社会学的基本概念》,林荣远译。北京:商务 印书馆, 1999年。
- [Tönnies, Ferdinand. Gemeinschaft und Gesellschaft: Grundbegriffe der reinen Soziologie, translated by Lin Rongyuan. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 1999.]
- Tylee, C. M. "In the Open": Jewish Women Writers and British Culture. Newark: U of Delaware P, 2006.
- 徐彬:"想象'他者'与'他者'想象——现当代英国流散文学与英国国家身份构建",《外 国文学研究》2(2021):114-127。
- [Xu Bin. "Imagining the Other and the Other's Imagining: Modern and Contemporary British Diasporic Literature and the Construction of the British National Identity." Foreign Literature Studies 2 (2021): 114-127.]

《缅甸岁月》权谋书写中的双重操演与伦理 困境

The Dual Performativity and Ethical Predicaments in the Tactic Writing of *Burmese Days*

石一楠(Shi Yinan)

内容摘要:本研究聚焦于乔治·奥威尔的《缅甸岁月》中缅甸皎塔达地区欧洲俱乐部有色人种席位争夺事件。在这一事件中,吴波金作为主要策划者,巧妙地将小说中的主要人物卷入了这场政治风波,使他们在权谋机制中分别扮演了"竞争者"和"牺牲者"的角色。本研究探讨了不同种族与性别身份的主体如何通过特定的操演行为在其特有的社会位置中寻求生存空间。吴波金与维拉斯瓦米为了改写种族身份,利用牺牲者的伦理选择来推动权谋的运转,同时他们自身也在进行操演,进而带动玛拉美进行双重操演。而权谋机器得以运转的根本原因是由于权谋策划者吴波金对理性意志的摒弃以及其对权力欲望的追求。本研究对作品中权谋的分析超越了传统的种族主义和殖民主义解读,更加强调缅甸裔人物的伦理困境与权力的相互作用,更深刻揭示了殖民地社会中个体的复杂性和作者奥威尔的反极权思想。

关键词:《缅甸岁月》;乔治·奥威尔;权谋;伦理困境;操演作者简介:石一楠,浙江大学外国语学院博士生,主要研究方向为文学伦理学批评与当代英美文学。本文为国家社科基金重点招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号:19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

Title: The Dual Performativity and Ethical Predicaments in the Tactic Writing of *Burmese Days*

Abstract: The narrative and dramatic conflict in George Orwell's *Burmese Days* is structured around a power struggle in the Kyauktada region of Myanmar for the Burmese membership in the European club. Under the planning of the power subject U Po Kyin, the main characters in the novel are passively involved in this political turmoil, playing the roles of "competitor" or "victim" in the power mechanism. This article analyzes the rewriting strategy competition between U Po Kyin and Veraswami in their racial performances, the specific role of the ethical predicament of the victims they exploit in the operation of power, and the relationship between U Po Kyin's rejection of rational will and his achievement of goals as a winner in the

competition, through which this article delves into how subjects with different racial and gender identities found their living space in their unique social positions. This study's analysis of the tactics in the work goes beyond traditional interpretations of racism and colonialism, placing greater emphasis on the ethical dilemmas of Burmese characters and their interplay with power, revealing the complexity of individuals in colonial society and Orwell's anti-totalitarian ideology.

Keywords: Burmese Days; George Orwell; tactic; ethical predicament; performativity Author: Shi Yinan is Ph.D. Candidate at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her research focuses on ethical literary criticism and contemporary English and American literature (Email: 2601930782@) qq.com).

《缅甸岁月》(Burmese Days, 1934)作为英国作家乔治·奥威尔(George Orwell)的第一部长篇小说,发表于1934年,被誉为20世纪最重要的反帝国 主义小说之一,具有很强的自传性。1小说的创作基于奥威尔本人于1922-1927 年在缅甸殖民地担任印度帝国警察时的工作经历,此段经历也为奥威尔后来 的反极权思想的形成奠定了基础。2作为一个世俗主义者和经验主义者3,奥威 尔一生"致力于'讲述真实、客观和可验证的事实"(William 185)⁴。《缅 甸岁月》主要讲述了殖民地警察弗洛里眼中英属殖民地皎塔达地区的所见所 闻以及他内心对当地不公正现象的看法。殖民地统治者为了缓和与被殖民者 的关系,在当地的白人俱乐部设置了一个少数族裔的席位,吴波金为了与维 拉斯瓦米争夺这个席位,利用弗洛里等人策划了阴谋,离间弗洛里与维拉斯 瓦米的关系。因此以往关于该作品的研究主要集中于其中的种族歧视和殖民 地制度等具有反思性的问题,且把主人公弗洛里这样一个白人统治者作为主 要的反思载体进行反复剖析,而忽视了作品中少数族裔人物的思想和行径。

"人的身份是一个人在社会中存在的标识,人需要承担身份所赋予的责 任与义务。身份从来源上说可以分为两种,一种是与生俱来的,如血缘所决 定的血亲的身份,一种是后天获取的,如丈夫和妻子的身份"(聂珍钊,《文 学伦理学批评导论》263),像性别与种族这样先天获得的身份在较长一段时 间内是相对稳定不易改变的,那么为了突破稳定身份的局限则需要面临更多

¹ 参见陈勇:"论乔治•奥威尔缅甸殖民生活的政治观",《天津外国语学院报》9(2007): 74。

² 参见 George Orwell, "Why I Write," Ideas, Insights and Arguments: A Non-fiction collection, edited by Micheal Marland, London: Cambridge University Press, 2008, 83-84.

³ 参见 Leslie Ray Mellichamp, A Study of George Orwell: The Man, His Impact, and His Outlook, 1968, University of Morth Catolina, PhD dissertation.

⁴ 凡未特殊注明,引文均出自笔者拙译。

的困难和阻力,例如霍米•巴巴(Homi K Bhabha)对后殖民主体的模仿分裂(mimetic splitting)的研究也讨论了强调少数群体身份如何在被宰制的情形下既被生产、也被撕裂的操演性概念,他认为关键的问题不止是被殖民者对殖民"声音"的挪用,也包括身份认同的分裂状况。¹ 皎塔达的文官吴波金、维拉斯瓦米医生和缅甸妇女玛拉美等缅甸人接受并迅速适应了殖民地社会的不合理,甚至学会利用规则提升自己的社会地位。他们行径反映出一种对生存环境的强大适应能力,而权谋的本身就是个体主动适应的过程,由"操演性"驱动。"操演性"的概念是建立在这一假设之上的:人没有先天内在的自我或主体,而是通过后天对特定角色或规范的(被迫)不断重复而形成的。² 在上述缅甸人物身上,我们可以看到他们为了在皎塔达地区争取生存空间,不断重复那些符合他们被赋予角色特质的操演行为。另外,朱迪斯•巴特勒(Judith Bartler)在性别操演领域的研究³,帮助我们从另一重维度窥见了缅甸妇女玛拉美的行为动机和伦理困境。围绕席位争夺展开的阴谋利用了人物的双重操演和伦理困境,从萌芽、运行到达成的整个过程,让我们的反思视角从白人弗洛里转向其他缅甸裔角色,窥见他们的操演动机和被隐藏的特质。

一、操演动机: 改写社会身份

席位竞争在两种层面上都是对自身种族身份的社会属性改写的竞争,一是强化种族社会属性的内部竞争;二是弱化刻板印象的外部竞争。前者表现为缅甸人为了讨好当权者或实现特定目的,故意符合并强化对方的刻板印象;后者是一种竞争者主体意识强化后产生的试图改变自身身份符号含义的行为。《缅甸岁月》中有色人种会员席位的争夺,本质是缅甸文官吴波金与维拉斯瓦米医生种族操演的竞争。在谈他们所竞争的目标之前,有必要阐明何为种族身份的社会属性。种族与性别一样具有社会属性,而这种社会属性是该社会对某一族群根据社会要求进行书写,成为一种社会准则,而该族群通过不断地重复这些准则的言行而得以巩固,从而形成自己的种族身份。4而种族操演的竞争就是强化或者削弱这种种族身份的社会属性以达到自己的政治目的。因此,欧洲俱乐部会员席位是具有强烈种族隔离意味和社会属性的身份符号,因此激励着吴波金为弱化缅甸裔身份带来的政治劣势而进行政治斗争。竞争的外部条件是敌强我弱的种族分布,白人占据着统治者的地位。皎塔达的不同人种的人口

¹ 参见 朱迪斯•巴特勒:《性别麻烦:女性主义与身份的颠覆》,宋素凤译,上海:上海三联书店,2009年,第10页。

² 参见 王建会: "种族操演性——族裔文学批评范式研究",《国外文学》3(2014): 12。

³ 参见 朱迪斯·巴特勒:《性别麻烦:女性主义与身份的颠覆》,宋素凤译,上海:上海三联书店,2009年。

⁴ 参见 王建会: "种族操演性——族裔文学批评范式研究",《国外文学》3(2014): 13

数量分布隐喻着此地各人种社会地位等级的划分,使得其政治权力格局呈金字 塔型: "这里人口大概有四千,包括两百个印度人、几十个中国人和七个欧洲 人,还有两个欧亚混血,弗朗西斯先生,分别是一个美国浸信会传教士和一个 天主教传教士的儿子"(奥威尔 17)1。其中少数的欧洲人占据着属于印度任 何一个城镇的"精神圣地"兼"英国权力的集中地"(17)。

在内部竞争的种族操演中,欧洲俱乐部对于维拉斯瓦米来说是一座避 免受到迫害的避风港, 因此维拉斯瓦米采取的是一种谄媚性的做法, 与弗洛 里结交、在白人群体中获得良好声誉。但这种强化动机的致命缺点在于操作 者被建构起来的种族规范和霸权文化过度洗脑,"这种对种族规范、霸权 文化的被动操演必然导致弱势族群自尊心缺失和自卑感的产生"(王建会 14)。而对于吴波金来说,对刻板印象的强化和弱化都是基于权力等级,与 维拉斯瓦米医生的自我精神奴化和种族宗教式崇拜不同,从吴波金争取席位 的路径看,他的行为主要基于成本-收益分析的底层逻辑而并非是发自内心 对英国文化的崇尚,他非常明确一个事实:"这些人对土著永远不可能谈得 上忠诚"(10)。

内部竞争中的性别操演来自弗洛里的缅甸情人玛拉美,她的性别和种族 身份使她面临着来自双重强权的压迫, 使她为了艰难维持金钱和地位不断操 演着白人妻子的社会身份。像皎塔达英属殖民地这样具有历史偶然性的结构 带有强制性的特征,将完整而权威的语言权利分派给男性,却拒绝给女性同 样的权利。但社会建构的不对称和遮蔽侵犯了由平等的个人所构成的前社会 的本体秩序²。玛拉美的性别、阶级和种族特征使得她在这种本体秩序中被更 严重地剥夺了言说主体地位。斯图尔特"玛拉美的动机主要是出于自身利益,她 想要保持自己作为'波卡多——一个白人妻子'的崇高地位,尽管她不爱弗 洛里并且自己也有一个情人"(Steward 45)。因此奥威尔并未给予玛拉美与 弗洛里的情感线过多笔墨,这种对玛拉美情感困境的忽视恰好彰显了弗洛里 作为上位者的傲慢心理。"对人类情感的简化使奥威尔小说中对异性恋的描 写变得贫乏。完整的人类之爱的光环从未被传达;相反,男孩遇到女孩,他 们脱光衣服,交媾,然后就'恋爱了'"(Mellichamp 161)。奥威尔赋予玛 拉美的就是这样过程简单的"爱情"。一开始,玛拉美就深知自己与白人老 爷在性别和身份上的双重差异,因而只是计划长久地做弗洛里的情人,满足

¹ 本文有关《缅甸岁月》的引文均来自乔治•奥威尔,《缅甸岁月》,郝爽、张旸译(武 汉: 华中科技大学出版社, 2015年)。以下引文仅标注页码, 不再一一说明。

² 参关于普遍存在的认为律法之前的主体具有本体完整性这样的假设,也许可以这样理解。 它是自然本质的假设——亦即那构成古典自由主义司法结构的基础主义(Fundamentalist) 神话——残留于当代的痕迹。对一个非历史的"之前"的一再操演调用,成为保证人的前 社会本体的一个基础前提; 而个人在自由意志下同意被统治, 从而构成了社会契约的合法 性。参见 朱迪斯•巴特勒: 《性别麻烦: 女性主义与身份的颠覆》, 宋素凤译, 上海: 上 海三联书店,2009年,第4页。

于维持"波卡多"的表面身份。玛拉美在知道了伊丽莎白才是弗洛里的真爱 之后,仍然愿意以佣人身份寄居在弗洛里家,这证明了爱情与玛拉美的双重 操演的无关性,但是屈膝谄媚的举动反映了"波卡多"的社会属性在她心中 的分量。所以弗洛里送给她的"珠宝首饰"和"丝绸笼基"(180)是其他缅 甸妇女对玛拉美嫉妒与仰视的象征,是她对极权规定的社会性别「的认同和符 号化强调,即使她获得的爱情是基于不平等的社会和性别身份。

除此之外,"在特定条件下操演行为也可以是主动的,甚至是颠覆性的"(王 建会 13)。镇法官与医生的共同点在于:他们在皎塔达镇居民中属于精英群 体,拥有高于其他缅甸民众但低于白人殖民者的权力。而他们的共同动机则 是打破以俱乐部为表征的种族壁垒,更加靠近权力区间的上端。因此二人对 自身种族身份的弱化也是"主动的"、"颠覆性的",因此出现了外部竞争。因 而竞争局势呈现出"吴波金一维拉斯瓦米一白人殖民者"的三方互相对抗的 格局。虽然吴波金与维拉斯瓦米在缅甸人内部的斗争策略不尽相同,但其前 提都是对欧洲极权统治的殖民地政治场阈中白人种族身份优于缅甸族裔身份 之合理性的肯定,他们的竞争也就主要呈现为内部竞争和外部竞争相结合的 形式。这也指明了其二人摆脱自身所属种族社会地位与生存现状的原始动机 与攀登上限。

二、铺设陷阱:诱导棋子进行伦理选择

基于以上的操演动机,吴波金开始了他的布局,而布局方式就是利 用个体的伦理选择。小说中人物的伦理身份和人性弱点与吴波金的布局相 互作用,他们受外部环境的影响而不断做出错误的伦理选择活动(ethical choice),在为吴波金的计谋作牺牲时走向悲剧的命运。人每时每刻都在进行 和经历伦理选择活动,所有的人都生活在伦理选择活动之中并通过伦理选择 活动体现其存在,并最终在伦理选择中走完人生之路,完成人生的整个伦理 选择阶段(ethical selection)的过程。²其中弗洛里与玛拉美作为两个不同种族 和性别身份的利用客体,他们的伦理选择活动被吴波金的阴谋所利用,形成 了有利于他进行内部竞争和外部竞争的伦理选择阶段,在吴波金的阴谋中扮 演了不同作用的棋子。

第一枚棋子弗洛里的伦理困境来自于他的道德性。所谓人性,就是人的道 德性,或者说是人的道德属性。有强烈道德感的主人公弗洛里,在一定程度上 是奥威尔述说反极权人性思想的发声工具。阮碧媛指出了奥威尔矛盾心理与他

¹ 参见朱迪斯•巴特勒:《性别麻烦:女性主义与身份的颠覆》,宋素凤译,上海:上 海三联书店, 2009年, 第23页。

² 参见 Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.

笔下的人物弗洛里之间的关系:"虽然奥威尔作为一个英国人,无法摆脱这一 思维定势,但是作为一个有良心的知识分子,在缅甸担任帝国警察的这段经历 使他看到了帝国神话的荒谬、衰败"(43),由此可联系到弗洛里作为俱乐部 中的"觉醒者",始终在种族身份的优越感与对该阶级精致利己主义本性的厌 恶中摇摆。他的自杀可以看做是他内心无法调和殖民话语与反殖民思想之间矛 盾的必然结果。1"弗洛里的悲剧正是源于其身份表演的失败"(陈兵 陈璟鸿 87)。弗洛里对皮威舞的激赏背后是他对东方文化发自内心的欣赏与认同。同 时,他在维拉斯瓦米医生面前对英国殖民者恶行的痛斥,他将英国比作病入膏 肓的老妪的玩笑,都是他对自己种族劣根性进行反思的体现。借弗洛里的口 吻, 奥威尔以内部视角质疑殖民统治合法性的政治立场昭然若揭。2

伦理两难即伦理悖论, 伦理两难由两个道德命题构成, 如果选择者对 它们各自单独地做出道德判断,每一个选择都是正确的并且每一种选择都符 合普遍道德原则,但是一旦选择者在二者之间做出一项选择就会导致另一项 违背伦理即违背普遍道德原则。3一方面,"这些白人萨布,弗洛里虽然平 时要和他们打交道,但实则对他们怀恨在心,以致无法对他们做出公平判 断"(77),他的人性因子⁴因对缅甸文化的反身性思考与对缅甸文明的同情 而萌芽。"在英国人当中,弗洛里非常了不起,因为他愿意尝试以自己的方 式理解缅甸人民和他们的文化。至少在这本书中,他确实表现出了潜在的两 面性,因为他以一种开放和包容的方式看待缅甸文化"(Steward 48)。另一 方面"人性因子虽然不同于人性,但它是人性的种子。只要人性因子存在,它 就能够开放出人性的花朵"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》38),然而 受到舆论环境的压迫, 弗洛里的人性因子止于萌芽, 勇敢的反抗行为并没有 发生。在俱乐部成员对他的缅甸朋友和缅甸文化进行羞辱时,他也将不满 压抑在心中,转由作者通过全知视角的叙事传递给读者。"他们虽然表面 上身为殖民机构中的一员,但实际上却是殖民地的'白人囚徒'"(丁卓 64)。在俱乐部内部例行的会议中,弗洛里受困于"沉默的螺旋"5,陷入了

¹ 参见 陈勇: "试论乔治•奥威尔与殖民话语的关系",《外国文学》3(2008):61。

² 参见 尹锡南: "在缅甸的日子: 乔治·奥威尔质疑帝国及其东方主义话语",《南亚 研究季刊》2(2007):88。

³ 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第262-263页。

⁴ 人性因子即人的伦理意识,其表现形式为理性意志。参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评 导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第274页。

⁵ 参见伊丽莎白•诺尔-诺依曼:《沉默的螺旋舆论——我们的社会皮肤》,董璐译,北京: 北京大学出版社,2013年,第5页。在人们发表政见或其他观点时,显现出来的支持某种 政策的势力强于实际情况,而反对派的势力则表现得比实际情况更弱。这样的现象不断自 我循环,一方大声地表明自己的观点,而另一方则可能"吞"下自己的观点,保持沉默,从 而进入螺旋循环——优势意见占明显的主导地位,其他的意见从公共图景中完全消失,并 且"缄口不言",这就是被人们称为"沉默的螺旋"的过程。

既想帮助维拉斯瓦米又不敢公开发声的伦理两难。

吴波金和维拉斯瓦米都看到了将弗洛里伦理困境作为陷阱的利用价值。作 为弗洛里的好朋友,维拉斯瓦米显然利用他亲缅这一优势,在与弗洛里的辩 论中故意表达了与他相左的观点:通过列举殖民者的种种功绩证明自己的种 族就是比白人天生劣等的,将自己塑造成符合白人殖民者规训的缅甸人形 象。这恰好能够激发弗洛里为缅甸朋友辩护的欲望,让他做出有利于自己的 伦理选择,即在公众面前公开他们私下的辩论内容。然而前文提及的过度种 族阶级迷信导致了维拉斯瓦米的策略单一。他未曾设想过,在面临自身利益 可能遭受牵连的风险时,带有知识分子软弱性的弗洛里一定会选择保持沉 默。相比之下, 吴波金能够通过主动借助弗洛里的软弱性, 压抑他的人性因 子,主动打破即将变得有利于维拉斯瓦米竞选的意见气候。他清醒地意识到: 虽然弗洛里有良心,但为保全既得利益者的身份,他的本性不是绝对利他 的。吴波金看出是肤色掩盖了弗洛里在白人社群中的落魄和困境,"当时机 合适的时候,他会将自己无缝地重新插入到同样的资本主义体系中"(Steward 37),基于弗洛里的虚伪本性,吴波金的第一步是人为打造意见气候:通过 诋毁竞争对手的名声与策划平定一场暴乱来抬高自己的声望,只有当多个事 件使众人压倒性地将好感投向吴波金时, 舆论的扭转才能使摇摆的弗洛里彻 底放弃对维拉斯瓦米的支持。

如果说算计弗洛里这样一个上位知识分子需要繁复的谋划,那么操纵另 一枚棋子——底层文盲妇女玛拉美的行为则简单的多。操演动机部提及了玛 拉美的伦理困境,在弗洛里爱上伊丽莎白之后,失去利用价值的玛拉美瞬间 成为被舍弃的对象,无法再在殖民地男权社会中寻找一个可以委身的空间。在 面临自己白人妻子的位置被真正的白人女性替代的危机时,玛拉美无法接受 回到最社会底层的失语状态,在弗洛里打算彻底抛弃她的时候,她说:"我 完蛋了,完蛋了!我在您家和您同居了两年,哪个男人还会娶我啊?您把我 的青春都夺走了。啊,真丢人,真丢人啊!"(180)吴波金深谙被物化的玛 拉美既无法依附白人男性恢复波卡多的社会身份,也无法归属缅甸社会变回 普通缅甸妇女的伦理困境,他利用她绝望情绪下的极端不理智行为去摧毁弗 洛里的幸福与声望。当长期情人的企图落空后,控制玛拉美这具行尸走肉的 有效策略变成了基于性别物化逻辑的"雇佣",例如弗洛里出价将她打发; 拉克斯廷夫人将她雇佣回来威胁弗洛里这个不够格的侄女婿; 因此吴波金最 终出价将她雇佣来破坏弗洛里的婚礼,借助婚礼这个充满道德评价个体的空 间,将竞争对手的丑闻公之于众。在完成这阴谋的最后一步,与弗洛里的同 盟关系使有利于维拉斯瓦米的舆论风向彻底逆转,吴借助玛拉美伦理困境操 控局势的阴谋于此刻达成目的,而玛拉美也彻底沦为三人互相斗争的政治牺 牲品。

三、阴谋得逞: 摈弃理性意志

吴波金的操演背后是对"权力"的依附而非"声望"的崇拜。在整场权 谋风波结束后,始作俑者吴波金获得了席位,"吴波金实现了所有梦想(……) 吴波金入选俱乐部成为了必然,即使埃利斯强烈抗议,可他还是成功入选" (340),除此之外,他还"获得了升迁〔……〕印度政府授予了他荣誉勋章" (340-341)。吴波金行为的路径和结果之间的割裂本身就是奥威尔作品力求 客观真实的恰当体现,他的文章力求一种反映力量,这种力量既是文章中的 思想力量,也反映一个人多面性的人生。1吴波金的多面性在于:他表面上接 受印度政府的荣誉,其策划平息暴动的目的也是为了塑造自己爱惜名声的清 廉形象,然而这种想象的声望与他的真实目的只存在表面的联系。这种不触 及他核心利益的联系使得吴波金对外界威胁保留着理性机动的应对意识: "吴 波金总能找到你的弱点,然后致命一击"(328)。因此在其他人由于害怕伦 理选择可能对自身声望造成的影响而陷入伦理困境的时候,吴波金能够趁机 将他们的恐惧作为实现理想的有力的抓手。吴异于常人的低道德感能够使他 克服种族自卑,将实在利益当作是一种胜利:"低级别的东方官员千方百计 地钻进欧洲俱乐部,因为这才是真正的胜利"(166)鸡立鹤群的自卑感被吴 波金克服了,相反,他能抛开这种有色眼镜享受权力的快乐。

吴波金对殖民地人群的社会属性有着全面而深刻的认知。通过小说中经常出现的监狱、军队等全控机构,我们可以看出当时的英国政府对缅甸实行了强硬的统治政策。还是孩子的吴波金就知道以卵击石是不值当的,因为"以一个孩子的逻辑,他也能分析出自己的族人根本不是这群巨人的对手"(3)由此可见,获得心理上和身份上的认同感、真正"与白人平起平坐"并不是吴波金策划这场阴谋的和进行种族操演的主要目的,实际上也并不可行,因为他看到了外部竞争中,殖民者也在致力于彰显自己与缅甸人的差异性,在某种程度上,"欧洲人深知构建一个对立面的形象对自身至关重要,随即将目光对准了东方人"(李锋 97),因此他知道不能以"对手"心态看待白人,也不能对通过与白人联盟的方式获得与他们平等的权力抱有任何期望。这就为他发动的阴谋埋下伏笔。

吴波金双重人生背后是自由意志对理性意志的驱逐。他的竞争动机和 应对变数时的应急措施都由自由意志驱使。"自由意志是接近理性意志的部分,如对某种目的或要求的有意识追求"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》 42)。追求权与钱的目标驱逐了吴内在良心或道德感所表征的理性意志²,因 此由道德建构的外在声望在他的心中变得不那么重要了。吴波金与其他人的

¹ 参见 Willam H. Pritchard, "Orwell Matters," The Hudson Review 1 (2003): 185.

² 有关理性意志的阐释,参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社, 2014年,第42页。

不同之处在于,由于缺乏理性意志的束缚,他的种族操演是表面化的。缅甸 同胞的正面评价在吴的社交场阈中并不带来太大的利用价值,因此内部竞争时,只要坏名声的传播不会影响他敛财和升官,他就不刻意避免勒索敲诈、收受贿赂、强奸妇女等会有损自己形象的恶行,因此他坏得很直白。例如,当 巴泰克告知他迪品基村的村长在找他办公时只带了十卢比和一篮芒果,他也直言不讳地表达对贿赂金额的不满: "至少二十卢比,如果明天我还见不着钱,他和他们村就等着吃苦头吧"(6),从他的语气来看,他在迪品基村村民心中的形象甚至不如十卢比重要。

因此名声是被吴波金控制的工具而非控制他的工具,因为"他那种人惯用的把戏——那就是诽谤"(51),相反,他了解流言可能造成的威胁。但是吴明白自己的恶行并不威胁殖民者的统治秩序或经济利益,且小法官这样的职位所带来的特权有限,他谄媚性的种族操演也传递出了自己不会僭越他们的错觉,他因此得以巧妙地将俱乐部内部的斗争火力转移到了维拉斯瓦米身上,在斗争结束后坐享渔翁之利。内部竞争中竞争对手通过行医等善举所打造的村民心中的好形象对吴波金来说是不必要的竞争条件,他所需要的是上位者的单方面认可,而平定暴乱的功臣形象恰好表现出的是他能给统治者们带来实质性作用,这种品质比维拉斯瓦米费尽心思的辩论更有效。通过这种战术,吴选择将自己剥离原生族裔,放弃了种族归属感,挣脱了族群个体在此族群中受到的声望的钳制。他选择以主仆关系依附于白人的荫庇,在殖民地治理形态中获得了舒适的生存空间,这也就解释了为何他在谋划布局的每一个阶段都能对自己不利的舆论保持释然的心态和莫名的乐观。

对《缅甸岁月》中权谋书写的聚焦,超越了纯粹的种族主义和殖民主义解读,更加强调权力对人性的催化作用以及缅甸裔人物伦理困境与权力的相互作用。在权谋语境下,人为设计的矛盾冲突将他们置于更为复杂的伦理混乱之中。弗洛里的伦理困境削弱了其作为统治者的强势形象,而玛拉美的双重伦理困境则使她在与压迫者的命运交织中失声。吴波金通过理性分析竞争对手的人性缺陷,逐一把握牺牲者的特殊社会身份,巧妙利用他们捏造有利于自己目的的真相,策划了一场离间殖民者与殖民地人民的暴动,并最终从中获取渔翁之利。从功利主义的角度看,这是他在名利场中的一场大捷,也是对传统东方人在殖民地话语中从属地位之刻板印象的成功改写。奥威尔对这一充满戏剧性和非正义性的胜利结局的安排,旨在故意颠覆种族之间的先天差异,同时也是对欧洲中心主义下白人政治主场的无情嘲讽和反集权思想的巧妙表现。通过观察人物的双重操演,可以发现奥威尔对殖民地少数族裔主体性和伦理困境的关注。这种关注不仅揭示了殖民地社会的复杂性和人性的多面性,也体现了奥威尔对权力、伦理和人性的深刻洞察。

Works Cited

- 朱迪斯•巴特勒:《性别麻烦:女性主义与身份的颠覆》,宋素凤译。上海:上海三联书店, 2009年。
- [Butler, Judith. Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity, translated by Song Sufeng. Shanghai: Shanghai Joint Publishing Company, 2009.]
- 陈兵、陈璟鸿: "失败的表演——《缅甸岁月》中弗洛里的悲剧命运探析", 《外语研究》 3 (2015) : 87-91+112°
- [Chen Bin and Chen Jinghong. "Failed Performance: An Analysis of Flori's Tragic Fate in Burmese Days." Foreign Languages Research 3 (2015): 87-91+112.]
- 陈勇: "论乔治·奥威尔缅甸殖民生活的政治观",《天津外国语学院学报》5(2007): 74-80
- [Chen Yong. "George Orwell's Politics in his Colonial Life of Burma." Journal of Tianjin Foreign Studies University 5 (2007): 74-80.]
- ——: "试论乔治·奥威尔与殖民话语的关系",《外国文学》3(2008): 55-62+127。
- [—. "On the Relationship between George Orwell and Colonial Discourse." Foreign Literature 3 (2008): 55-62+127.]
- 丁卓:《乔治•奥威尔三十年代小说研究(1934-1939)》,2015年。吉林大学,博士论文。
- [Ding Zhuo. The Research of George Orwell's Novels in the 1930s (1934-1939). 2015. Jilin University. PhD Dissertation.]
- 爱德华·W·萨义德:《东方学》,王宇根译。上海:生活·读书·新知三联书店,2007年。
- [Edward W. Said. Orientalism, translated by Wang Yugen. Shanghai: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2007.]
- 艾玛·拉金:《在缅甸寻找乔治·奥威尔》,王晓渔译。北京:中央编译出版社,2015年。
- [Emma Larkin. Finding George Orwell in Burma, translated by Wang Xiaoyu. Beijing: Central Compilation & Translation Press, 2015.]
- 顾奎: "扭曲叙事策略下的殖民者形象——以《缅甸岁月》为例",《江淮论坛》3(2016): 166-170。
- [Gu Kui. "The Colonialist Image under Distorted Narrative Strategies: Taking Burmese Days as an Example." Jiang-huai Tribune 3 (2016): 166-170.]
- 何卫华、聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评与族裔文学: 聂珍钊教授访谈录", 《外国语文研究》 1 (2020): 1-12.
- [He Weihua and Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism and Ethical Literature: An Interview with Professor Nie Zhenzhao." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2020): 1-12.]
- Hitchens, Christopher. Why Orwell Still Matters. New York: Basic Books, 2002.
- Hollis, Christopher. A Study of George Orwell, the Man and His Works. New York: Skyhorse, 2017.
- 胡文育: "《缅甸岁月》: 乔治·奥威尔笔下的东方人形象",《兰州教育学院学报》2(2012):

- 33-34+37。
- [Hu Wenyu. "Burmese Days: Oriental Images by George Orwell." Journal of Lanzhou Vocational Technical College 2 (2012): 33-34+37.]
- 贾钰祺:"挑战与局限:《缅甸岁月》的后殖民主义解读",《文学教育》9(2023): 90-93。
- [Jia Yuqi. "Challenge and Limitation: The Postcolonial Interpretation of Burmese Days." Literature Education 9 (2023): 90-93.]
- 李锋: "当代西方的奥威尔研究与批评",《国外理论动态》6(2008):87-91。
- [Li Feng. "Orwell Research and Criticism in Contemporary Western Studies." Foreign Theoretical Trends 6 (2008): 87-91.]
- ——: "奥威尔小说《缅甸岁月》中的种族政治",《英美文学研究论丛》2(2011): 94-107。
- [—. "Racial Politics in Orwell's Burmese Days." English and American Literary Studies 2 (2011): 94-107.]
- 刘权: "英殖民时期缅甸国内的英缅族群关系研究——以奥威尔的《缅甸岁月》为中心", 《思想战线》6(2021): 43-49。
- [Liu Quan. "A Study on the Relationship Between the British and the Burmese in Burma During the British Colonial Period: Centered on George Orwell's Burmese Days." Thinking 6 (2021): 43-49.]
- Mellichamp, Leslie Ray. A Study of George Orwell: The Man, His Impact, and His Outlook. 1968. University of North Catolina, PhD dissertation.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2021): 383-398.
- ——: "人文研究的科学转向", 《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。
- [—. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 4 (2022): 563-568.]
- 伊丽莎白•诺尔-诺依曼:《沉默的螺旋:舆论——我们的社会皮肤》,董璐译。北京: 北京大学出版社,2013年。
- [Noelle-Neumann, Elisabeth. The Spiral of Silence: Public Opinion: Our Social Skin, translated by Dong Lu. Beijing: Peking UP, 2013.]
- 乔治·奥威尔:《缅甸岁月》,郝爽、张旸译。武汉:华中科技大学出版社,2015年。
- [Orwell, George. Burmese Days, translated by Hao Shuang and Zhang Yang. Wuhan: Huazhong University of Science & Technology, 2015.]

- -.. "Why I Write." Ideas, Insights and Arguments: A Non-fiction Collection, edited by Micheal Marland. London: Cambridge UP, 2008. 76-84.
- -, Sonia Orwell and Ian Angus. George Orwell: An Age Like This 1920-1940: The Collected Essays, Journalism & Letters 1. New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc, 1968.
- Pritchard, Willam H. "Orwell Matters." The Hudson Review 1 (2003): 185.
- 阮碧媛: "浅析乔治•奥威尔《缅甸岁月》中的'他者'",《剑南文学(经典教苑)》 9 (2011): 41+43.
- [Ruan Biyuan. "A Brief Analysis of the 'Other' in George Orwell's Burmese Days." Jiannan Literature (Classical Education Garden) 9 (2011): 41+43.]
- Stewart, Anthony. George Orwell, Doubleness, and the Value of Decency. New York: Routledge, 2004.
- 王建会: "种族操演性——族裔文学批评范式研究",《国外文学》3(2014):11-17+156。
- [Wang Jianhui. "Racial Performativity: A Study of the Paradigm of Ethnic Literary Criticism." Foreign Literatures 3 (2014): 11-17+156.]
- 吴佩君: "奥威尔《缅甸岁月》的殖民地政治伦理阐释",《齐齐哈尔大学学报(哲学社 会科学版)》12(2022):103-106。
- [Wu Peijun. "The Political Ethical Interpretation of Orwell's Burmese Days." Journal of Qiqihar *University (Philosophy & Social Science Edition)* 12 (2022): 103-106.]
- 尹锡南: "《在缅甸的日子》: 乔治•奥威尔质疑帝国及其东方主义话语",《南亚研究季刊》 (02) 2007: 87-92+4。
- [Yin Xinan. "George Orwell's Novel: Burmese Days: George Orwell's Questioning of Raj and its Orientalist Discourse." South Asian Studies Quarterly 2 (2007): 87-92+4.]

论金斯伯格诗歌中的跨躯体毒性景观书写及 其环境伦理表达

On the Trans-corporeal Toxic Landscape Writing and Its Environmental Ethical Expression in Ginsberg's Poetry

张桃红 (Zhang Taohong)

内容摘要:作为二战后环境运动的先锋诗人,金斯伯格十分关注后现代城市中人与环境之间的伦理关系。在诗歌中,金斯伯格以美国棕色地带的城市生态叙事为抓手,通过"黑色向日葵"、"有毒长春藤"等一系列跨躯体毒性景观书写揭露了有毒物质的"慢暴力",反思美国现代工业文明及其引发的生态危机的同时,表达了跨躯体时空的物质伦理观与万物齐一的环境正义思想。由此,金斯伯格呼吁现代社会在工业发展过程中承认非人类生命的"行动者"身份,控制有毒物质的生产与流通,确保人类、动植物以及生命与生命体享有平等的环境生存权。

关键词: 艾伦·金斯伯格; 跨躯体毒性景观; 慢暴力; 物质伦理观; 环境正义作者简介: 张桃红, 文学博士, 浙江财经大学外国语学院讲师, 主要研究方向为英美文学和文学跨学科研究。本文为浙江省社会科学界联合会研究课题"艾伦·金斯伯格的景观诗学及其伦理建构研究"【项目批号: 2025N115】的阶段性成果。

Title: On the Trans-corporeal Toxic Landscape Writing and Its Environmental Ethical Expression in Ginsberg's Poetry

Abstract: As a pioneer poet of the post-World War II environmental movement, Ginsberg is very concerned about the ethical relationship between man and the environment in postmodern cities. In his poetry, Ginsberg, through the urban ecological narrative of the brownfields in the United States, discloses the slow violence of toxic substances by presenting a series of trans-corporeal toxic landscapes such as "black sunflower" and "poison ivy". While reflecting on modern American industrial civilization and its incurred ecological crisis, Ginsberg expresses the trans-corporeal space-time material ethics and the idea of environmental justice that everything as the same is all equal. Ginsberg thus calls

on modern society to recognize the identity of non-human life as an "actor" in the process of industrial development, control the production and circulation of toxic substances and ensure that people, animals and plants, living and non-living beings have equal environmental survival rights.

Keywords: Allen Ginsberg; trans-corporeal toxic landscape; slow violence; material ethics; environmental justice

Author: Zhang Taohong is Lecturer at School of Foreign Languages, Zhejiang University of Finance & Economics (Hangzhou 310018, China). Her academic research is British and American literature and interdisciplinary studies of literature (Email: cherryzth08@163.com).

"垮掉派"在环境行动中的深度参与是众所周知的。麦克卢尔(Michael McClure) 声称垮掉派诗歌是"环境运动的第一支文学流派" (gtd. in Meltzer 185)。作为"垮掉派"的先锋诗人,金斯伯格(Allen Ginsberg)在其诗歌中"深 刻探讨了人与自然世界相互依存的主题", "猛烈抨击了资本主义工业文明 对自然环境的严重破坏"(El-Sharif 96)。不同于早期生态诗人关注朴素的 荒野自然, 金斯伯格聚焦后现代城市空间, 以"黑色向日葵""有毒长春藤"等 跨躯体 1 毒性景观为载体,披露美国现代工业化进程中人造有毒物质的"慢暴 力"及其引发的生态危机。布伊尔(Lawrence Buell)指出,毒性话语即文本 中"有关工业生产中有毒物质造成环境污染,继而引发人的恐惧和焦虑的现 象",并强调"毒性话语是形成全球性环境话语的关键因素之一"(Writing for an Endangered World 31-35)。不可否认,"自从人类进入伦理选择的文明 进程以来,'人与自然的关系应该是怎样的?'成为人类面临的重要问题"(聂 珍钊, "从人类中心主义到人类主体" 23)。金斯伯格诗歌中的跨躯体毒性 景观书写揭露了人类活动与物质世界的相互作用,展现了人造有毒物质与大 气污染、水污染、食品污染以及人类疾病之间的互构性,是诗人出于对资本 主义现代工业文明的焦虑而创作的,承载着丰富的环境伦理诉求。

一、"权力归核儿"与棕色地带的形成及其环境污染

作为20世纪以来美国工业化进程遗留给城市的特殊遗产,棕色地带 (brownfields) "主要包括(在内城贫民区)受到有毒物质污染、对居民健康 构成威胁且亟待治理的地区,以及(在城市及工业园区)因人类活动导致不

此处借用生态学者阿莱莫(Stacy Alaimo)有关"跨躯体"的观点,即"人类和非人类 世界相互交织","那些难以预料且不合时宜的跨躯体行为会在人类、非人类生命、生态 系统及有毒化学物质等行动者身上发生",将金斯伯格诗歌中的"黑色向日葵""有毒长 春藤"等城市意象概括为"跨躯体毒性景观"。参见 Stacy Alaimo, Bodily Natures: Science, Environment, and the Material Self, Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2010, 2.

断恶化、遭到破坏的景观地带" (Buell, The Future of Environmental Criticism 135),成为城市中典型的人为污染累积和毒物富集之地。金斯伯格指出,由 于美国奉行"'权力归核儿'(即核大国、核动力)政策","政府对拥有 有毒的、不能消化的、人工合成的物质表现出狂热追求,带来了石油化工-核工业的极大发展"(《深思熟虑的散文》27)。而二战后,现代大都市的 发展带来了经济结构的转型,传统工业地带普遍出现了去工业化现象,这些 废弃的石油化工-核工业用地遗留在城市中,形成棕色地带。

在《向日葵箴言》("Sunfower Sutra", 1955)一诗中, 金斯伯格叙述了其 被随处可见的船坞、南太平洋机车、破旧生锈的铁杆、"金子式的房屋"等 废旧工业机器和设施包围的场景,并将美国比作成有着"盘根错节钢铁基脚"的 "森林般的机器"(134)¹。同样,在《卡迪什》("Kaddish", 1959)中,诗 人描述了他在美洲大陆驱车三小时见到的各种被废弃的或未得到充分利用的 工业用地和商业设施,进一步再现了战后美国棕色地带的真实景象:

所有美国的工业都从旁边掠过, 贝荣正为二战繁忙, 储油罐, 炼油 厂,饮料厂,餐车饭馆,流动机车修理中心——进入新泽西州的松树林 但见印第安人在那儿栖居——安静的城镇——长长的公路穿过多沙的 林地 -----

(· · · · ·)

两年过去,我去了一趟墨西哥——布伦特沃德的平原荒凉冷凄,低 矮的灌木丛和杂草把那废弃的铁路路轨遮掩一直通向疯人院——(187-208)

二战推动了钢铁工业的迅猛发展,造成大量工业设施和用地涌现。同时,工 业用地和设施的发展还带动了公路和铁路的大规模铺设, 而去工业化后它们 则被弃置一旁。在《飞越纽约上空》("Empire Air", 1984)中,金斯伯格同 样再现了其在前往罗伯斯特工学院途中见到的"废旧汽车场""长岛色彩斑 驳的垃圾堆""有着淡褐色屋顶的混凝土工厂建筑群"以及"致人死命的毒 品工厂"(404)等棕色地带。

这些棕色地带长期夹杂在城市中,不仅破坏了城市景观,还带来严重的 环境污染。在金斯伯格笔下,钢铁厂、电厂、石油燃气锅炉等形成的棕色地 带制造了大量固定污染源,造成严重的大气污染。美国各大城市及郊区烟囱 林立,浓烟与雾气混合成雾霾,笼罩在城市上空。在《飞越堪萨斯》("Over Kansas", 1954) 一诗中, 诗人描述了其身处在煤烟弥漫、大雾笼罩的芝加哥

本文有关金斯伯格诗歌的译文均出自 艾伦·金斯伯格,《金斯伯格诗选: 1947-1997》, 文楚安译(成都:四川文艺出版社, 2000年), 以下只标注诗篇名和译本页数, 不再另注。

的景象:啊,芝加哥,我置身在/这冬天烟雾弥漫的城市(……)绕过在西 塞罗的街区/站在大雾笼罩的公寓下(106)。而在《芝加哥一面打开的窗户》 ("An Open Window on Chicago", 1967)中,金斯伯格明确指出芝加哥的雾霾 污染主要来自钢铁厂的大烟囱所散发出的煤烟:

(· · · · ·) 这一角天空比东边天空晦暗 因为钢铁厂的烟雾聚集 散落在南方天际 (·····) 高大建筑群在云端下眨着亮眼 警车从大街驶过忽明忽暗 市区外的天空笼罩着煤烟 如同大雾中汽车缓缓爬行红灯一过 向冬天的天空吐着团团白烟 —— (286)

大烟囱伸向屋顶和水塔之上

工厂的大烟囱伸向屋顶和水塔之上,烟雾聚集散落在晦暗的天际,摩天 建筑物在烟雾下"眨着眼睛",街道上的行车忽明忽暗、缓缓爬行、吐着团 团白烟。可以说,不论是城区还是郊外都笼罩在一片煤烟之中。同样,纽约 和丹佛也在棕色地带的包围下遭受严重的大气污染:"幽深如峡谷般的高大 电厂/烟囱涌出蓝色烟雾气流(……)那偌大的烟囱喷吐灰色浓烟(……) 那墨水般漆黑的屋顶它们实在美丽无比"(《在纽约醒来》244-246);"棕 色的石油烟雾笼罩在丹佛上空/红色的石油气体杂色的烟雾/一团团一层层 积聚移动在地平线上/污染了蓝色天空/石油汽车烟雾/汽油混沌映红了丹 佛的白昼"(《谁统治美国》 324)。在诗人笔下,现代工业生产中有毒气 体的不合理排放及其引发的大气污染展露无遗。这些有关烟雾污染的可怕描 述并不夸张,而是基于美国城市的现实。1948年,位于美国匹兹堡市南方小 镇就爆发了由于工业排放造成大气严重污染的"多诺拉(Donora)烟雾"事件。美 国经济学家菲特(Gilbert Fitt)等人也曾对匹兹堡令人触目惊心的空气污染展 开描述: "匹兹堡从积极的角度来看,是一个烟雾弥漫的阴郁城市。从消极 的方面来说,世界上很难再找到比这座城市更黑暗、更污浊的地方了"(585)。显 然,棕色地带引发的大气污染已成为美国现代城市的痼疾之一。

此外,棕色地带的大量堆积使城市水体环境受到破坏,由工业垃圾填埋 场和废弃工业厂房所导致的水污染日益严重。早在20世纪中叶,美国爆发了 轰动世界的拉夫运河污染事件(the Love Canal Tragedy)。拉夫运河是位于纽 约州西部的一段废弃运河,美国胡克化学公司在1942-1954年间在该运河倾 倒了大约 2.5 万吨有毒化学垃圾,引发严重水污染。1 在《弗利幸恩海岸浮物 即景》("What the Sea Throws Up at Vlissingen", 1983)一诗中,金斯伯格通 过列举弗利幸恩海岸所堆积的各类垃圾,再现了棕色地带所携带的工业垃圾 对河流乃至海洋的集体渗透:"塑料和玻璃,牛奶箱和酸奶集装箱,蓝色和 橘黄色的购物网篮/克莱门氏水果皮屑,纸袋,羽毛和巨藻,砖块状水泥条 和木棍 / 多汁的绿叶和松树尖梢, 水袋, 胶合板和烟草袋 / 咖啡壶盖, 牛奶 瓶盖,食品袋(……)一个手持两根甘蔗的男孩在岸上行走,一只死去的海 鸥"(382-383)。不难看出,大量的人造废弃物漂浮在海上,将弗利幸恩海 岸堆砌成"垃圾岛",造成水体污染的同时,也使得有毒物质在不同躯体间 流动。诗歌中"一只死去的海鸥"这一意象旨在表明: 棕色地带引发的大气 和水污染仅仅是环境链条中的一环,有毒物质将在人类生命与非人类生命之 间进行跨躯体流动,造成动植物乃至人类中毒和死亡,继而危害整个地球。

二、跨躯体毒性景观——有毒物质的"慢暴力"

在工业污染物的浸染下,人类与环绕城市的动植物首当其冲受到侵害。金 斯伯格通过跨躯体毒性景观书写,揭露了棕色地带引发的大气和水污染与动 植物消亡、食品污染以及人类疾病之间的互构性。诗歌由此披露人造有毒物 质以一种"慢暴力"的形式进行跨躯体流动,进而危害整个生物圈。

在《向日葵箴言》一诗中,诗人饱蘸笔墨,以旧金山一株"浑身尘埃"目 "萎缩一团"的向日葵为表征,再现了动植物被现代工业文明毒害的事实:

那油状般的河水把红霞辉映, 太阳从旧金山群山最后一个峰顶上隐 没,水流里没有鱼儿山峦中也没有隐士,只有我们泪眼汪汪像老流浪汉 一般在河岸上徘徊,疲惫而狡狯。

(•••••)

寂寞凄凉,浑身尘埃眼中还残留着昔日机车喷出的烟雾和煤灰— 那带有虚弱穗状花序的花冠低垂松垮如同一只打碎的王冠,花籽落 下,牙齿行将脱

(•••••)

你这一点儿也不神圣的破烂东西, 我的向日葵我的灵山魂, 可我仍 爱你!

那尘垢污秽, 并非人类所有而属于死神和人制造的汽车,

所有那一层积秽, 如同面罩把深黑色的铁路肌肤覆盖, 那蒙上烟尘 的面孔, 那郁结着痛楚的黑色眼脸, 那煤烟弄脏的手或如同阳具或远比 任何污垢还要肮脏的人造突起物 —— 工业化的 —— 现代的 —— 所有这

参见 Allan Mazur, A Hazardous Inquiry: The Rashomon Effect at Love Canal, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1998, 9.

一切文明把你那金色花冠玷污。(134-135)

当诗人来到伯克莱一个修造船用的船坞处时,发现周围河水中的鱼儿消 失殆尽,山里的鸟儿亦不见踪影,只看见一株浑身残留着工业机车喷出的烟 雾和煤灰、花冠虚弱不堪犹如一张干枯的电线蜘蛛网的"死气沉沉的"向日 葵。在诗人看来,这一被有毒物质"玷污"的"破烂东西"正是疯狂的美国 机车的幽灵和"工业化的——现代的——所有这一切文明"的化身。诗歌中 的环境批判给予了一个基本认识,即在现代工业文明的催化下有毒物质的跨 躯体间流动性表现得十分突出,疯狂的美国机车将毒害每一个生命有机体,人 人都将无法逃脱"黑色向日葵"般的命运,"黑色向日葵"成为金斯伯格笔 下跨躯体毒性景观的典型表征。

同样,在《卡迪什》一诗中,金斯伯格通过纽约街道上长满了的"有毒 长春藤"这一城市意象再现了有毒物质的跨躯体流动: "纽约夏天的田野上 不再有鲜花了","印第安人从没有小鹿出没的溪流上座座小桥上通过","或 许,在一棵树上伫立着鹫鹰,或许有隐士正在寻觅猫头鹰歇息的树枝","长 长的死气沉沉的街道上爬满了有毒长春藤——〔……〕那外面又是什么?回 到格拉罕大街仍不安穿过荒芜的绿色篱笆"(182-192)。如果说卡森在《寂 静的春天》里描述的是一个生气全无的春天,那么这里金斯伯格则勾勒了一 个毫无生机的夏天: 田野里不再长满鲜花,溪流旁也没有小鹿出没,山林里 的猫头鹰了无踪迹,格拉罕大街上篱笆里的植物一片荒芜,只有那有毒的长 春藤爬满了长长的街道。诗人旨在披露美国现代工业文明引发的环境伦理困 境——工业化及其(棕色地带)生产的毒性物质在各种有机体之间流动,造 成非人类生命集体中毒直至消失,静默了无数场所的春之韵和夏之盛。

可以说,无论是"黑色向日葵"还是"有毒长春藤",它们无不表明有 毒物质无所不在,且以一种逐渐增量和增生的"慢暴力"(slow violence) (Nixon 2-3) 形式在不同躯体间流动。在《关于毒素的三节联韵诗》("Ballade of Poisons", 1977) 一诗中, 金斯伯格直截了当地指出了城市中随处可见的有 毒物质及其慢暴力行为:

带毒的石油在街道上闪现出魔幻般的色彩, 带毒的油烟落在城市的蔬菜上 带毒的地窖散发出硫磺和煤的异味 带毒的烟雾把郊区落日时的山峦染成紫色 带毒的海洛因软化了黑种和白种男人的意志 带毒的塑料泡沫经过无数年代才会消溶 带毒的钚在 1/4 百万年 / 才能升温裂变释放, 带毒的杀虫剂使食物链转化传递(345)

带毒的石油、油烟、烟雾等有毒物质被释放到环境中,在人类生命与非人类生命之间进行跨躯体流动,特别是那些需经过无数年代才会消溶的泡沫塑料、杀虫剂以及历经几十万年才能裂变释放的超铀放射性元素钚等持久性有毒物质,在环境中难以降解并形成无数连接存在物的链条,交织聚拢在动植物中,继而在食物和人体中转化和传递: "鸡肉和生蛋带着怪异的荷尔蒙/牛肉饼带有令人惊骇的红色染素/猪肉片带有浓褐色的药物,硝酸盐(……)水果树叶上带有镉和铅的尘粒,就连母乳中也含有放射性元素锶-90" (345-346),时刻危害人类机体的生长和健康。正如在《鲁尔区感怀》("Ruhr-Gebiet",1979)一诗中,诗人指出由于工业园区排放的各种废弃物和放射性有毒污染物质不断流入莱茵河,破坏了水生生态系统,造成河中"鱼儿绝迹/水中的女妖罗勒莱也身中剧毒" (351),展现了有毒物质的跨躯体流动及其慢暴力。

不难看出,金斯伯格将生态逻辑投射到真实世界中,其诗歌揭露了毒性物质在不同躯体间的流动及其对生物圈造成的灾难性后果,旨在以有毒物质的"慢暴力"喻示美国现代工业文明的"慢暴力"特质。这一"慢暴力"特质源于资本主义工业文明推崇的"破坏性的智慧"——"例如原子弹或核能创造者,他们认为自己在从事纯粹精神建设而不考虑实际产生的废物以及那大量未使用的钚储备"(Allen Ginsberg, Your Reason 20-21)。金斯伯格对这种"破坏性的智慧"提出控诉,声称以总统为代表的美国政府在致力于让大众暴露于有毒物质中这一层面"具有蟑螂般(打不死)的献身精神"(《关于毒素的三节联韵诗》 347)。金斯伯格将毒性物质的跨躯体流动与对资本主义现代工业文明的批判以及对美国政府的谴责交织在一起,进而展开深思:"美国人应该改变以往的思想思维(停止给地球披上机械盔甲),否则无机金属烟雾污染和大规模屠杀随时都会发生"(《深思熟虑的散文》121-123)。在他看来,只有改变传统的以石油化工一核工业为主导的资本主义工业发展模式、剔除人类中心主义,才能避免环境污染和生灵涂炭。

三、物质伦理观与环境正义思想

文学"是特定历史时期伦理和道德的独特表达"(Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 189),"在现代观念中,文学伦理主要包括人与人、人与自然以及社会存在之间的伦理关系及道德秩序"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》 13)。通过跨躯体毒性景观书写, 探讨人与自然之间的伦理关系继而做出的正确的伦理选择是金斯伯格诗歌创作的重要内容。

首先,金斯伯格的诗歌展现了有毒物质的跨躯体流动在空间与时间上的扩展。有毒物质通过空气、水、土壤、辐射、食物等途径打破时空界限,在全球环境中流动,形成对整个生态系统的毒效应,体现了阿莱莫(Stacy Alaimo)所提出的跨躯体时空的物质伦理观,即强调人与动植物、生命与非生命都是"有毒的、跨躯体物质空间的居民"("Trans-Corporeal Feminisms"

261), 主张"既不以人类为中心,也不以外在自然为中心,而是以它们之间 的流动与相互作用为中心"(Bodily Natures 136)。正如在《欧洲,这是怎么 回事》("Europe, Who Knows?", 1986)一诗中, 金斯伯格指出, 乌克兰切尔 诺贝利核事件「中的有毒物质在全球范围内传播,使得多年后法国的卡门贝干 酪、苏黎世的黄金都携带放射性有毒物质,甚至英格兰的羊群也因此遭到灭绝; 同样,美国华盛顿州一升水中有一束X射线与白俄罗斯明斯克市染毒的牛奶 冰淇淋之间具有直接的影响关系。

就此而言, 金斯伯格通过跨躯体毒性景观书写揭露人与非人类生命、生 命与非生命之间的互构性,旨在表明人类并不居于掌控性的主导地位,物质、非 人类生命同样具有施动能力,主张在工业发展中承认非人类生命的"行动者"身 份、剔除资本主义工业文明中有关人类利益高于非人类利益的人类中心主义 理念,继而承担起保护自然的责任。正如聂珍钊提出,"人类不能成为宇宙 或大自然的中心,但是可以成为保护大自然的主体","要解决日益严重的 环境污染问题,消除人类面临的生态危机,只有确定人的主体地位,发挥人 的主体作用才能做到"(聂珍钊,"从人类中心主义到人类主体" 31)。

其次, 金斯伯格的跨躯体毒性景观书写通过有毒物质对边缘群体的"慢 暴力"呈现,表达了反对任何基于阶级、种族等因素导致的不均等环境危害 的伦理诉求,在一定程度上表现出环境正义的伦理思想,即强调在环境问题 上,不同种族、阶层、性别以及不同受教育程度的人都享有平等的环境权 利与义务而不受任何形式的环境歧视。2在金斯伯格笔下,受到有毒物质污 染、威胁人类健康的棕色地带往往集中分布在政治和经济上处于弱势地位的 群体的住所附近。如在《一首关于美国的诗》("A Poem on America", 1951) 中,金斯伯格聚焦黑人聚居区暴露于有毒物质中的残酷现实:"染料厂、纺 织厂集中的街道浓烟笼罩〔 ……) 黑人爬进爬出 / 从生锈的铁皮屋 / 浴池隐 藏在/丝织厂后面/还有排水管道"(61-62);在《夏雨,沥青路,垃圾桶》 ("Rain-wet Asphalt Heat, Garbage Gurbed Cans Overflowing", 1969) 中,诗人 再现了少数族裔聚集区"从帕特逊到纽约下东区爬满臭虫"(308)的脏乱环境; 在《曼哈顿五月一日夜半》("Manhattan May Day Midnight", 1978)中,诗人 描绘了底层维修工暴露于腐烂管道、塑料垃圾等充斥着有毒物质的工作环境 中(343-344); 在《别长大》("Don't Grow Old", 1976)一诗中,诗人指出 自己居住在纽瓦克有毒化学胶水厂附近(337),等等。从诗歌中可以看出,被 污染环境与受"污染"群体主要集中在少数族裔聚居区、底层劳工阶层和贫 困人群住宅区。尼克松(Rob Nixon)指出, "有毒废弃物填埋场往往位于穷

¹ 切尔诺贝利核事件,指1986年发生在乌克兰切尔诺贝利核电站的核子反应堆事故。事 故造成致癌死亡人数和受污染地区和国家不胜枚举。

² 参见 Joni Adamson, The Environmental Justice Reader, Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002, 3.

人及少数族裔聚居区,而未爆炸弹药的污染则分布在最贫困地带"(227)。而有毒物质的慢暴力流动形式隐蔽且模糊,这必然导致受污染群体遭受忽视,成为被主流社会排除在外的贱斥物。就此而言,金斯伯格以毒性话语作为伸张权利的呼声,反对出于对穷人、少数族裔等弱势群体及其所在社区的歧视而设置垃圾堆放场和污染性工厂,主张不同阶级、种族享有同等的环境生存权。

基于有毒物质在人与动植物、生命与非生命等不同躯体间的流通与传递,金斯伯格的毒性书写超越了环境正义聚焦人类生命体享受环境权利的主体性拘囿,其环境伦理予以关照的范围更广。在金斯伯格看来,"所有物质形式都是神圣且相互依存的"(El-Sharif 102)。在《〈嚎叫〉注释》("Footnote to Howl",1955)一诗中,他提出"万物神圣!人人神圣!处处神圣!"这一更大范围的环境正义思想:"世界神圣!灵魂神圣!肌肤神圣!鼻子神圣!〔……〕浪子同六翼天使一样神圣!疯子和你我的灵魂一样神圣! / 打字机神圣诗歌神圣声音神圣听众神圣极乐神圣!〔……〕纽约神圣旧金山神圣皮奥里亚神圣西雅图神圣巴黎神圣坦吉尔神圣莫斯科神圣伊斯坦布尔神圣!"(129-130)特别地,诗人用了一些从传统诗学来看是"脏词"或禁忌词来阐明"神圣"的观点,强调不仅人与人之间,人与动植物、生命与非生命之间均享有平等环境生存权,表达了万物齐一的环境正义思想。

在人类中心主义主导的资本主义工业化时代,人造有毒物质在人与动植物、生命与非生命之间传递与作用,威胁人类与其他有机生物的生存,这一现实危机促使毒性话语成为金斯伯格诗歌创作的焦点。金斯伯格在诗歌中以美国棕色地带的城市生态叙事为抓手,通过一系列跨躯体毒性景观书写再现了有毒物质的跨躯体流动及其慢暴力,反思美国现代工业文明的同时,表达了跨躯体时空的物质伦理观与万物齐一的环境正义思想,呼吁现代社会在工业发展过程中承认非人类生命的"行动者"身份,控制有毒物质的生产与流通,保障人与动植物、生命与非生命享有平等的环境生存权。可以说,金斯伯格的诗歌不仅在文本层面支持了美国60年代开始的环境保护运动,也与打破现代时期业已存在的人作为中心与非人类生命作为客体之壁垒、剔除资本主义工业文明中有关人类利益高于非人类利益的人类中心主义理念产生合流,为解决全球生态危机提供了一种朴素的道德指引。

Works Cited

Adamson, Joni. The Environmental Justice Reader. Tucson: U of Arizona P, 2002.

Alaimo, Stacy. *Bodily Natures: Science, Environment, and the Material Self.* Bloomington: Indiana UP, 2010.

—. "Trans-Corporeal Feminisms and the Ethical Space of Nature." *Material Feminisms*, edited by Stacy Alaimo and Susan Hekman. Bloomington: Indiana UP, 2008. 237-264.

- Buell, Lawrence. The Future of Environmental Criticism: Environmental Crisis and Literary Imagination. Malden: Blackwell Publishing, 2005.
- —. Writing for an Endangered World. Cambridge and London: Harvard UP, 2009.
- El-Sharif, Nabil Mahmoud. Ecological Themes in the Poetry of A. R. Ammons, Allen Ginsberg, and Gary Snyder. 1983. Indiana University, PhD dissertation.
- 吉尔伯特•菲特、吉姆•里斯:《美国经济史》,司徒淳、方秉铸译。沈阳:辽宁人民出版社, 1980年。
- [Fitt, Gilbert and Jim Rees. An Economic history of the United States, translated by Situ Chun and Fang Bingzhu. Shenyang: Liaoning People's Publishing House, 1980.]
- 艾伦·金斯伯格:《金斯伯格诗选:1947-1997》,文楚安译。成都:四川文艺出版社, 2000年。
- [Ginsberg, Allen. Allen Ginsberg: Selected Poems (1947-1997), translated by Wen Chu'an. Chengdu: Sichuan Literature and Art Publishing House, 2000.]
- ——:《深思熟虑的散文》,比尔·摩根编,文楚安译。成都:四川文艺出版社,2005年。
- [... Deliberate Prose, edited by Bill Morgan, translated by Wen Chu'an. Chengdu: Sichuan Literature and Art Publishing House, 2005.]
- —. Your Reason & Blake's System. Madras: Hanuman, 1988.
- Mazur, Allan. A Hazardous Inquiry: The Rashomon Effect at Love Canal. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 1998.
- Meltzer, David. San Francisco Beat: Talking with the Poets. San Francisco: City Lights Books,
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 聂珍钊: "从人类中心主义到人类主体: 生态危机解困之路",《外国文学研究》1(2020): 22-33。
- [—. "From Anthropocentrism to Human Subjectivity: A Possible Solution to Ecological Crises." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2020): 22-33.]
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- Nixon, Rob. Slow Violence and the Environmentalism of the Poor. Cambridge and London: Harvard UP, 2011.

伊丽莎白·毕肖普《旅行的问题》中的伦理 身份与家园共同体想象

Ethical Identity and Home Community Imagination in Elizabeth Bishop's *Questions of Travel*

王玉洁(Wang Yujie)

内容摘要:伊丽莎白•毕肖普的诗集《旅行的问题》集中体现了这位以"旅行写作"闻名于世的美国桂冠诗人在跨越地理、政治、种族、文化等多重边界时,厘清与摆脱伦理困境并对人类共同体中伦理道德问题进行探究的努力。《旅行的问题》记录了20世纪五六十年代毕肖普旅居巴西期间所面临的伦理身份错位以及随之而来的伦理困境。作为本土文化的"局外人",毕肖普观察与融入巴西各阶层与社群,察觉自身的伦理身份多次错位与转换。最终以《旅行的问题》独特的叙事角度与诗学进程,以对"家园共同体"的想象弥合多极矛盾,做出了终极的伦理选择。

关键词: 伊丽莎白•毕肖普; 《旅行的问题》; 伦理身份; 伦理选择; 共同体想象

作者简介:王玉洁,绍兴文理学院人文学院讲师,浙江大学世界文学跨学科研究中心访问学者,主要研究方向为英美诗歌、文学伦理学批评与跨学科研究。本文为国家社科基金青年项目"毕肖普诗歌中的家园书写与共同体建构研究"【项目批号:20CWW015】的阶段性成果。

Title: Ethical Identity and Home Community Imagination in Elizabeth Bishop's *Questions of Travel*

Abstract: Renowned for her "travel writing", Elizabeth Bishop's third poetry collection *Questions of Travel* focused on her efforts of clarifying and freeing herself from ethical dilemmas and exploring ethical issues within the human community in the process of crossing geographical, political, racial, and cultural boundaries. *Questions of Travel* documented the ethical identity dislocation faced by Bishop during her stay in Brazil in the 1950s to 1960s, as well as the resulting ethical dilemmas. Regarded as a complete "outsider" in her native culture, Bishop realized multiple instances of ethical identity dislocation and became embroiled in

postcolonialist ethical dilemmas. Ultimately, Bishop's unique narrative perspective and poetic process in Questions of Travel, advocating for prioritizing commitment to a shared home over other ideological barriers, led to an ultimate ethical choice.

Keywords: Elizabeth Bishop; *Questions of Travel*; ethical identity; ethical choice; community imagination

Author: Wang Yujie is Lecturer at Shaoxing University (Shaoxing 312000, China), also Visiting Scholar at Institute for Interdisciplinary Studies of World Literature, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her academic research focuses on English Poetry, Ethical Literary Criticism and Interdisciplinary Studies (Email: 54.xiaoxiao@163.com).

旅行写作(Travel Writing)几乎贯穿整个人类文学的历史,而随着东方 学、地理文化学及人类学诗学等多学科理论的交织繁荣,上世纪80年代起 聚焦"旅行"主题的跨学科研究逐渐繁盛。彼时也恰值美国桂冠诗人伊丽莎 白·毕肖普(Elizabeth Bishop)研究的起点,随后二十年席卷西方诗歌研究 界的"毕肖普现象"("the Elizabeth Bishop Phenomenon")却仍处于蛰伏期,这 股"旅行"研究的热潮无形中激发了毕肖普研究深度与广度。1当代旅行人类 学代表人物卡洛·威廉斯(Carol T. Williams)直言: "人类的历史本质上就 是一个旅行者的故事,一个奥德赛"(xii)。这一论断也恰恰契合毕肖普一生 的创作与生活,其最重要的诗歌与散文文本几乎都生成于"向家性"(Vendler 27)的旅行之中,尤其是其完成于巴西旅居期间的第三部诗集《旅行的问题》 (*Questions of Travel*, 1965) 更是于 2009 年作为"美国旅行写作"的典范被 收录进《美国旅行写作剑桥导论》(The Cambridge Companion to American *Travel Writing*) ².

与前两部诗集《北与南》 (North & South, 1946)、《一个寒冷的春天》 (A Cold Spring, 1955)的北美与欧洲漫游不同,在《旅行的问题》中毕肖普 集中刻写与探讨的是其旅居数年的第三世界国家巴西的种种社会现象与复杂 群体。聂珍钊指出后殖民伦理批评研究前景的洞见: 当代出现了一批在帝国 中心"逆写帝国"的后殖民作家,他们笔下"帝国"的内涵已悄然变化,从 对殖民主义地缘政治的指涉转变为对殖民主义政治经济和文化残留影响的考 察。3从1951年抵达巴西港口圣托斯到1969年返回波士顿的近二十年创作中 期里,面对这个处于后殖民历史时期的典型第三世界国家,毕肖普的文化站

参见王玉洁: "伊丽莎白•毕肖普诗歌经典的生成与建构", 《中文学术前沿》4 (2019): 121-126

² 参见 Alfred Bendixen and Judith Hamera, The Cambridge Companion to American Travel Writing, New York: Cambridge University Press, 2009, 270.

³ 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第137页。

位是完全有别于其早期的旅行写作的。《旅行的问题》中的"巴西组诗"深 刻探讨了发达国家与发展中国家由于国际政治与经济权力的不对等而造成两 种文化中民众之间的认知偏差,并进一步延伸到文化领域,展示了"文化傲 慢(cultural arrogance)导致的伦理后果"(Fortuny 28)。在此过程中,诗人 映照出自身伦理身份的错位与转变,也面临强势文化代言人在第三世界国家 尴尬而微妙的伦理困境,但最终在伦理身份的彼此耦合与对于"家园共同体"一 致的想象中,完成了以诗歌表达道德观念的伦理选择。

一、跨越边界:伦理身份的移形与换位

"所有伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关。伦理身份有多种分类,如 以血亲为基础的身份、以伦理关系为基础的身份、以道德规范为基础的身份、以 集体和社会关系为基础的身份、以从事的职业为基础的身份等"(聂珍钊,《文 学伦理学批评导论》 263)。正是在不断跨越文化、政治、种族、宗教的地 理边界的过程中,毕肖普对世界产生一种流动性的认知,以此反观自身,重 新界定自我的伦理身份。在旅行起点的美国本土文化中,毕肖普是一位不 折不扣的"局外人" (Rich, "The Eye of the Outsider: The Poetry of Elizabeth Bishop"22):家庭生活中的孤儿、异性恋主流中的同性恋、上层社会中的无 产者,即便在1949-1950年担任了一个看似相当显赫的美国国家图书馆诗歌 顾问(即后来的"桂冠诗人"头衔)也从未进入主流文学圈。

"重置自我身份"一直是毕肖普诗歌的重要主题, 甚至可以说是诗歌创 作的出发点。阿德里安·里奇(Adrienne Rich)认为要真正理解毕肖普的旅 行诗歌,就必须注意到她在诗中一以贯之的"自我定位的挣扎(struggles for self-definition) " (Blood, Bread, and Poetry 125)。在晚年的访谈中, 毕肖 普回顾自己一生都在寻找定位,皆源于童年失怙的不安定感: "我始终有一 种做客的感觉,并且我想我会一直是这种感觉"(Bishop, Conversations with Elizabeth Bishop 126)。然而,一场果仁过敏的意外使得诗人原定两周的南美 旅行计划变成了"人生中最幸福的时光"(Bishop, Words in Air 219)的旅居 二十年。在与巴西贵族建筑家洛塔•德•索雷斯的交往中,洛塔为毕肖普设 计并修建了彼得罗波利斯山上与弗拉明戈海滩边的两套住宅, 使得毕肖普于 1953 年在信中向友人感叹"这个地方真美妙(……)我只是希望你不必到了 42 岁才觉得如此回到了家"(Bishop, One Art 359)。因此, 自 1951 年定居 巴西开始,她开始在诗中以"家"的精神条件为建材重新构筑家园性的历程。

在诗集同名诗歌《旅行的问题》中,毕肖普这样阐述其眼中旅行与自我 定位的特殊关系:"是缺乏想象让我们来到/想象的地方,而不只是呆在家里? (……) 大陆,城市,国度,社会:/选择从不宽广也不自由。/我们是否该 安卧在家里, 无论它在何方?"(Bishop, Poems, Prose, and Letters 76)。显然, 毕 肖普将旅行与"怀乡" (nostalgia) 做了内涵上的直接关联。身在异乡,不断 怀乡的毕肖普,她对家园的定义也在旅行的经历中改变与重写。

斯坦·史密斯(Stan Smith)在《诗歌与位移》(Poetry and Displacement, 2007)中透视了旅行对于激发现代诗人创作的本质性功能: "地点的改变也 改变了身份,构成了后现代社会身份认知问题"(14)。正是毕肖普在观察 巴西人民生活的方方面面的同时,写了一系列著名的"童年回忆诗"。在这 种过去与当下、别处与此在的映照中,毕肖普不仅如里奇所观察到的那样明 晰地回顾了自己的伦理身份,同时在截然不同的文化"接触地带"中完成了 伦理身份的移形与换位。特别是对于童年失怙失家的"自我"的重新发现,毕 肖普能够既作为外来文化的观察者凝视同样失去家园或经历亲缘灾难的巴西 贫民,同时也能对位回忆中的原初伦理身份。这就在很大程度上足以规避苏 珊·桑塔格(Susan Sontag)指出的旅行书写展现出傲慢的根本原因"二元思维": "有关异域旅行书写的作品总是将'我们'和'他们'对立,这种关系限制 了评价的多元性"(274)。

玛丽特·麦克阿瑟 (Marit J. MacArthur) 在比较美国"中间代" (the Middle Generation) 诗人的全球书写后指出,毕肖普的旅行行为"即便是在 她那一代旅行足迹遍布广阔美国诗人与特权阶层中,其漫游依然是非常特殊 的"(4)。这实际上暗示毕肖普的文学性旅行既是过程亦是结果本身,特 别是旅居巴西期间,由于伴侣洛塔的家族与政坛深入而复杂的关系、二人共 同与里约上流文化圈的密切交往,以及家庭中常年雇佣的多位本土佣人,均 促成了诗人在当地社会对于政治、经济、文化各个维度的深入理解与充分 共情。这也是伊丽莎白·鲍尔(Elizabeth Bohls)在《女性旅行作家与1716-1808 的美学语言》(Women Travel Writers and the Language of Aesthetics 1716-1808, 1995) 中将男女的旅行书写区分开来的依据: 传统的白人男性的旅行 写作倾向于将异域风景当做一个博物馆展品或者艺术装置,为了无私的美学 冥想而故意使之与日常生活分开; 白人女性却可以深入日常生活而恢复异域 风景的主体性。¹ 在整部诗集的第一首《抵达桑托斯》("Arrival at Santos")² 中, 诗人耐心而细致地描写了一群白人旅客过巴西海关的情景: "海关官员 们会说英语吧,我们希望着,/且给我们留下波旁酒和雪茄"(71)。全诗最 后,随着邮轮再次启程,诗人说道: "我们正驶向内陆(We are driving to the interior)"(72)。旅行由巴西海港逆流而上驶向河谷腹地,也暗示了接下 来这部诗集回溯时间并转换伦理身份,罕见地向外在世界揭示诗人神秘而复 杂的内在图景。

参见 Elizabeth Bohls, Women Travel Writers and the Language of Aesthetics 1716-1808, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995, 10.

本文对毕肖普诗歌英文原文的直接引用来自 Elizabeth Bishop, Poems, Prose, and Letters, edited by Robert Giroux and Lloyd Schwartz, New York: The Library of America, 2008. 中文均 为笔者拙译,后续不再逐次说明。

二、更迭语境: "逆写帝国"的后殖民伦理困境

在后殖民主义研究视阈中,"旅行"本身被看作镶嵌在权利和利益上的历史材料,或者是考察欧洲殖民者"文化"和殖民地"文化"之间的"接触地带"。「作为始终处于"接触地带"的旅行者,毕肖普的文化站位与伦理身份实际是不断遭受挑战的。因为在周游世界过程中,毕肖普不仅饱览异域风物,更切身体会到了资本主义在全球范围内的扩张,特别是殖民者毫无道德地入侵当地土著居民的生存家园。以至于在从里约写给朋友的信中,回顾战后麦卡锡主义盛行的华盛顿,她怀疑道: "我不断地感到恐惧,对于我们所抵达的文明程度。我们相当错误地庆祝人类自身一路以来所抵达之处,然而我们并没有抵达"(Bishop, One Art 1359)。

里奇意识到: "她的诗中考察不平等人群之间的关系,如贫与富、租户与地主、黑人女性与白人女性、当地人与殖民者" (Blood, Bread, and Poetry 130-131)。毕肖普对于殖民活动的考察很大程度上是从女性角度展开的,早在1941年9月,远在毕肖普首次踏上南美土地十年之前,她在《党派评论》(Partisan Review)上发表了名为《库奇》("Cootchie")的诗。诗中描写了黑人保姆库奇与白人聋哑女孩卢拉之间融洽的共生关系,专注研究诗歌中政治色彩的学者玛格丽特•迪基(Margaret Dickie)发展了里奇的结论,她认为毕肖普"关于小姐与仆人、地主与租户、白人女性与黑人女性的诗实际上是关于跨越种族和阶级界限而产生亲密关系的诗"(45)。但迪基没有更进一步意识到,在这个白人中产家庭中,即便库奇"全部生命花在照顾卢拉小姐上"(35),并在感情上几乎取代了卢拉母亲的位置,但"在厨房水槽前吃她的饭"而"卢拉在餐桌上吃她的"(35)。"情感劳动"并未为库奇在这个白人世界换来足以超越种族界限的待遇,毕肖普在诗中犀利地表明,黑人保姆这辈子唯一"从黑变白"的场合是在她自己的葬礼上,"躺在泥灰里,在珊瑚礁的掩盖下"(35)。

在《旅行的问题》创作过程中,毕肖普回顾了长期与大量底层有色人群接触的经验,塑造了一系列后殖民历史时期的巴西底层民众:他们中有热情却不靠谱的偷懒园丁(《曼努埃尔齐尼奥》"Manuelzinho")、梦想成为通灵师的原住民(《河人》"The Riverman"),还有本质纯良却死于围捕的亡命之徒(《巴比伦的贼》"The Burglar of Babylon")。在亡命之徒最后目睹的社会众生相中,毕肖普对于巴西军政府对上(外部西方势力)疲软阿谀、对下(内部本国贫民)蛮横欺压的强烈谴责。这首诗得到了南美学者的高度赞扬,认为它"将现代监视和暴力技术与里约贫民窟的民间传统和贫困群众并置,表现了毕晓普的巴西诗歌坚持,种族、阶级、性别和殖民主义意识形态的物质条

¹ 参见 Mary Louise Pratt, *Imperial Eyes: Travel Writing and Transculturation*, London: Routledge, 1992, 4-7.

件和社会嵌入性"(Erkkila 301)。但诗人自己在创作这首诗的过程中,却隐 约对自己的伦理身份有了担忧: 虽然主观上深刻地与贫民窟人民共情, 但客 观上她的美国人身份及贵族社交圈是否让她站在了自我感情的对立面? 诗中 她直言批判高级公寓中拿望远镜看好戏的富人们,可是在给姨妈的信中,她 承认: "我就是诗中那个'拿着双筒望远镜的富人'"(qtd. in Goldensohn 6)。

这种因跨越国境与阶层而带来身份转变的伦理困境,甚至会成为毕肖 普书写异域与表达情感的道德枷锁。一些西方学者对毕肖普的有色人种书写 是持否定态度的,如热内·加里(Renée Curry)在《白人妇女书写白人》 (White Women Writing White, 2000) 中就毫不客气地评价道: "她从中产阶 级白人妇女的视角观察着其他种族,往往无意识中便流露了她身为白人的种 族特权"(96)。一方面,毕肖普自身是美国本土文化的"局外人",一个 童年失家的"寻家者",自然地她与饱受后殖民时期经济剥削、流离失所的 巴西贫民产生了情感联结,甚至在某些诗篇中诗人毫不犹豫地以"你"(you) 向"我们"(us)的人称转变直接加入贫民队伍(《加油站》);但另一方 面,由于毕肖普本人依然来自于强势文化,且伴侣洛塔·德·索雷斯及其家 族的社会地位置于当时整个巴西上流社会的顶层,甚至足以干预总统人选与 发动政变。安东尼·吉登斯(Anthony Giddens)在《民族-国家与暴力》(The Nation-State and Violence, 1998) 中就探讨了被殖民地的本民族精英阶层对于 后殖民主义时期民族身份认同的强大主导力量,他们"为政治共同体的同意 提供了心理聚焦点"(322)。这样的身份背景天然地又将毕肖普与贫民窟 中的群众分离开来,使得诗人的任何共情话语都带有"屈尊俯就"(Vendler 26) 的傲慢。

事实上,毕肖普本人在创作中期就已经将殖民与反殖民议题置于诗歌讨 论的核心位置。早在1965年诗集《旅行的问题》首版封面就选取了《新世界》 (Nuevo Mundo) 中截取自 16 世纪德国绘图家塞巴斯蒂安•明斯特(Sebastian Münster)的《宇宙记录》(The Cosmographia)中的南美洲绘画。16世纪是 世界航海史发轫与兴起的百年,1502年1月葡萄牙三桅帆船初次抵达瓜纳巴 拉湾,葡萄牙人误将此认作大河之口,因此将该地取名为"正月之河"(Rio de Janeiro),而这片土地的官方葡萄牙语名称是"圣十字之地" (Terra da Santa Cruz), 带有传教目的实则行殖民之实的"里约热内卢"之名由此沿用 至今。在《巴西, 1502年1月1日》("Brazil, January 1, 1502", 1965)中,殖 民者登陆巴西的日期被直接写在诗的标题里,而殖民者自身的面貌也被毕肖 普讽刺性地描绘成"穿铠甲的基督徒",一手圣经一手武器的虚伪形象袒露 无疑: "基督徒们也是如此,硬得像钉子,/小得像钉子,闪着光,/在吱嘎 响的铠甲里,来发现一切"(92)。

毕肖普将铠甲的闪光与钉子的闪光联系起来,讽刺了宗教铠甲带来的 武装力量,不仅表现出二者相同的冰冷无情与坚硬锋利,也表现出二者的渺

小鄙琐与微不足道。随后诗人指出这些基督徒传教的宗教目标不过是一个幌 子,他们中的大多数依然是为了掠夺财富、完成对"他者"的幻想:"一个 他们离家时就过时的/追逐财富和奢侈的旧梦——/财富,加上一份全新的愉 悦"(93)。

在分析美利坚合众国的民族性构成时, 江宁康指出了这个移民国家实质 上的"盎格鲁新教文化"核心认同:"将非白人文化与美国信念对立起来,特 别是与新教伦理对立起来,从而在主流美国文化面前树立了一个自己的'他 者',一个缺乏现代文明特征的种族形象,于是间接地肯定了白人文化的优 越性与主体地位"(86)。从这个层面来看,殖民者也受困于殖民体制,也 难逃"被殖民"的命运,正如萨特(Jean-Paul Sartre)所说,殖民社会中"一 种无情的相互性将殖民者与被殖民者捆绑——后者既是前者的产物,也是他 自身的宿命"(24)。不仅殖民者受困于历史的藩篱,即便是来自于强势文 化的旅行者,其记录的风景被疑为对景观的凝视,而其共情则被疑为掺杂了"文 化傲慢"。甚至是毕肖普的诗坛好友、各方面处境都相当接近的阿德里安•里 奇都承认: "每个白人头脑中都有种族主义偏见,作家拥有为其他被剥夺话 语者代 言的力量、权利和义务,作家有时有责任沉默,或至少为那些能以更 直接权威发 声的人留出空间——这一系列都是我们这个时代的关键问题,也 是与毕肖普大部分作品相关的问题"(Blood, Bread, and Poetry 131)。

三、抵达共识:文学的伦理选择与"家园共同体"想象

"从伦理文学批评的角度来看,'文学是一种社会意识形态'的观点 并不能阐明文学的本质" (Nie, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 191)。因此,即便被西方学者们质疑诗作带有"文化傲慢",毕肖普的旅行 书写也应当被放置于当时的实际语境中去分析, "在历史的客观环境中去分 析、理解和阐释文学中的各种道德现象"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评与道 德批评" 13)。在旅居巴西的近二十年内,毕肖普由一开始的兴奋悸动逐渐 沉静下来,观察巴西社会各个阶层的生活所展示出殖民活动时期外来侵略者 所留下的文化烙印。

毕肖普强烈的反殖民主义立场与对去殖民化的巴西未来社会的憧憬,都 蕴含在其对于里约与欧鲁普雷图贫民窟群众构建物质与精神家园的诗性摹写 中。在巴西,特别是里约的贫民窟中,诗人目睹了殖民历史对于当下的妇女 与儿童的现实创伤。比如1956年首先以葡萄牙语发表的《擅居者的孩子》 ("Squatter's Children"),在诗集中它被放在放在《旅行的问题》一诗后,但 与《旅行的问题》相比,它以悲伤而反风景化的现实,呈现了一个美国旅行 者可能沉思的巴西现实问题: 贫民无力购买房屋而租赁摇摇欲坠的房子。

整首诗描述了普通贫民的家园的不安全性,诗行从对于孩子和房子的描 写开始: "在山岗屏息的岭侧/他们玩耍着,斑点一样的女孩和男孩,/孤孤

单单,靠近斑点一样的房子"(96)。这里"斑点一样"(specklike)立即提 醒我们同一部诗集中《巴比伦的贼》里描写:

在里约一座绿得正好的山上 一个叫人害怕的斑点在生长: 来到里约的穷人 再也不能回到他们的家乡。(90)

两首诗都聚焦了里约不断扩大的贫民窟,明明是巴西本土民众,却 只能不断地搬到山上居住,而海滩边的高级公寓里则住满了外来的白 人,他们自己的家园仿佛这个民族沉默的、在生长的"斑点"。随 后, "一场风暴在房子后堆叠", 即将落到他们"小小的, 会溶化的 不被承认的方舟"上。 这里毕肖普再次运用了一个圣经典故,诺亚方舟承载 着世间所有被拯救而得以保留的物种,可是这对巴西儿童所居住的方舟,相 比于传说中宏大的、在大洪水中坚持七天七夜的神圣方舟,确是那么微不足 道、脆弱以及非法。孩子们无辜又轻信,这正使得他们更容易受到在诗行间 若隐若现、最后爆发的暴风雨的伤害。诗节的递归循环的韵律(abcbddff)更 加重了这种宿命感与风暴逐渐沉重的感觉。全诗最后,诗人再也按捺不住对 于孩子们处境的担忧与同情,直接从叙事者转为对话者,向他们建议:

孩子们,那风暴的入口 已滑到了你们泥泞的鞋下: 潮湿且陶醉, 你们站在 豪宅中。你们可以选 出一幢比你们家大的房子, 它的合法性持久。 它湿透的文件把你的 权利保留在落雨的房里。(77)

诗的最后, 无家可归的孩子身后, 世界扩展为一个巨大的家宅。欢乐 和苦痛的斗争上升到了更高的层面。事实上,这首诗"直接处理童年的迁移 (childhood displacement)问题"(McCabe 183),将诗人本人童年的迁徙问 题与她目睹的殖民地贫民的迁移问题合二为一,对于儿童失去家园这一主题 进行充分移情。诗中母亲"原罪般"的叫孩子们回家的声音,就是要打破小 乐园中无忧无虑的欢乐。这也就将生命欢乐置于了永恒的磨难之上,引导读 者深刻反思存在于后殖民主义时期的民族本体性危机。

"种族主义深植于人们的行为、社会机构以及殖民主义者的生产和交

换的方式中"(Sartre 20),由于殖民社会"缺乏重塑社会结构的内在驱动 力"(143),去殖民化已经是不可回避的历史趋势,这一趋势不仅要求被殖 民地区脱离曾经的殖民者在政治与军事上的控制,更进一步要求生发出对本 民族文化主体地位的重新确立与肯定。在长诗《河人》中,叙事从一位居住 在亚马逊河沿岸、想成为巫师的男人视角出发,密切地观察了亚马逊河流域 居民与自然水乳交融的群居状态,记录了大量亚马逊河的自然事物与风俗习 惯。毕肖普创作这首诗的资料主要来源于查尔斯·韦格利(Charles Wagley) 的《巴西城镇》 (Amazon Town: A Study of Man in the Tropics, 1953), 后者 一改以往西方知识精英对巴西居高临下的帝国主义傲慢视角,亲切地反映了 这片南美土地的原本样貌。这首描写与自然"通灵"信仰的诗,和毕肖普其 他描写"桑巴"游行与狂欢节(《粉红狗》"Pink Dog")的诗一道,充分展 现了诗人对于巴西民族本土文化的赞许与延续其主体性的愿望。然而,文化 的渗透没有停止,大卫·赫斯(David Hess)在《巴西之谜》(The Brazilian Puzzle, 1995) 震惊地观察到,即便是在今日巴西: "电台令人震惊地播放着 美国和英国的摇滚,以牺牲他们自己那么美妙的音乐为代价。城市与中产阶 级巴西人趋于崇拜任何来自'异域'的事物,特别是来自发达国家的"(294)。

在另一首长诗《曼努埃尔齐尼奥》中,毕肖普描述了一位天性乐观不羁、可 是工作怠惰又毫无章法的园丁曼努埃尔齐尼奥,在轻松俏皮地陈述他各种引 人好气又发笑的行为后,诗的末尾毕肖普陡然转换音调,严肃而深情地承诺:

你这无助的愚蠢的男人, 我尽我所能地爱你, 我想。或我有吗? 我摘下我的帽子, 无修饰的 且象征性的, 递给你。 再一次我承诺去尝试。(81)

显然,这个男人象征了在后殖民主义困境中挣扎的巴西,尽管存在各种 理念上的冲突,诗人依然一遍遍地承诺自己"爱的尝试"。正如海伦•文德 勒(Helen Vendler)所言,毕肖普区分家园与非家的界限,并非任何政治、经 济、种族、国别等概念,而在于"爱"(love)的赋予: "只要爱是缺失的,对 于自然的家园化就不会完美"(27)。唯有完成家园化的改造(物质条件) 与具备家园性的维系(精神条件)后,"家"理念才算得到实现。

"文学的根本目的不在于为人类提供娱乐,而在于为人类提供从伦理 角度认识社会和生活的道德范例,为人类的物质生活和精神生活提供道德警 示,为人类的自我完善提供道德经验"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》

14)。毕肖普的旅行写作是她对于外在世界的凝视记录,更是其对于内在世 界的重新梳排与解释,这一过程实际上就是一场"归家"的精神旅程。在捕 捉了不同的地理维度中风景的碎片,丰富其诗歌观照视野的同时,毕肖普也 将其对于"家园"的思考扩展到更加广阔高远的空间。正是在对巴西民众普 遍的共情与对家园共同体的一致想象中, 毕肖普在诗歌中完善了文学的伦理 选择。不仅避免了在唯我论诗学中的自怜,也将殖民、战争、贫穷等社会历 史线索纳入到其家园主题的诗学建构中。

Works Cited

- 安东尼•吉登斯:《民族-国家与暴力》,胡宗泽等译。北京:生活•读书•新知•三联书店, 1998年。
- [Giddens, Anthony. The Nation-State and Violence, translated by Hu Zongze. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 1998.]
- Bendixen, Alfred and Judith Hamera. The Cambridge Companion to American Travel Writing. New York: Cambridge UP, 2009.
- Bishop, Elizabeth. Conversations with Elizabeth Bishop. Jackson: UP of Mississippi, 1996.
- —. Poems, Prose, and Letters, edited by Robert Giroux and Lloyd Schwartz. New York: The Library of America, 2008.
- —. One Art: Letters, edited by Robert Giroux, New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1994.
- —. Words in Air: The Complete Correspondence between Elizabeth Bishop and Robert Lowell, edited by Thomas Travisano and Saskia Hamilton. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2008.
- Bohls, Elizabeth. Women Travel Writers and the Language of Aesthetics 1716-1808. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1995.
- Curry, Renée R. White Women Writing White: H.D., Elizabeth Bishop, Sylvia Plath, and Whiteness. Westport: Greenwood Press, 2000.
- Dickie, Margaret. "Race and Class in Elizabeth Bishop's Poetry." The Yearbook of English Studies 24 (1994): 44-58.
- Erkkila, Betsy. "Elizabeth Bishop, Modernism, and the Left." American Literary History 2 (1996): 284-310.
- Fortuny, Kim. Elizabeth Bishop: The Art of Travel. Boulder: UP of Colorado, 2003.
- Hess, David. "Afterword." The Brazilian Puzzle, edited by Hess and Roberto da Matta. New York: Columbia UP, 1995. 294.
- Janows, Jill. "Unpublished interview with Linda Nemer, Elizabeth Bishop Papers." Divisions of the Heart: Elizabeth Bishop and the Art of Memory and Place, edited by Sandra Barry et al. Wolfville: Gaspereau Press, 2001. 111.
- 江宁康:《美国当代文学与美利坚民族认同》。南京:南京大学出版社,2008年。

- [Jiang Ningkang. Literature and National Identity in Contemporary America. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2008.]
- MacArthur, Marit J. *The House Abandoned: The American Landscape in the Poetry of Frost, Bishop, and Ashbery.* New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2008.
- McCabe, Susan. Elizabeth Bishop: Her Poetics of Loss. P. A.: Pennsylvania State UP, 1994.
- Millier, Brett C. Elizabeth Bishop: Life and the Memory of It. Berkeley: UP of California, 1993.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- 一一:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [—. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020]
- 一一: "文学伦理学批评与道德批评",《外国文学研究》2(2006): 8-17。
- [—. "On Ethical Literary Criticism and Moral Criticism." Foreign Literature Studies 2 (2006): 8-17.]
- Pratt, Mary Louise. *Imperial Eyes: Travel Writing and Transculturation*. London: Routledge, 1992.
- Rich, Adrienne. "The Eye of the Outsider: The Poetry of Elizabeth Bishop." *Boston Review* 6 (1984): 15-22.
- —. *Blood, Bread, and Poetry*, edited by Robert Giroux. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1987
- Sartre, Jean-Paul. "Introduction." Translated by Lawrence Hoey. *The Colonizer and the Colonized*, edited and translated by Howard Greefeld. London: Earthscan Publications Ltd, 2003.
- Smith, Stan. Poetry and Displacement. Liverpool: Liverpool UP, 2007.
- Sontag, Susan. Where the Stress Falls. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2001.
- Vendler, Helen. "Domestication, Domesticity and the Otherworldly." *World Literature Today* 1 (1977): 23-28.
- Wagley, Charles. Amazon Town: A Study of Man in the Tropics. New York: Macmillan, 1953.
- 王玉洁: "伊丽莎白·毕肖普诗歌经典的生成与建构",《中文学术前沿》4(2019): 121-126。
- [Wang Yujie. "On the Generation and Construction of Elizabeth Bishop's Poetry Classics." Chinese Frontier of Language and Literature 4 (2019): 121-126.]
- Williams, Carol T. Travel Culture: Essays on What Makes Us Go. Westport: Praeger, 1998.



世界文学研究论坛

聂珍钊 / 广东外语外贸大学(中国) 查尔斯·罗斯/普渡大学(美国)

Editors in Chief

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China Charles Ross, Purdue University, U.S.A

